Hungarian

Hungarian is spoken by 14–15 million people worldwide. A unique language; completely unrelated to the languages of its neighboring countries, it boasts a grammar full of complex features and a vocabulary deriving largely from a Uralic stock.

The book covers the phonological inflectional and derivational morphology, syntax, and fundamental lexicon of Hungarian. It gives a detailed summary of both the sound systems and rich case systems of Hungarian and illustrates their various uses. It summarizes the main processes of word formation and gives a detailed account of the sentence structure and the ways of combining words into sentences. It also lists the basic vocabulary of Hungarian.

Hungarian addresses current issues in the description of languages and applies up-to-date research techniques to Hungarian. This is the first comprehensive descriptive grammar of the Hungarian language available in English, and will appeal to both the professional linguist and advanced learner of Hungarian alike.

István Kenesei is editor of the series Approaches to Hungarian and Professor of Linguistics at József Attila University, Hungary. Robert M.Vago is Professor of Linguistics and Chair of the Department of Linguistics at Queens College of the City University of New York. Previous publications include The Sound Pattern of Hungarian (1980). Anna Fenyvesi is a doctoral candidate at the University of Pittsburgh; she is currently teaching at József Attila University, Hungary.
Descriptive Grammars
Series Editor: Bernard Comrie
University of Southern California

ADVISORY BOARD
W.S. Allen, Cambridge University
J.T. Bendor Samuel, Summer Institute of Linguistics
D.C. Derbyshire, Summer Institute of Linguistics
R.M.W. Dixon, Australian National University
M.E. Krauss, University of Alaska
B. Krishnamurti, Osmania University
Y. Lastra, National Autonomous University of Mexico
S.A. Wurm, Australian National University

ABKHAZ
B.G. Hewitt

KOBON
J. Davies

MANGARAYI
F. Merlan

TAMIL
R.E. Asher

WEST GREENLANDIC
M. Fortescue

JAPANESE
J. Hinds

ROMANIAN
G. Mallison

MODERN GREEK
B.D. Joseph and I. Philippaki-Warburton

AMELE
J. Roberts

BASQUE
M. Saltarelli

GULF ARABIC
Clive Holes

KANNADA
S.N. Sridhar

FINNISH
H. Sulkala and M. Karjalainen

CATALAN
José Ignacio Hualde

PUNJABI
Tej K. Bhatia

MAORI
Winifred Bauer

KOREAN
Ho-min Sohn

NDYUKA
J. Joseph Huttar and Mary L. Huttar

RAPANUI
Veronica Du Feu

NIGERIAN PIDGIN
Nicholas G. Farcaclas

WARI’
Daniel L. Everett and Barbara Kern

EVENKI
Igor Nedjalkov

MALTESE
Albert Borg and Marie Azzopardi-Alexander

KASHMIRI
Kashi Walli and Omkar N. Koul

KOROMFO
John R. Rennison

PERSIAN
Shahrzad Mahootian

MARATHI
Rajeshwari V. Pandharipande

MALAYALAM
R.E. Asher and T.C. Kumari

TURKISH
Jaklin Kornfilt
Editorial statement

Until quite recently, work on theoretical linguistics and work on language description proceeded almost entirely in isolation from one another. Work on theoretical linguistics, especially in syntax, concentrated primarily on English, and its results were felt to be inapplicable to those interested in describing other languages. Work on describing individual languages was almost deliberately isolationist, with the development of a different framework and terminology for each language or language group, and no feeding of the achievements of language description into linguistic theory. Within the last few years, however, a major rapprochement has taken place between theoretical and descriptive linguistics. In particular, the rise of language typology and the study of language universals have produced a large number of theoreticians who require accurate, well-formulated descriptive data from a wide range of languages, and have shown descriptive linguists that they can both derive benefit from and contribute to the development of linguistic theory. Even within generative syntax, long the bastion of linguistic anglocentrism, there is an increased interest in the relation between syntactic theory and a wide range of language types.

For a really fruitful interaction between theoretical and descriptive linguistics, it is essential that descriptions of different languages should be comparable. The Questionnaire of the present series (originally published as Lingua, vol. 42 (1977), no. 1) provides a framework for the description of a language that is (a) sufficiently comprehensive to cover the major structures of any language that are likely to be of theoretical interest; (b) sufficiently explicit to make cross-language comparisons a feasible undertaking (in particular, through the detailed numbering key); and (c) sufficiently flexible to encompass the range of variety that is found in human language. The volumes that were published in the predecessor to the present series, the Lingua Descriptive Studies (now available from Routledge), succeeded in bridging the gap between theory and description: authors include both theoreticians who are also interested in description and field-workers with an interest in theory.
The aim of the Descriptive Grammars is thus to provide descriptions of a wide range of languages according to the format set out in the Questionnaire. Each language will be covered in a single volume. The first priority of the series is grammars of languages for which detailed descriptions are not at present available. However, the series will also encompass descriptions of better-known languages with the series framework providing more detailed descriptions of such languages than are currently available (as with the monographs on West Greenlandic and Kannada).

Bernard Comrie
Symbols and abbreviations xxvii
Orthographic and phonemic correspondences xxx
INTRODUCTION xxxii

CHAPTER 1. SYNTAX
1.1. General questions 1
1.1.1. Sentence-types 1
1.1.1.1. Direct and quoted speech 1
1.1.1.2. Interrogative sentences 1
1.1.1.2.1. Yes-no questions 1
1.1.1.2.1.1. Neutral 2
1.1.1.2.1.2. Leading 3
1.1.1.2.1.3. Alternative 4
1.1.1.2.2. Question-word questions 5
1.1.1.2.2.1. Elements questioned 5
1.1.1.2.2.1.1. Constituents of the main clause 5
1.1.1.2.2.1.2. Constituents of the subordinate clause 6
1.1.1.2.2.1.3. Constituents of the noun phrase 7
1.1.1.2.2.1.4. Constituents of the postpositional phrase 8
1.1.1.2.2.1.5. Constituents of coordinate structures 9
1.1.1.2.2.1.6. Multiple question-words 9
1.1.1.2.2.2. The position of question-words 10
1.1.1.2.3. Echo-questions 11
1.1.1.2.3.1. Yes-no echo-questions 11
1.1.1.2.3.2. Question-word echo-questions 12
1.1.1.2.3.3. Yes-no question echo-questions 13
1.1.1.2.3.4. Question-word question echo-questions 13
1.1.1.2.3.5. Restrictions on echo-questions 14
1.1.1.2.3.6. Multiple echo-questions 14
1.1.1.2.3.7. The behavior of different questioned elements 15
1.1.1.2.4. Answers 15
1.1.1.2.4.1. Answers and speech acts 15
Page viii
1.1.1.2.4.1.1. Answers to yes-no questions 15
1.1.1.2.4.1.2. Answers to question-word questions 17
1.1.1.2.4.1.3. Answers to echo-questions 19
1.1.1.2.4.1.4. Minimal answers to yes-no questions 19
1.1.1.3. Imperative sentences 20
1.1.1.3.1. The form of the imperative 20
1.1.1.3.1.1. The uses of the imperative 20
1.1.1.3.1.2. Degrees of the imperative 21
1.1.1.3.2.1. Negative imperatives 22
1.1.1.3.2.2. Degrees of negative imperative 22
1.1.1.3.3. Further devices of expressing imperative 23
1.1.1.3.4. Focus in imperative sentences 23
1.1.1.4. Other sentence-types 24
1.1.1.4.1. Desideratives 24
1.1.1.4.2. Exclamations 25
1.1.1.5. Indirect speech acts 27
1.1.2. Subordination 27
1.1.2.1. The marking of subordination 27
1.1.2.2. Noun clauses 28
1.1.2.2.1. The marking and positions of noun clauses 29
1.1.2.2.2. Types of noun clauses 29
1.1.2.2.3. Indirect statements 30
1.1.2.2.4. Indirect questions 31
1.1.2.2.5. Indirect commands 32
1.1.2.2.6. Infinitival clauses 33
1.1.2.2.6.1–7. Properties of infinitival clauses 34
1.1.2.2.6.8. Clause union 36
1.1.2.3. Adjective clauses (relative clauses) 37
1.1.2.3.1. The marking of relative clauses 38
1.1.2.3.2. Restrictive and nonrestricitive 38
1.1.2.3.3. The position of the head noun 38
1.1.2.3.4.–5. Relative pronouns 40
1.1.2.3.6. Headless relative clauses 41
1.1.2.3.7. Elements relativized 42
1.1.2.3.8. Movement of phrases containing a relative pronoun 44
1.1.2.3.9. Nonfinite relative clauses 45
1.1.2.3.9.1. Active (present) participles 45
1.1.2.3.9.2. Passive (past) participles 46
1.1.2.4. Adverbial clauses 47
1.1.2.4.1. The marking and positions of adverbial clauses 47
1.1.2.4.2. Types of adverbial clauses 48
1.1.2.4.2.1. Time adverbial clauses 48
1.1.2.4.2.2. Manner adverbial clauses 50
Page ix

1.1.2.4.2.3. Clauses of purpose  50
1.1.2.4.2.4. Clauses of cause  51
1.1.2.4.2.5. Conditional clauses  51
1.1.2.4.2.6. Result clauses  52
1.1.2.4.2.7. Degree clauses  53
1.1.2.4.2.8. Concessive clauses  54
1.1.2.4.2.9. Place adverb clauses  54
1.1.2.4.3. Nonfinite adverbial clauses  55
1.1.2.4.3.1. Nonfinite clauses of time  55
1.1.2.4.3.2. Nonfinite clauses of manner  56
1.1.2.4.3.3. Nonfinite clauses of purpose  56
1.1.2.5. Sequence of tenses  56

1.2. Structural questions  58
1.2.1. Internal structure of the sentence  58
1.2.1.1. Copular sentences  58
1.2.1.1.1–2. Copular sentences with nominal and adjectival complement  58
1.2.1.1.3. Copular sentences with adverbial complement  61
1.2.1.1.4–5. Copular sentences without overt copula  62
1.2.1.1.6. Types of copula  63
1.2.1.1.6.1. The suppletive forms of the copula  63
1.2.1.1.6.2. Existential sentences  64
1.2.1.1.6.3. Possessional sentences with copula  65
1.2.1.1.6.4. Another possible copula  65
1.2.1.2. Verbal sentences  66
1.2.1.2.1. Verbal sentences without subjects  66
1.2.1.2.2. Transitive and intransitive verbs  68
1.2.1.2.3. Indirect objects  70
1.2.1.2.4. Other arguments  71
1.2.1.2.5. Combinations of arguments  73
1.2.1.2.6. Order of constituents  73
1.2.1.3. Adverbials  74
1.2.1.3.1. Types of adverbials  74
1.2.1.3.1.1. Adverbs  74
1.2.1.3.1.2. Postpositional phrases  74
1.2.1.3.1.3. Cases  75
1.2.1.3.1.4. Adverbial clauses  76
1.2.1.3.2. Positions of adverbials  76
1.2.1.3.3. Obligatory adverbials  78
1.2.2. Adjective phrases  78
1.2.2.1. Operational definition  78
1.2.2.2. Arguments in adjective phrases  80
Page x

1.2.2.2.1. Adjectives in subjectless sentences 80
1.2.2.2.2–4 Arguments of adjectives 81
1.2.2.3. Modification of adjectives 82
1.2.3. Adverbial phrases 84
1.2.3.1. Operational definition 84
1.2.3.2–4. Modification of adverbials 84
1.2.4. Postpositional phrases 86
1.2.4.1. Operational definition 86
1.2.4.2–3. Arguments and modification of postpositional phrases 88
1.2.4.4. Cases governed by postpositions 89
1.2.5. Noun phrases 92
1.2.5.1. Operational definition 92
1.2.5.2. Modification 92
1.2.5.2.1. Modification by adjective 92
1.2.5.2.2. Relative clause 94
1.2.5.2.3. Possessive adjectives 94
1.2.5.2.4. Articles 94
1.2.5.2.5. Demonstratives 95
1.2.5.2.6. Numerals and quantifiers 96
1.2.5.2.7. Adverbials 97
1.2.5.2.8. Emphatic words 98
1.2.5.2.9. Comparative, superlative, and equative structures 99
1.2.5.2.10. Noun complement clauses 100
1.2.5.3–5. Order of modifiers 101
1.3. Coordination 102
1.3.1. Types of coordination 102
1.3.1.1. Coordinating devices 102
1.3.1.1.1. And-coordination 102
1.3.1.1.2. But-coordination 103
1.3.1.1.3. Or-coordination 103
1.3.1.1.4. Other coordinators 104
1.3.1.2. Number of coordinators 104
1.3.1.3–5. Coordination of constituents 105
1.3.2. Omission of constituents 109
1.4. Negation 112
1.4.1. Sentence negation 112
1.4.2. Constituent negation 114
1.4.3. Negative concord and multiple negation 115
1.4.4. Negation in coordination 117
1.4.5. Negative raising 118
1.5. Anaphora
1.5.1. Means for expressing anaphora
1.5.1.1–2. Deletion
1.5.1.3. Personal pronouns
1.5.1.4. Reflexive pronouns
1.5.1.5. Demonstrative anaphoric pronouns
1.5.1.6. Other means
1.5.2. Domains of anaphora
1.5.2.1. Within the clause
1.5.2.2. Between coordinate clauses
1.5.2.3. Between superordinate and subordinate clauses
1.5.2.4. Between different subordinate clauses
1.5.2.5. Between different sentences
1.6. Reflexives
1.6.1. Means of expressing reflexivity
1.6.1.1. Reflexive pronouns
1.6.1.2. Verbal affix
1.6.2. The scope of reflexivity
1.6.3. Antecedents and functions of the reflexive affix
1.6.4. Syntactic positions of the reflexive pronoun
1.6.5. Antecedent-reflexive relations
1.6.5.1. Subject—direct object
1.6.5.2. Subject—modifier of direct object
1.6.5.3–5. Subject—indirect object
1.6.5.4–6. Subject—modifier of indirect object
1.6.5.7–8. Subject—(modifier of) copular complement
1.6.5.9–10. Subject—(modifier of) subject-complement
1.6.5.11–12. Subject—(modifier of) object-complement
1.6.5.13–14. Subject—(modifier of) object of adjective
1.6.5.15. Subject—case-marked and adpositional phrase
1.6.5.16. Subject—modifier of case-marked and adpositional phrase
1.6.5.17. Modifier of subject—other constituents
1.6.5.18. Modifier of subject—copular complement
1.6.5.19–25. Modifier of subject—other constituents
1.6.5.26. Direct object—subject
1.6.5.27. Direct object—modifier of subject
1.6.5.28. Direct object—indirect object
1.6.5.29. Direct object—object of adjective
1.6.5.30. Direct object—(modifier of) subject
1.6.5.31. Direct object—(modifier of) direct object
1.6.5.32. Indirect object—(modifier of) case-marked or adpositional NP
1.6.5.33–34. Indirect object—(modifier of) direct object
1.6.5.35–36. Indirect object—(modifier of) subject
1.6.5.37–38. Indirect object—(modifier of) subject
1.6.5.39–40. Indirect object—object of adjective
1.6.5.41–42. Indirect object—(modifier of) direct object
1.6.5.43–44. Indirect object—(modifier of) subject
1.6.5.45–46. Indirect object—(modifier of) direct object
1.6.5.47–48. Indirect object—(modifier of) subject
1.6.5.49–50. Indirect object—(modifier of) direct object
1.6.5.51–52. Indirect object—(modifier of) subject
1.6.5.53–54. Indirect object—(modifier of) direct object
1.6.5.55–56. Indirect object—(modifier of) subject
1.6.5.57–58. Indirect object—(modifier of) direct object
1.6.5.59–60. Indirect object—(modifier of) subject
1.6.5.61–62. Indirect object—(modifier of) direct object
1.6.5.63–64. Indirect object—(modifier of) subject
1.6.5.65–66. Indirect object—(modifier of) direct object
1.6.5.67–68. Indirect object—(modifier of) subject
1.6.5.69–70. Indirect object—(modifier of) direct object
1.6.5.71–72. Indirect object—(modifier of) subject
1.6.5.73–74. Indirect object—(modifier of) subject
1.6.5.89–104. Modifier of indirect object—other constituents 137
1.6.5.173. Case-marked or adpositional phrase—subject 137
1.6.5.175. Case-marked or adpositional phrase—object 137
1.6.5.177. Case-marked or adpositional phrase—indirect object 137
1.6.5.191. Case-marked or adpositional phrase—case-marked or adpositional phrase 138
1.6.5.193–212. Modifier of case-marked or adpositional phrase—other constituents 138
1.6.6. Reflexives in nominalized clauses 139
1.6.7. Reflexives in ordinary NPs 139
1.6.8. Reflexive pronouns without overt antecedents 140
1.6.9. Other uses of reflexives 140
1.7. Reciprocity 141
1.7.1. Means of expressing reciprocity 141
1.7.2. The scope of reciprocity 141
1.7.4. The syntactic positions of the reciprocal 142
1.7.5. Antecedent-reciprocal relations 142
1.7.5.1. Subject—direct object 142
1.7.5.2. Subject—modifier of direct object 142
1.7.5.3. and 1.7.5. Subject—indirect object 142
1.7.5.4. and 1.7.5. Subject—modifier of indirect object 143
1.7.5.7–8. Subject—(modifier of) copular complement 143
1.7.5.9–10. Subject—(modifier of) subject complement 143
1.7.5.11–12. Subject—(modifier of) object complement 144
1.7.5.13–14. Subject—(modifier of) object of adjective 144
1.7.5.17. Subject—case-marked and adpositional phrase 144
1.7.5.18. Subject—modifier of case-marked and adpositional phrase 145
1.7.5.19–36. Modifier of subject—other constituents 145
1.7.5.37. Direct object—subject 145
1.7.5.38. Direct object—modifier of subject 145
1.7.5.39–40. Direct object—(modifier of) indirect object 146
1.7.5.49. Direct object—object of adjective 146
1.7.5.55–72. Modifier of direct object—other constituents 146
1.7.5.73. Indirect object—subject 147
1.7.5.74. Indirect object—modifier of subject 147
1.7.5.75–76. Indirect object—(modifier of) direct object 147
1.7.5.77–78. Indirect object—(modifier of) case-marked or adpositional NP 147
1.7.5.89–104. Modifier of indirect object—other constituents 148
CHAPTER 2 . MORPHOLOGY

2.1. Inflection

2.1.1. Noun inflection

2.1.1.1. Means of expressing the functions of noun phrases

2.1.1.1.1. Bound affixes

2.1.1.1.4. Postpositions

2.1.1.1.8. Combination of different ways

2.1.1.2. Marking syntactic functions

2.1.1.2.1. Subject of intransitive verb

2.1.1.2.2. Subject of transitive verb

2.1.1.2.3. Subject of copular construction

2.1.1.2.4. Direct object

2.1.1.2.5. Indirect object

2.1.1.2.6. Object of comparison

2.1.1.2.7. Object of equation

2.1.1.2.8. Other objects governed by verbs

2.1.1.2.9. Complement of copular construction

2.1.1.2.9.1–3. Copular constructions involving ‘be’

2.1.1.2.9.4. Other copular verbs

2.1.1.2.10. Subject-complement

2.1.1.2.11. Object-complement

2.1.1.2.12. Objects governed by adjectives

2.1.1.2.13. Agent in passive/impersonal constructions

2.1.1.2.14. Topic

2.1.1.3. Expressing functions with nonfinite and nominalized verbs

2.1.1.3.1. Absolute construction

2.1.1.3.2. Infinitive

2.1.1.3.4. Nominalization

2.1.1.4. Expressing nonlocal semantic functions

2.1.1.4.1. Benefactive

2.1.1.4.2. Source

2.1.1.4.3. Instrumental

2.1.1.4.4. Comitative

2.1.1.4.5. Circumstance

2.1.1.4.6. Possessive

2.1.1.4.7. Possessed

2.1.1.4.8. Quality

2.1.1.4.9. Quantity

2.1.1.4.10. Material

2.1.1.4.11. Manner

2.1.1.4.12. Cause

2.1.1.4.13. Purpose
2.1.1.4.14. Function  226
2.1.1.4.15. Reference  226
2.1.1.4.16. Essive  227
2.1.1.4.17. Translative  228
2.1.1.4.18. Part-whole  228
2.1.1.4.19. Partitive  229
2.1.1.4.19.1. Partitive numeral  229
2.1.1.4.19.2. Nonpartitive numeral  229
2.1.1.4.19.3. Partitive quantifier  229
2.1.1.4.19.4. Nonpartitive quantifier  229
2.1.1.4.19.5. Partitive negative quantifier  230
2.1.1.4.19.6. Nonpartitive negative quantifier  230
2.1.1.4.19.7. Price  231
2.1.1.4.20. Value  231
2.1.1.4.21. Distance  232
2.1.1.4.22. Extent  233
2.1.1.4.23. Concessive  234
2.1.1.4.24. Inclusion  234
2.1.1.4.25. Exclusion  234
2.1.1.4.26. Addition  234
2.1.1.4.27. Vocative  235
2.1.1.4.28. Citation and label forms  235
2.1.1.5. Local semantic functions  235
2.1.1.5.1. General location  237
2.1.1.5.2. Proximate location  238
2.1.1.5.3. Interior location  239
2.1.1.5.4. Exterior location  242
2.1.1.5.5. Anterior location  242
2.1.1.5.6. Posterior location  243
2.1.1.5.7. Superior location  243
2.1.1.5.8. Superior-contact and surface location  244
2.1.1.5.9. Inferior location  244
2.1.1.5.11. Lateral location  245
2.1.1.5.13. Interior location  245
2.1.1.5.15. Ulterior location  245
2.1.1.5.17. Medial location  245
2.1.1.5.19. Circumferential location  246
2.1.1.5.20. Circumferential location  246
2.1.1.6. Location in time  247
2.1.1.6.1. General  247
2.1.1.6.1.1. Time of day  247
2.1.1.6.1.2. Period of day  248
2.1.1.6.1.3. Day of the week  248
2.1.1.6.1.4. Month of the year  249
2.1.1.6.1.5. Year 250
2.1.1.6.1.6. Festivals 250
2.1.1.6.1.7. Seasons 250
2.1.1.6.2. Frequentative 250
2.1.1.6.3. Punctual-future 251
2.1.1.6.4. Punctual-past 251
2.1.1.6.5. Duration 251
2.1.1.6.6–7. Anterior-duration 252
2.1.1.6.8. Posterior-duration-past 252
2.1.1.6.9. Posterior-duration-future 253
2.1.1.6.10. Anterior-general 253
2.1.1.6.12. Point in period-past 253
2.1.1.6.13. Point in period-future 254
2.1.1.7. Double case-marking 254
2.1.1.8. Number marking 254
2.1.1.8.1. Number marking in nouns 254
2.1.1.8.1.1. Singular-plural 254
2.1.1.8.2. Obligatoriness of number marking 255
2.1.1.8.5. Collective nouns 255
2.1.1.8.6. Means of number marking 255
2.1.1.8.7. Number marking of foreign words 256
2.1.1.9. Noun classes 256
2.1.1.10. Definiteness in noun phrases 256
2.1.1.11. Indefiniteness in noun phrases 258
2.1.1.12. Referential and nonreferential indefiniteness 259
2.1.1.13. Genericness in noun phrases 259
2.1.1.15. Unique identification 260
2.1.2. Pronouns 260
2.1.2.1. Personal pronouns 260
2.1.2.1.1. Free pronouns 260
2.1.2.1.1.3. Occurrence of free pronouns 261
2.1.2.1.1.3.1. Noncontrastive nonemphatic contexts 261
2.1.2.1.1.3.2. Emphatic and contrastive contexts 263
2.1.2.1.1.3.3. Unemphatic contexts with imperative verbs 263
2.1.2.1.1.3.4. Emphatic and contrastive contexts with imperative verbs 263
2.1.2.1.1.3.5. Answer to ‘Who is that?’ question-type 264
2.1.2.1.1.3.6. Cleft and pseudo-cleft constructions 264
2.1.2.1.1.4. Suprasegmental characteristics of free pronouns 265
2.1.2.1.2–3. Person distinctions in pronouns 265
2.1.2.1.4. Number marking in pronouns 265
2.1.2.1.12. Status distinction 266
2.1.2.1.13.2. Nonspecific indefinite pronouns 268
2.1.2.1.13.3. Nouns in nonspecific indefinite usage 268
2.1.2.1.14. Specific indefinite pronouns 268
2.1.2.1.15. Emphatic pronouns 269
2.1.2.1.17. Pronoun-noun constructions with the same reference 269
2.1.2.1.18. Coordination with first plural pronoun 269
2.1.2.1.20. Case system in pronouns 270
2.1.2.1.20.5. Irregular forms of cases 270
2.1.2.2. Reflexive pronouns 271
2.1.2.2.4. Case-marking of reflexive pronouns 271
2.1.2.2.7. Other uses of reflexive pronouns 272
2.1.2.3. Reciprocal pronoun 272
2.1.2.4. Possessive pronouns 273
2.1.2.4.4. Case-marking in predicative possessive pronouns 274
2.1.2.4.7. Reflexive possessive pronouns 274
2.1.2.4.8. Reciprocal possessive pronouns 274
2.1.2.5. Demonstrative pronouns 275
2.1.2.5.1. Parameters involved in the demonstrative pronouns 276
2.1.2.5.1.1. Relative distance from speaker 276
2.1.2.5.1.25. Other parameters 276
2.1.2.5.1.25.1. Contrastive emphasis 276
2.1.2.5.1.25.2. Identity 276
2.1.2.5.4. Number marking in demonstrative pronouns 277
2.1.2.5.6. Case-marking in demonstrative pronouns 277
2.1.2.6. Interrogative pronouns and other question-words 278
2.1.2.6.1. Interrogative pronouns 278
2.1.2.6.1.1. General interrogative pronouns 278
2.1.2.6.1.2. Selective interrogative pronouns 279
2.1.2.6.1.3. Other interrogative pronouns 280
2.1.2.6.2. Other question phrases 281
2.1.2.7. Relative pronouns 281
2.1.3. Verb morphology 282
2.1.3.1. Voice 282
2.1.3.1.1. Passive 282
2.1.3.1.1.1. Direct object of the active as subject of passive 283
2.1.3.1.1.3. Subject of active as subject of passive 283
2.1.3.1.2. Means of decreasing valency 284
2.1.3.1.2.1. Nonagentive verbs 284
2.1.3.1.2.2. Verbs not specifying direct object 285
2.1.3.1.2.3. Reciprocal intransitive verbs 286
2.1.3.1.3. Means of increasing valency
  2.1.3.1.3.1. Intransitives made causative
  2.1.3.1.3.2. Transitives made causative
  2.1.3.1.3.3. Ditransitives made causative
  2.1.3.1.4. Reflexive and reciprocal verbs
  2.1.3.2. Tense
  2.1.3.2.1. Tenses distinguished formally
  2.1.3.2.1.2. Present
  2.1.3.2.1.3. Past
  2.1.3.2.1.3.1. Subdivision of past
  2.1.3.2.1.4. Future
  2.1.3.2.3. Absoluteness and relativeness of the tenses
  2.1.3.3. Aspects
  2.1.3.3.2. Aspect distinctions as different ways of viewing the duration of a situation
    2.1.3.3.2.1. Formal marking of aspect
    2.1.3.3.2.1.1. Perfective aspect
    2.1.3.3.2.1.2. Imperfective aspect
    2.1.3.3.2.1.3. Habitual aspect
    2.1.3.3.2.1.5. Progressive aspect
    2.1.3.3.2.1.6. Ingressive aspect
    2.1.3.3.2.1.8. Iterative aspect
    2.1.3.3.2.1.9. Semelfactive aspect
    2.1.3.3.2.1.10. Punctual aspect
    2.1.3.3.2.1.11. Durative aspect
    2.1.3.3.2.1.12. Simultaneous aspect
    2.1.3.3.2.1.13. Existential aspect
    2.1.3.3.2.1.14. Telicity
    2.1.3.3.2.2. Restrictions on combination of aspect with other verbal features
      2.1.3.3.2.2.1. Aspect and voice
      2.1.3.3.2.2.2. Aspect and tense
      2.1.3.3.2.2.3. Aspect and mood
      2.1.3.3.2.2.4. Aspect and finiteness
  2.1.3.4. Mood
    2.1.3.4.1. Indicative
    2.1.3.4.2. Conditional
    2.1.3.4.3. Imperative
    2.1.3.4.4. Optative
    2.1.3.4.5. Intentional
    2.1.3.4.6. Debitive
    2.1.3.4.7. Potential
    2.1.3.4.8. Degree of certainty
    2.1.3.4.11. Minority
2.1.3.4.14. Contingent
2.1.3.5. Finite and nonfinite forms
2.1.3.5.1. Finite and nonfinite forms versus voices
2.1.3.5.2. Finite and nonfinite forms versus tenses
2.1.3.5.3. Finite and nonfinite forms versus aspects
2.1.3.5.4. Finite and nonfinite forms versus moods
2.1.3.6. Person-and number-marking
2.1.3.6.1. Subject
2.1.3.6.1.2. Direct object
2.1.3.6.2. Agreement
2.1.3.6.7. Identity/nonidentity of subjects in successive clauses
2.1.3.6.8. Reflexive verb-forms
2.1.3.6.12. Incorporation
2.1.4. Adjectives
2.1.4.3. Agreement in predictive and attributive adjectives
2.1.4.4. Comparison of adjectives
2.1.4.4.1. Equality
2.1.4.4.2. Comparative
2.1.4.4.3. Superlative
2.1.4.4.4. Emphatic superlative
2.1.4.5. Degrees of quality
2.1.4.5.1. Large measure
2.1.4.5.2. Superabundance
2.1.4.5.3. Small measure
2.1.4.5.4. Verbs with predicative adjectives
2.1.5. Postpositions
2.1.6. Numerals and quantifiers
2.1.6.1. Cardinal numerals
2.1.6.2. Cardinal numerals as attributes
2.1.6.4. Ordinal numerals
2.1.6.5. Other derivatives of numerals
2.1.6.6. Quantifiers
2.1.6.6.1. Quantifier compounds
2.1.7. Adverbs
2.1.7.1. Kinds of comparison
2.1.7.1.1. Equality
2.1.7.1.2. Comparative
2.1.7.1.3. Superlative
2.1.7.1.4. Emphatic superlative
2.1.7.2. Degrees of quality
2.1.7.2.1. Large measure
2.1.7.2.2. Superabundance
2.1.7.2.3. Small measure
2.1.8. Clitics

2.2. Derivational morphology

2.2.1. Derived nouns

2.2.1.1. Nouns from nouns

2.2.1.1.1. -s

2.2.1.1.2. -ság/ség

2.2.1.1.3. -ász/ész

2.2.1.1.4. -at/et

2.2.1.1.5. Diminutive derivational affixes

2.2.1.1.6. -ék

2.2.1.1.7. -né

2.2.1.1.8. -ista

2.2.1.2. Nouns from verbs

2.2.1.2.1. -ás/és

2.2.1.2.2. -ő/ő

2.2.1.2.3. -at/et

2.2.1.2.4. -mány/mény

2.2.1.3. Nouns from adjectives

2.2.1.4. Nouns from adverbs

2.2.1.5. Nouns from numerals

2.2.2. Derived verbs

2.2.2.1. Verbs from nouns

2.2.2.1.1. -z

2.2.2.1.2. -i

2.2.2.1.3. -sít

2.2.2.1.4. -(s)kodik/(s)ködik

2.2.2.1.5. -(iz)ál

2.2.2.2. Verbs from verbs

2.2.2.2.1. Possibility/permission

2.2.2.2.2. Causative

2.2.2.2.3. Frequentative

2.2.2.2.4. Reflexive

2.2.2.2.5. Passive

2.2.2.3. Verbs from adjectives

2.2.2.3.1. -ít

2.2.2.3.2. -odik/edik/ödik

2.2.2.3.3. -kodik/kedik/ködik

2.2.2.3.5. -ül/ül

2.2.3. Derived adjectives

2.2.3.1. Adjectives from nouns

2.2.3.1.1. -s

2.2.3.1.2. -(j)ú/ű

2.2.3.1.3. -i

2.2.3.1.4. -(t(a)lan/t(e)len (privative)
2.2.3.1.5. -nyi  365
2.2.3.1.6. -szerű and -szerű-tlen  365
2.2.3.2. Adjectives from verbs  365
2.2.3.2.1. -ható/hető  366
2.2.3.2.2. -hatatlan/hetetlen  366
2.2.3.2.3. -atlan/etlen  366
2.2.3.2.4. -ös/ős  367
2.2.3.2.5. -andó/endő  367
2.2.3.3. Adjectives from adjectives  367
2.2.3.3.1. -s  367
2.2.3.3.2. -tlan/tlen (privative)  367
2.2.3.3.3. Negated adjectives  368
2.2.3.4. Adjectives from adverbs  369
2.2.3.4.1. -i  369
2.2.3.4.2. -beli  369
2.2.3.4.3. -s  370
2.2.3.5. Adjectives from numerals  370
2.2.3.5.1. -s  370
2.2.3.5.2. -szor/szer(ször)-i; -szor-os/szer-es/ször-ös  370
2.2.4. Derived adverbs  370
2.2.4.1. Adverbs from nouns  370
2.2.4.2. Adverbs from verbs  371
2.2.4.3. Adverbs from adjectives  371
2.2.4.3.1. -an/en  371
2.2.4.3.2. -ul/ül  372
2.2.4.3.3. -lag/leg  372
2.2.6. Complex and derived postpositions  372
2.2.6.1–2. The formation of complex and derived postpositions  372
2.2.6.1–2.1. Postpositional formations  373
2.2.6.1–2.2. Nominal formations  373
2.2.6.1–2.3. Verbal formations  374
2.2.6.1–2.4. Adjectival formations  374
2.2.6.3. Compound morphology  374
2.2.6.3.1. Compound nouns  375
2.2.6.3.1.1. Noun+noun  375
2.2.6.3.1.2. Verb+noun  376
2.2.6.3.1.3. Adjective+noun  376
2.2.6.3.1.4. Adverb+noun  377
2.2.6.3.2. Compound verb  377
2.2.6.3.2.1. Noun+verb  377
2.2.6.3.2.2. Verb+verb  378
2.2.6.3.2.4. Adverb+verb  378
2.2.6.3.3. Compound adjectives  379
3.2.5.1. Medial syllabification 413
3.2.5.1.1. VCV syllabification 414
3.2.5.1.2. VCCV syllabification 414
3.2.5.1.3. VCCC(C)(C)V syllabification 415
3.2.5.2. Canonical syllables 416
3.2.6.1. Onset-nucleus restrictions 418
3.2.6.2. Nucleus-coda restrictions 419
3.2.6.3. Onset-coda and onset-onset restrictions 419
3.2.6.4. Nucleus-nucleus restrictions: Vowel harmony 419
3.2.6.4.1. Backness harmony 420
3.2.6.4.1.1. Front vowel roots 420
3.2.6.4.1.2. Back vowel roots 420
3.2.6.4.1.3. Mixed vowel roots 420
3.2.6.4.1.4. Neutral vowel roots 421
3.2.6.4.1.5. Disharmonic roots 421
3.2.6.4.1.6. Suffix harmony 422
3.2.6.4.2. Roundness harmony 423
3.2.6.6. Other restrictions 424
3.2.6.7. Wordclass restrictions 425
3.3. Suprasegmentals 425
3.3.1. Length 425
3.3.1.1. Vowels 426
3.3.1.3. Glides 426
3.3.1.4. Liquids 426
3.3.1.5. Nasals 426
3.3.1.6. Fricatives 427
3.3.1.7. Stops and affricates 427
3.3.2.1. Stress 428
3.3.2.2. Phonetic correlates of stress 428
3.3.2.3. Levels of stress 428
3.3.2.4. Position of stress 430
3.3.4.1. Major intonation patterns 431
3.3.4.1.1. Steady patterns 431
3.3.4.1.2. Falling-Initial Breaking Patterns 432
3.3.4.1.3. Falling-Final Breaking Patterns 433
3.3.4.2. Intonation peak 434
3.3.4.3. Emphasis 434
3.3.4.4. Contrast 435
3.3.4.5. Minor variations 435
3.4. Morphophonology (segmental) 436
3.4.1.1. Assimilation 436
3.4.1.1.1. /v/-assimilation 437
3.4.1.1.2. /z/-assimilation 438
| 3.4.1.1.3 | /l/-assimilation | 438 |
| 3.4.1.1.4 | /n/-assimilation | 438 |
| 3.4.1.1.5 | /t/-palatalization | 439 |
| 3.4.1.1.6 | /j/-assimilation | 440 |
| 3.4.1.1.6.1 | Sibilant +/j /-assimilation | 440 |
| 3.4.1.1.6.2 | Palatal+/j/-assimilation | 440 |
| 3.4.1.1.7 | Palatalization | 440 |
| 3.4.1.1.8 | Voicing assimilation | 441 |
| 3.4.1.1.9 | Affrication | 442 |
| 3.4.1.1.10 | Sibilant assimilation | 444 |
| 3.4.1.3 | Other segmental alternations | 446 |
| 3.4.1.3.1 | Length alternations | 446 |
| 3.4.1.3.1.1 | Compensatory lengthening | 446 |
| 3.4.1.3.1.2 | Low vowel lengthening | 447 |
| 3.4.1.3.1.3 | Root final syllable shortening | 447 |
| 3.4.1.3.1.4 | Root internal syllable shortening | 448 |
| 3.4.1.3.1.5 | Degemination | 448 |
| 3.4.1.3.2 | Lowering | 449 |
| 3.4.2 | Metathesis | 449 |
| 3.4.3 | Coalescence and split | 449 |
| 3.4.4.1 | Deletion | 450 |
| 3.4.4.1.1 | /t/-deletion | 450 |
| 3.4.4.1.2 | /h/-deletion | 450 |
| 3.4.4.1.3 | Suffix vowel deletion | 451 |
| 3.4.4.1.4 | Root vowel deletion | 451 |
| 3.4.4.2 | Insertion | 452 |
| 3.4.4.2.1 | Stem epenthesis | 451 |
| 3.4.4.2.2 | Suffix epenthesis | 452 |
| 3.4.4.2.3 | /j/-epenthesis | 453 |
| 3.5 | Morphophonology (suprasegmental) | 453 |
| 3.5.1.1 | Stress | 453 |

CHAPTER 4. IDEOPHONES AND INTERJECTIONS

4.1. Ideophones | 454 |
| 4.1.1. Reduplicative ideophones | 454 |
| 4.1.2. Nonreduplicative ideophones | 455 |
| 4.2 | Interjections | 455 |

CHAPTER 5. LEXICON

5.1. Structured semantic fields | 456 |
| 5.1.1 | Kinship terminology | 456 |
5.1.1. By blood 456
5.1.1.2. By half-blood/affiliation 457
5.1.1.3. By marriage 457
5.1.1.4. By adoption 457
5.1.1.5. Ceremonial relationships 458
5.1.1.5.1. Marriage 458
5.1.1.5.2. Baptism 458
5.1.2. Color terminology 458
5.1.3. Body parts/functions/conditions 459
5.1.4. Cooking terminology 462
5.2. Basic vocabulary 462

REFERENCES 468
## Symbols and Abbreviations

### CASES (abbreviated by first few letters capitalized):

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Case</th>
<th>Marker</th>
<th>English equivalent</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ABLative</td>
<td>-tól/től</td>
<td>from</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACCusative</td>
<td>-t</td>
<td>(object)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ADEssive</td>
<td>-nál/nél</td>
<td>at</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ALLative</td>
<td>-hoz/hez/höz</td>
<td>to</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CAUsalis</td>
<td>-ért</td>
<td>for</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DATive</td>
<td>-nak/nek</td>
<td>to, for</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DELative</td>
<td>-ról/ről</td>
<td>off, about</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ELative</td>
<td>-ból/ből</td>
<td>out of</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ESSive</td>
<td>-úl/úl</td>
<td>as</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(essive-)FORmal</td>
<td>-(ként), -képpen</td>
<td>as</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ILLative</td>
<td>-ba/be</td>
<td>into</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>INEssive</td>
<td>-ban/ben</td>
<td>in</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>INstrumental</td>
<td>-val/vel</td>
<td>with</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NOMinative</td>
<td>ø</td>
<td>(subject)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SUBlative</td>
<td>-ra/re</td>
<td>onto</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SUPeressive</td>
<td>-on/en/ön/n</td>
<td>on</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TERminative</td>
<td>-ig</td>
<td>up to, until</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TRAnslative</td>
<td>-vá/vé</td>
<td>(change) into</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### OTHER ABBREVIATIONS

* A A is ungrammatical or unacceptable
* (A)B *B, AB is grammatical
* (A)B *AB, B is grammatical
* A( )B either A or B or both are grammatical
% A A is grammatical for one dialect/sociolect/class of speakers
? A A has questionable acceptability
1PL first person plural
1SG first person singular
2OBJ verbal suffix expressing a second person object
2PL second person plural
2SG second person singular
3PL third person plural
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Abbreviation</th>
<th>Explanation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>3SG</td>
<td>third person singular</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ABL</td>
<td>ablative case</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACC</td>
<td>accusative case</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ADE</td>
<td>adessive case</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ADJ DER</td>
<td>suffix deriving an adjective</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ADV</td>
<td>adverbial derivational suffix (= '-ly')</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AFX</td>
<td>(unspecified derivational) affix</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ALL</td>
<td>allative case</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>APRT</td>
<td>active (present) participle</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ATTR</td>
<td>-i (attributive suffix on postpositions, time adverbials, and placenames)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CAU</td>
<td>causal-final case</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CAUS</td>
<td>causative derivational affix</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CL</td>
<td>clitic</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CMP</td>
<td>comparative suffix</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>COL</td>
<td>suffix marking collective plural</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>COM</td>
<td>comitative case</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CON</td>
<td>conditional mood</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>COND</td>
<td>conditional auxiliary</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DAT</td>
<td>dative case</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DEF</td>
<td>definite object conjugation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DEL</td>
<td>delative case</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DIM</td>
<td>diminutive suffix</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DIS</td>
<td>distributive case</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DUR</td>
<td>suffix deriving a durative verb</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ELA</td>
<td>elative case</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EMPH</td>
<td>emphasis marker</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EMS</td>
<td>emphatic superlative prefix</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ENPI</td>
<td>existential negative polarity item (= ca. anything)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ESS</td>
<td>essive case</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FOR</td>
<td>(essive-)formal case</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FPRT</td>
<td>future participle</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FREQ</td>
<td>frequentative derivational affix</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FUT</td>
<td>future</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HABIT</td>
<td>auxiliary expressing present habitual action</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ILL</td>
<td>illative case</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IMP</td>
<td>imperative mood</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>INDEF</td>
<td>indefinite object conjugation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>INE</td>
<td>inessive case</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>INF</td>
<td>infinitival suffix</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>INS</td>
<td>instrumental case</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ITE</td>
<td>iterative case</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ITER</td>
<td>suffix deriving iterative verb</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LOC</td>
<td>locative case</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MOD</td>
<td>modal case</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MOE</td>
<td>modal-essive case</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MUL</td>
<td>multiplicative case</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NML</td>
<td>nominalizer (derivational) affix</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NP</td>
<td>noun phrase</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NPI</td>
<td>negative polarity item</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ORD</td>
<td>suffix deriving an ordinal numeral</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PAST</td>
<td>past tense suffix</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PCVB</td>
<td>perfective converb (adverbial participle)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PERM</td>
<td>auxiliary expressing permission</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PFX</td>
<td>preverbal prefix</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PL</td>
<td>plural (suffix)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>POS</td>
<td>nominal possessive suffix</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>POSS</td>
<td>possessive suffix</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>POT</td>
<td>suffix expressing potentiality</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>POTEN</td>
<td>auxiliary expressing potentiality</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PRRT</td>
<td>passive (past) participle</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PRIV</td>
<td>privative suffix</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PROHIB</td>
<td>auxiliary expressing prohibition</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abbreviation</td>
<td>Description</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PRT</td>
<td>particle</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Q</td>
<td>yes-no question clitic</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>REL</td>
<td>reflexivizing derivational affix</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>REL</td>
<td>relative pronoun</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SCVB</td>
<td>simple/simultaneous converb (adverbial participle)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SEM</td>
<td>suffix deriving semelfactive verb</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SG</td>
<td>singular</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SPR</td>
<td>leg-, superlative prefix</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SUB</td>
<td>sublative case</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SUBJ</td>
<td>subjunctive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SUP</td>
<td>superessive case</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TEM</td>
<td>temporal case</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TER</td>
<td>terminative case</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TRA</td>
<td>transative case</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>UNIQ</td>
<td>unique identification suffix</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>UNPI</td>
<td>universal negative polarity item (=ca. “nothing”)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>UQ</td>
<td>universal quantifier</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VBL</td>
<td>verbalizer (derivational) affix</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VRB</td>
<td>verbal derivational affix</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>v.i.</td>
<td>intransitive verb</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>v.t.</td>
<td>transitive verb</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
## Orthographic and Phonemic Correspondences

### VOWELS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Orthographic</th>
<th>Phonemic (see section 3.1.2.2)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>a</td>
<td>/a/</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>á</td>
<td>/aː/</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>e</td>
<td>/ɛ/</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>é</td>
<td>/eː/</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>i</td>
<td>/i/</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>í</td>
<td>/iː/</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>o</td>
<td>/o/</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ó</td>
<td>/oː/</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ö</td>
<td>/ø/</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ü</td>
<td>/u/</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ú</td>
<td>/uː/</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ü</td>
<td>/yː/</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### CONSONANTS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Orthographic</th>
<th>Geminant</th>
<th>Phonemic (see section 3.1.2.1)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Short</td>
<td>Geminate</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>b</td>
<td>bb</td>
<td>/b/</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>c</td>
<td>cc</td>
<td>/tʃ/</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cs</td>
<td>ccs</td>
<td>/č/</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>d</td>
<td>dd</td>
<td>/d/</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dz</td>
<td>ddz</td>
<td>/dz/</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dzs</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>/dʒ/</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>f</td>
<td>ff</td>
<td>/f/</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>g</td>
<td>gg</td>
<td>/g/</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gy</td>
<td>ggy</td>
<td>/ɣ/</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>h</td>
<td>hh</td>
<td>/h/</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Orthographic</td>
<td>Phonemic (see section 3.1.2.1)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>--------------------------------</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Short</td>
<td>Geminate</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>j</td>
<td>jj /j/</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>k</td>
<td>kk /k/</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>l</td>
<td>ll /l/</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ly</td>
<td>lly /lj/</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>m</td>
<td>mm /my/</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>n</td>
<td>nn /ny/</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ny</td>
<td>nny /nj/</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P</td>
<td>PP /P/</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>q</td>
<td>— /k/ (in foreign words only)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>r</td>
<td>rr /r/</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>s</td>
<td>ss /s/</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sz</td>
<td>ssz /sz/</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>t</td>
<td>tt /t/</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ty</td>
<td>tty /cta/</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>v</td>
<td>vv /v/</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>w</td>
<td>— /w/ (in foreign words only)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>x</td>
<td>— /x/ (in foreign words only)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>y</td>
<td>— /y/ (in foreign words only)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>z</td>
<td>zz /z/</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zs</td>
<td>zzz /dz/</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Introduction

Hungarian is a Finno-Ugric language spoken mostly in and around Hungary by about 14–15 million people. Since the Magyar tribes came to occupy the Carpathian basin in the ninth century, the language has been present in this geographical area. It is the official language of the Republic of Hungary (population 10.1 million), and is used by minority speakers mostly in the Transylvanian region, but also in the lowlands as well as in the Moldavian region in Romania (ca. 1.6 million), along the southern borders of Slovakia (ca. 600,000), in the northern Vojvodina province of Yugoslavia (ca. 400,000), in the Transcarpathian region of Ukraine (ca. 160,000), in Croatia (ca. 30,000), in Slovenia (ca. 10,000), and the eastern province of Burgenland in Austria (ca. 35,000). In addition, there are immigrant communities in the western hemisphere (ca. 1 million), partly as a result of large-scale emigration—around the turn of the century to the United States, and during and after World War II, as well as after the 1956 revolution—to the USA, Canada, Australia, to Israel (ca. 200,000), and to several countries in Western Europe (ca. 250,000).

Hungarian is a remarkably uniform language as far as its dialects are concerned: there are practically no dialects that are not mutually intelligible to any of the others, although differences in pronunciation, morphology, vocabulary, and even syntax are sometimes remarkable. The main dialects are (from east to west): the Csángó (in eastern Romania), the Sicule (or székely in Transylvania), the Lowlands (mezőségi in north-western Romania), the North-Eastern, the Tisza (around Szeged), the Northern (in and just south of Eastern Slovakia), the Southern (in southern Transdanubia), the Transdanubian, and the Western (along the border with Austria).

The first charters written in part in Hungarian came down from the mid-eleventh century, while the first text, the “Sermon over the Sepulchre”, dates from 1211. Grammars were written as early as the seventeenth century and, following the foundation of the Academy of Sciences in 1828, historical and later descriptive studies of the language were published in large numbers. Linguists like Johannis Sajnovics,
who discovered the relationship between Finno-Ugric languages before Sir William Jones’s famous lecture on Sanskrit; Antal Reguly, Bernát Munkácsy, Joseph Budenz, who carried out research into the historical origins of the language; and Sámuel Brassai, János Fogarasi, József Szinnyei and Zsigmond Simonyi, whose work included extensive grammars and studies of the nature of the grammatical system of Hungarian.

In this grammar, much in accordance with others in this series, no comparisons with other languages are made, for example, to show whether they do or do not have the property or structure in question. All examples are given according to current orthography, except for forms where the affixes are connected with a hyphen. The phonetic values of the letters and letter combinations are given in the front material.

We have tried to represent what is best termed as “Standard Literary Hungarian”, although we did not hesitate to include the usage of “Educated Colloquial Hungarian”, mainly the language spoken in Budapest, the capital of the country, with about two million inhabitants. While we hope to have managed to steer clear of prescriptive issues, some have had to be tackled, especially if we judged the form in question to be grammatical, i.e., possible and actually used by speakers, but indeed nonstandard, as against one that was of questionable acceptability or used only in some dialect. Mention has also been made of forms no longer (widely) used, but understood by all speakers. Since Hungarian is a language making extensive use of a syntactic position reserved for contrastive focus, whenever such a construction is relevant, the focussed item is highlighted by **bold type**. In addition, since the distinction between definite and indefinite objective conjugation is again relevant, the inflection is glossed as “DEF” whenever the verb is in definite conjugation. If the verb is in the indefinite conjugation, its inflection is glossed as “INDEF”, or is sometimes not glossed—in the latter cases it should be understood to be in the indefinite conjugation by default.

No extensive references are given. Only major works or works used as sources are mentioned, since it would be impossible to do full justice to the entire literature on the grammar, vocabulary and phonology of Hungarian.

The individual chapters were written by the following authors: the chapters on syntax, ideophones and interjections, and the lexicon by István Kenesei (plus the section on derivational morphology); the chapter on phonology by Robert M.Vago; and the section on inflectional morphology by Anna Fenyvesi.

Finally, we wish to express our thanks and gratitude to all those who have helped us bring the work to this stage: to András Komlósy and Adám Nádasdy, who read a previous version of the syntax chapter and the derivational morphology section thoroughly, helped eradicate a number of errors of judgment and description, called attention to possible
Page xxxiv
alternatives and contributed their fine sense of descriptive analysis to improve the manuscript; to Tibor Laczkó for reading the section on derivational morphology; to Péter Siptár, whose valuable comments have improved the chapter on phonology; to Sarah G. Thomason, Robert Hetzron, and Miklós Kontra for their detailed comments on the inflectional morphology section, and to the Department of Linguistics, University of Pittsburgh, for its assistance and support of Anna Fenyvesi’s work. We are also indebted to Bernard Comrie, who gave expert advice on questions of language, formulation, and analysis with a thorough understanding of issues characteristic of Hungarian.
Chapter 1
Syntax
1.1. GENERAL QUESTIONS
1.1.1. Sentence-types
1.1.1.1. Direct and quoted speech
There is no difference between direct and quoted speech; no quotative mood exists in the language, and, except for
the somewhat archaic or literary úgymond ‘thus speaks’, there is no marker of quoted statements.
(1) Péter, úgymond, beteg volt.
Peter thus-speaks sick was
‘It is said that Peter was sick.’
Moreover, except for the predictable changes in reference, there are no structural differences between direct and
indirect speech as regards word order, modality or tense, as will be seen in 1.1.2.2–5 below.
1.1.1.2. Interrogative sentences
The two main question-types, question-word and yes-no questions, are differentiated by intonation, word-order, and
the specific interrogative elements (question-word versus clitic) used, each discussed in turn below.
1.1.1.2.1. Yes-no questions
Yes-no questions have a characteristic rising-falling, i.e., low-high-low, intonation pattern, within which the first
syllable of the question is low, the penultimate is the last one bearing high, and the last syllable of the question is
low—if it has at least three syllables. If the question does not consist of more than two syllables, the final low may
be omitted. For more, see 3.3.4.1 and Varga (1994).
1.1.1.2.1.1. Neutral

The order of constituents in a neutral yes-no question does not differ from that seen in noninterrogatives, and it is a possible strategy—in fact, the most frequent strategy—to ask yes-no questions purely by changing the intonation in the manner described above.

(2)  
   a. Péter beteg volt.  
      Peter sick was  
      ‘Peter was sick.’
   b. Péter beteg volt?  
      ‘Was Peter sick?’

In main clause yes-no questions it is possible to apply the clitic -e (marked by “Q” below), which is attached to the finite verb in Standard Literary Hungarian. The intonation is falling, i.e., the same as in declarative sentences. The meaning is not quite the same as in the simple intonational question, which qualifies as a common inquiry; the -e clitic in main clause questions presupposes some common ground or appears as drawing and ascertaining some inference. (The hyphen between the clitic and the verb is required by the rules of Hungarian orthography. Note that in general only the definite conjugation is glossed, the indefinite conjugation being the null case in most instances.)

(3)  
   a. Péter beteg was-Q  
      ‘Was Peter (indeed) sick?’
   b. Anna Szeged-en dolgoz-ik-e?  
      Anna Szeged-SUP work-3SG-Q  
      ‘Does Anna (really) work in Szeged?’

Adjunction of the clitic to the negation word or the preverbal prefix (= PFX) immediately in front of the finite verb is widespread, though ostracized by purists. In both pairs of examples below, the standard forms are given under (a), then the nonstandard ones under (b), marked by the “%” sign.

(4)  
   a. Péter nem volt-e beteg?  
      Peter not was-Q sick.  
      ‘Wasn’t Peter sick?’
   b. % Péter nem-e volt beteg?  
      ‘Wasn’t Peter sick?’

(5)  
   a. Anna meg-talál-t-a-e a válasz-t?  
      Anna PFX-find-PAST-3SG.DEF-Q the answer-ACC  
      ‘Has Anna found the answer?’
   b. % Anna meg-e találta a választ?  
      ‘Has Anna found the answer?’
Page 3
The interrogative expletive vajon can occur optionally in both yes-no and question-word questions, with the slight
meaning change that, if unaccompanied by the -e clitic, it carries less the meaning of an inquiry to another
interlocutor than a question addressed to oneself. The presence of vajon does not change the intonation of the
sentence determined by independent factors: falling in question-word questions and in yes-no questions containing -
e, rising-falling in all other yes-no questions.
(6)  a. Vajon Anna megtalálta(-e) a választ?
   b. Anna vajon megtalálta(-e) a választ?
   c. Anna megtalálta(-e) vajon a választ?
   d. Anna megtalálta(-e) a választ vajon?
       ‘Has Anna found the answer?’
1.1.1.2.1.2. Leading  Leading questions have no special structural characteristics; they contain the ‘tag’ ugye
related to a combination of an adverbial and the question clitic: úgy-e? ‘is it so?’, originally appended to the end of a
statement to elicit agreement. In current Hungarian, however, it can occur in any position in the sentence, whether
it is positive or negative. Note that the question clitic cannot be used concurrently with ugye.
(7)  a. Ugye Anna meg-talalta a választ?
   b. Anna ugye megtalalta a választ?
   c. Anna megtalalta ugye a választ?
   d. Anna megtalalta a választ, u.gye?
      ‘Anna has found the answer, hasn’t she?’
(8)  a. Ugye Anna nem talalta meg a választ?
   b. Anna nem talalta meg a választ, ugye?
      ‘Anna hasn’t found the answer, has she?’
As indicated by the difference in punctuation, it is in the last example that the tag ugye indeed behaves as a tag: the
statement has its characteristic falling intonation, while the tag has rise or rise-fall as in yes-no questions. In all the
other examples, which have a regular yes-no question intonation, it is more like the optional question-word vajon
‘whether’ introduced in the previous section, although vajon is not used to induce agreement on the part of the
listener.
In other strategies the sentence-final ugye can be replaced by nem? '(is it) not', igaz '(is it) true?', nem igaz? '(is it) not true?', or other expressions to the same effect.

1.1.1.2.1.3. Alternative The most common form of alternative questions consists of a positive first clause (with or without the question clitic), the conjunction vagy 'or' and what is an elliptic second clause: the negation word nem 'not' or, less frequently, sem 'neither'. It is always possible to use the more complete, nonelliptic version, which includes the finite verb (and/or whatever is focussed, see example (b); for more on focus, see 1.11). Note that while the question clitic is possible in the elliptic version, it is generally not acceptable in the full alternative question.

(9) a. Anna meg-találta(-e) a választ vagy nem?
   ‘Did Anna find the answer or not?’
   Anna PFX-found-DEF-Q the answer or not
b. Péter beteg volt(-e) vagy sem?
   ‘Was Peter sick or not?’
   Peter sick was-Q or not
   ‘Was Peter sick or not?’

(10) a. Anna meg-találta (?)*-e a választ vagy nem találta meg?
   ‘Did Anna find the answer or did she not find it?’
   Anna PFX.found.DEF the answer.ACC or PFX-flunk-PAST
   ‘Did Anna find the answer or did she flunk?’

Whereas it is, in principle, not unacceptable to repeat all the constituents of the first clause in the second one, it sounds unusually verbose and unnecessarily tautological. Note that the intonation of the alternative questions shows a rise (characteristic of “comma” intonation) over the first clause and a fall over the second one, thus demonstrating the correspondence between alternative questions and simple yes-no questions, whose identical intonation pattern is “compressed”, as it were, over a single clause. Although a gradual descent is also viable, it is impossible to have a rise-fall pattern within the first clause of an alternative question.

Positive alternatives are also possible in this type of question.

(11) a. Péter beteg volt vagy egészséges?
   ‘Was Peter sick or healthy?’
   Peter sick was or healthy
b. Anna megtalálta a választ vagy meg-buk-ott?
   ‘Did Anna find the answer or did she flunk?’
   Anna PFX.found.DEF the answer.ACC or PFX-flunk-PAST
   ‘Did Anna find the answer or did she flunk?’
1.1.1.2.2. Question-word questions
By way of introduction, the most conspicuous property of this question-type is the movement of (the phrase containing) the question-word into a position immediately in front of the finite verb (though not necessarily into a clause-initial position) in both main and dependent clauses. The issue will be discussed in more detail in 1.1.1.2.2.2.
They are also set apart from yes-no and echo-questions by a falling intonation pattern. Although vajon 'whether' can be freely used, the clitic -e is not allowed. (But recall 1.1.1.2.1.1 for the gloss on vajon.)

(12) Anna (vajon) mit talált(*-e) meg?
Anna whether what ACC found-Q PFX
'What did Anna find?'

1.1.1.2.2.1. Elements questioned
1.1.1.2.2.1.1. Constituents of the main clause
Any case-marked constituent of the main clause can be questioned since the case paradigm is generally available to the question-words.

(13) Kí/ki-nek/mi-ben/mi-hez/mi-vel… talált
who/who-DAT/what-INE/what-ADE/what-INS found.DEF
meg a választ?
PFX the answer ACC
'Who/For whom/In what/For what/With what...(did she) find/found the answer?'

NPs in semantically more restricted cases, however, cannot be questioned, just like certain postpositional phrases to be seen below. That includes standards of comparisons introduced by the complementizer-like mint 'as, than'. But since there is another comparative strategy available, which makes use of a case-marked NP, there is no "syntactic gap" at this point.

(14) a. Anna gyerek-estül jött.
   Anna child-together.with came
   'Anna came with (her) child(re)n.'
 b. Péter angol-ul beszélt.
   Peter English-in spoke
   'Peter spoke in English.'

(15) a. *Anna ki/mi-stül jött?
   who/what
Page 6

b. *Péter milyen-ül beszélt?
   what/like

(16) a. Péter beteg-ebb volt mint Anna
   Peter sick-COMP was than Anna,
   ‘Peter was more sick than Anna.’

   b. *Péter mint ki volt betegebb?

(17) a. Péter betegebb volt Anná-nál
   Anna-ADE
   ‘Peter was more sick than Anna.’

   b. Péter ki-nél volt betegebb?
   ‘Who was Peter more sick than?’

Other constituents of the main clause, traditionally classified as adverbials, can also be questioned by means of an array of question-words, such as hol ‘where’, honnan ‘where from’, hová ‘where to’, hogyan ‘how’, miért ‘why’, hányszor ‘how many times’, etc. For more on interrogative pronouns, see 2.1.2.6.

Finally, the (agentive) predicate can be questioned by the predictable construction mit csinál? ‘what do.3SG?=what is s/he doing?’

1.1.1.2. Constituents of the subordinate clause Question-words in finite argument clauses of the class of verbs that allow the constituents of their complement clauses to move into the main clause (i.e., ‘bridge verbs’) can be raised into the main clause. Since the order of constituents is relatively free, there is no difference between the availability of constituents for questions. Note, however, that raised question-words for embedded subjects undergo a “case change” from nominative to accusative.

(18) a. Mikor-ra akar-od, hogy Anna meg-talál-j-a a
    when-SUB want-DEF.2SG that Anna PFX-find-SUBJ-DEF the
    választ?
    answer.ACC
    ‘(By) when do you want Anna to find the answer?’

   b. Péter mit akar, hogy Anna meg-talál-j-on?
   Peter what.ACC want.3SG that Anna PFX-find.-SUBJ-3SG
   ‘What does Peter want Anna to find?’
Infinitival clauses allow any of their constituents to be questioned, since their constituents can in most cases be freely dispersed in main clauses. The question-words are again placed in front of the inflected verb in the main clause.

(19) Köi-ki-nek/mi-ben/mi-hez/mi-vel/hol/hogyan…
  who/who-DAT/what-INE/what-ADE/what-INS/where/how
  akar-t-a meg-talál-ni a választ?
  want-PAST-DEF.3SG PFX-find-INF the answer
  ‘Who/For whom/In what/For what/With what/Where/
  How/…(did she) want(ed) to find the answer?’

1.1.1.2.2.1.3. Constituents of the noun phrase Various constituents in noun phrases can be questioned by (i) moving the entire noun phrase in front of the finite verb, a case of pied-piping.

(20) a. Milyen/Hány választ talált meg Anna?
    what/how.many answer.ACC found Anna
    ‘What/How many answer(s) did Anna find?’
  b. A [ki által adott] választ találta meg Anna?
    the who by given answer.ACC found.DEF PFX Anna
    ‘The answer given by whom did Anna find?’=ca. ‘Whose
    answer did Anna find?’
  c. [Ki által adott] válaszokat talált Anna?
    who by given answers.ACC found Anna
    ‘Answers given by whom did Anna find?’=ca. ‘What answers
    did Anna find?’ [Reply with respect to names of persons that
    gave the answers in question.]

Note that (20c) is perfectly acceptable in Hungarian as a “plain” question-word question, although its English gloss is downright ungrammatical.

The “questionable” constituents of NPs include demonstrative, numeral, and various adjectival phrases with a wide range of semantic options referring to size, quality, etc. (cf. 1.2.5.2).
(21) Which/What/How many/How big/How good…answer(s) did Anna find?

(ii) Question-words in the possessor position in NPs can move (a) the entire NP into preverbal position, (b) or move out of the possessive NP into the preverbal position, leaving the rest of the NP behind. Note that possessed nominals can also be questioned, whether (c) as a whole or (d) some parts thereof. (For more on possessive NPs, see below in 1.10.)

(22) a. [Ki-nek a kulcs-á-t] találta meg Anna?
   who-DAT the key-POSS.3SG-ACC found.DEF PFX Anna
   ‘Whose key did Anna find?’
   b. [Ki-nek] találta meg Anna [a kulcs-á-t]
   who-DAT found.DEF PFX Anna [a kulcs-á-t]
   ‘Whose key did Anna find?’
   c. Anná-nak mi-jé-t találta meg Péter?
   Anna-DAT what-POSS.3SG-ACC found.DEF PFX Peter
   ‘What of Anna’s (=What that belongs to Anna) did Peter find?’
   d. Anná-nak melyik kulcs-á-t találta meg Péter?
   Anna-DAT which key-POSS.3SG-ACC found.DEF PFX Peter
   ‘Which key of Anna’s did Peter find?’

1.1.1.2.2.1.4. Constituents of the postpositional phrase Postpositional phrases all contain NPs, and all that was said in the previous section on NPs holds for these PPs as well. PPs have two subtypes: one that assigns (oblique) case to its NP, the other that does not; both allow pied-piping, however—at least in some dialects. Some speakers accept the latter type when separated only if the meaning is metaphorical (see (23d) below). In this case the construction becomes similar to a possessive noun phrase in that the dative-marked object of postposition is related to the possessive-marked postposition left behind.

(23) a. [Melyik fiú-val együtt] jött Anna?
   which boy-INS together came Anna
   ‘With which boy did Anna come?’
   b. %[Melyik fiú-val] jött együtt Anna?
   c. [Mékkora fiú mögött] áll Anna?
   what.size boy behind stands Anna
   ‘Behind a boy of what size is Anna standing?’
Page 9

d. [Mekkora fiú-nak] áll Anna mögött-e?
what.size boy-DAT stands Anna behind-POSS
‘Who is Anna standing behind (=support)?’

Some semantically restricted postpositional phrases, just like their case-marked counterparts, cannot be questioned.

(24)  
(a) Péter elnök gyanánt viselkedett.
Peter chairman like behaved
‘Peter behaved like a chairman.’
(b) *Péter mi gyanánt viselkedett?
what like

1.1.1.2.2.1.5. Constituents of coordinate structures
Constituents of coordinate structures cannot be questioned in genuine questions, in distinction to echo-questions, which allow one of their elements to be a question-word (see below).

1.1.1.2.2.1.6. Multiple question-words
Multiple question-words are possible in Hungarian in three arrangements.

(i) They can all be lined up in front of the finite verb with no restriction on their relative order as to grammatical functions, but there is a preference for more specific question-words to be placed in front of less specific ones. Note that the series of question-words (or phrases containing them) cannot be interrupted by a phrase not containing one.

(25)  
(a) Ki mi-t hol talált meg?
who what-ACC where found PFX
‘Who found what where?’
(b) (?) Mit hol ki talált meg?
(c) *Hol Anna mit talált meg?

(ii) If the frame of reference of the multiple question is not unlimited, but is some specific domain—such as the events within a movie or a novel—it is possible for only one of the question-words to be placed preverbally with the rest of them left in postverbal positions. There is also a difference of interpretation accompanying the structural difference. In the standard case the pairs (or n-tuples) of individuals satisfying the variables in the question-words are, in some sense, unrestricted; in the case where only one of the question-words moves, the question concerns a specific pair (or n-tuple) of individuals that constitute the satisfactory answer (cf. E.Kiss 1994).
Page 10

(26)  a. A mesében ki ki-t talált meg?
    the story-INE who who-ACC found PFX
    ‘Who found who in the story?’

   b. A mesében ki talált meg ki-t?
    ‘Who found who in the story?’

(iii) The somewhat uninteresting type of multiple question in which the question-words are in a coordinate construction is also possible. In this case the answer is expected to be similarly coordinated and not a list of paired items. Note that the conjoined second question-word can also be placed clause-finally.

(27)  a. A: Ki és hol találta meg a választ?
    who and where found.DEF PFX the answer
    ‘Who found the answer and where?’

   b. A: Ki találta meg a választ és hol?
    ‘Who found the answer and where?’

   c. B: Péter és egy könyv-ben (találta meg a választ).
    Peter and a book-INE
    ‘Peter found it and (he found it) in a book.’

1.1.1.2.2.2. The position of question-words Question-words (or the phrases containing them) must be placed immediately to the left of the finite verb, a position generally identified with focus. Characteristically, preverbal question-words, in effect, remove verbal prefixes from the usual place they occupy in neutral sentences. The only exception to the adjacency of the question-word and the inflected verb is when the verb is negated, in which case the negation word is interpolated between the question-word (and, in general, the usual focus site) and the finite verb. (For more on focus, see 1.11.)

(28)  a. Hol talál-t-a meg Anna a választ?
    where found-PAST-DEF.3SG PFX Anna the answer.ACC
    ‘Where did Anna find the answer?’

   b. *Hol meg-találta Anna a választ?

   c. Ki nem találta meg a választ?
    who not
    ‘Who did not find the answer?’

In infinitival clauses, however, the cooccurrence of what is formally a question-word and the prefix in front of the verb is not ruled ungrammatical, but the resulting meaning is not one of a subordinate question but that of a negative clause. The backshifted prefix, on the other hand, preserves the interrogative sense, though the construction does not appear to be productive.
Page 11

(29) a. Nem tud-om [hol el-rejte-ni a választ]
   not know-DEF.1SG where PFX-hide-INF the answer.ACC
   ‘I can't hide the answer anywhere.’
   b. Nem tudom [hol talál-ni meg a választ]
   ‘I don’t know where to find the answer.’

As was illustrated above, the preverbal position of question-words is not necessarily an initial one. Since, except for
the question-word-finite verb adjacency requirement, the order of constituents is free, any (or all) other elements
can be placed preverbally or postverbally, all other things being equal, without any relevant meaning difference.

(30) a. Tegnap Anna a kulcsot hol találta meg?
   yesterday Anna the key.ACC where found.DEF PFX
   ‘Where did Anna find the key yesterday?’
   b. Hol találta meg tegnap a kulcsot Anna?
   ‘Where did Anna find the key yesterday?’

The only additional ordering requirement this question-type has to observe consists in the prohibition against
preposing any quantifiers in front of (the phrase containing) the question-word. Note that senki is a so-called
negative polarity item, which requires clausemate negation of the predicate, indicated by the negative in parentheses
below.

(31) a. *Mindenki/Senki/Sok ember mit (nem) talált?
   every one/no one/many people what.ACC not found
   b. Mit talált mindenki/sok ember?
   ‘What did everyone/many people find?’
   c. Mit nem talált senki sem?
   ‘What did no one find?’

1.1.1.2.3. Echo-questions

All echo-questions, whether yes-no or question-word echo-questions, are characterized by a rise-fall, i.e., general
yes-no question, intonation pattern—usually distributed onto each major constituent:

1.1.1.2.3.1. Yes-no echo-questions Yes-no echo-questions have no special properties; they repeat all or part of
the statement made by the speaker, including the focus if any, with the predictable changes in deixis. In echo-
questions of neutral statements no adjunct may be included unless arguments are also present, as illustrated by the
multiple parentheses below. Note that, although a different order of constituents is
possible in the statement, arguments still have priority of occurrence over adjuncts in the echo-question.

(32)  
a. A: Megtaláltam a választ a kérdésére
   found.DEF.1SG the answer the his.question.SUB
tegnap,
yesterday
   ‘I found the answer to his question yesterday.’

b. B: Megtaláltad (a választ (a kérdésére (tegnap)))?
   found.DEF.2SG
   ‘You found it?/You found the answer (to his question
   (yesterday))?’

In echo-questions to focussed statements the focus has to be repeated. Only if it stands by itself can the focussed constituent have the question clitic attached to it. This last version can convey an indication of disbelief. (Focus here and throughout is marked by bold type.)

(33)  
a. A: Tegnap találtam meg a választ a kérdésére.
   found.DEF.1SG PFX
   ‘I found the answer to his question yesterday.’

b. B: Tegnap (találtad meg (a választ (a kérdésére)))?
   ‘You found it/the answer (to his question)
   (yesterday)?’

c. B: Tegnap-e (*találtad meg…)?
   ‘So it was yesterday, wasn’t it?’

1.1.1.2.3.2. **Question-word echo-questions** Question-word echo-questions are like genuine question-word questions; that is, all question-words have to be placed preverbally, except that their intonation is that of yes-no questions, and they can optionally be introduced by the general tensed subordinate complementizer hogy ‘that’.

(34)  
a. A: Anna megtalálta a választ.
   Anna PFX.found.DEF the answer.ACC
   ‘Anna found the answer.’

b. B: (Hogy) Anna mit talált meg?
   that Anna what.ACC found PFX
   ‘Anna found what?’

(35)  
a. A: Anna mikor találta meg a választ?
   when
   ‘When did Anna find the answer?’
Page 13

b. B: (Hogy) Anna mit mikor talált meg?
   'When did Anna find what?'

The optional focal stress on the question-words is represented by bold type in the above examples. Question-word echo-questions show a greater liberty in the range of questionable constituents embedded in NPs than genuine question-word questions. Note again that the only difference between an echo and a genuine question interpretation is in the intonation, though we will mark echo-questions also by highlighting the question-word in bold.

(36)  a. Echo
   Anna [a [hol olvasó] fiú-k-at] láttá?
   ‘Anna saw the boys reading where?’
   b. Genuine
   *Anna [a hol olvasó fiúkat] láttá?

This property of question-word echo-questions associates them closer with focussed structures than with genuine question-word questions, since the positions accessible for such echo-questions are all available to focussing too. Note that indefinite (or, more exactly, nonspecific) NPs allow genuine question-words in the same position ruled out in definite NPs. (Of course these questions can have echo-question readings as well. For answers, see below in 1.1.1.2.4.1.2.)

(37)  a. Echo
   Anna [[hol olvasó] fiúk-at] látott?
   ‘For what place x, did Anna see boys reading at x?’
   b. Genuine
   Anna [hol olvasó] fiúkat látta?

1.1.1.2.3.3. Yes-no question echo-questions Yes-no question echo-questions repeat the speaker’s question usually prefixed with the complementizer hogy ‘that’ and using the obligatory question clitic -e.

(38)  a. A: Be-mész az iskolá-ba?
   ‘Are you going in the school?’
   b. B: (Hogy) Be-megy *(-e) az iskolá-ba?
   ‘Am I going in the school?’

1.1.1.2.3.4. Question-word question echo-questions Question-word question echo-questions again can make use of the complementizer hogy and they are also differentiated from their genuine question counterparts.
Page 14
by a rising-falling intonation pattern. Similarly to genuine question-word questions, the use of the clitic -e is prohibited here.

(39) a. A: Hová mész?
   where go.2SG
   ‘Where are you going?’

   b. B: (Hogy) Hová megyek?
      that where go.1SG
      ‘Where am I going?’

1.1.1.2.3.5. Restrictions on echo-questions Restrictions on echo-questions are less extensive than those on genuine questions. It follows from the foregoing that all elements that can be questioned by genuine question-word questions can be subject to echo-questioning as well. No question-word can, however, remain inside tensed clauses, and when they cannot be extracted for independent reasons the structures are ungrammatical, whether they are genuine or echo-questions. (The extraction site is marked by t.)

(40) a. Anna megtalálta [azt az embert [aki Péter
      Anna PFX.found.DEF that the man.ACC who Peter.ACC
      látt-a]]
      saw-DEF.3SG
      ‘Anna has found the man who saw Peter.’

   b. *Anna kit talált meg [azt az embert [aki t láttott/látta]]
      who.ACC found PFX saw.INDEF/DEF
      ‘*Who did Anna find the man who saw?’

   c. *Anna [azt az embert [aki kit láttott]] talált meg?
      ‘Anna has found the man who saw who?’

Thus both the genuine and the echo-question are unacceptable if the question-word that has main clause scope is inside the relative, or for that matter, the complement clause.

1.1.1.2.3.6. Multiple echo-questions Multiple echo-questions have the same form as question-word echo-questions discussed in 1.1.1.2.3.2, except that all question-words are equally stressed. The illustration below makes use of a focussed statement, which is a better basis for a multiple echo-question than a neutral one. The only difference between this one and a corresponding genuine multiple question lies in the intonation.

(41) a. A: Anna a kulcsot tegnap találta meg
      Anna the key.ACC yesterday found.DEF PFX
      ‘Anna found the key yesterday.’
Page 15

b. B: Ki mit mikor talált meg?
   who what.ACC when found PFX
   ‘Who found what when?’

It is possible also in case of echo-questions to leave one or more question-words in postverbal position(s). In this case the echo-question conveys a sense of disagreement or disbelief. Note that the rise-fall pattern distributed over the final two syllables above is compressed onto the single syllable of the accented question-word below.

(42) a. A: Anna megtalálta Pétert.
   Anna PFX.found.DEF Peter.ACC
   ‘Anna found Peter.’

b. B: (Hogy)ki talált meg kit?
   that who found PFX who.ACC
   ‘Who found who?’

1.1.1.2.3.7. The behavior of different questioned elements Different questioned elements do not behave in a way distinct from genuine question-word questions, see 1.1.1.2.2.1.

1.1.1.2.4. Answers

1.1.1.2.4.1. Answers and speech acts Answers are not marked as distinct speech acts.

1.1.1.2.4.1.1. Answers to yes-no questions Answers to yes-no questions can always be a simple igen ‘yes’or nem ‘no’. (See also below in 1.1.1.2.4.2.)

In addition to these minimal answers, there are various options depending on the structure of the question. An answer may repeat (i) the focussed constituent if any, whether in its original form or as a coreferential pronominal. The minimal answers igen and nem are illustrated only in this subgroup, but they are possible alternatives all through.

(43) a. A: Anna a kulcsot találta meg?
   Anna the key.ACC found.DEF PFX
   ‘Did Anna find the key?’

b. B: A kulcsot.
   it.ACC
   ‘Yes, she did/find it.’
d. B: Igen. ‘yes’

(43) e. B: Nem. ‘no’

(ii) The verbal prefix can also be repeated:

(44) a. A: Anna meg-találta a kulcsot?
   B: Meg. ‘She has.’

b. B: Meg. ‘She has.’

(iii) If any, the verbal modifier (noun with no article, simple adjective, adverbial, etc.) is repeated, possibly in a pronominal version as an alternative. For more on verbal modifiers, see 1.2.1.2.6.

(45) a. A: Anna könyv-et olvas?
   Anna book-ACC reads
   ‘Is Anna reading a book?’

   b. B: Könyvet.
   book.ACC
   ‘Yes/She is.’

   c. B: Azt.
   it.ACC
   ‘it’

(46) a. A: Péter beteg volt?
   Peter sick was
   ‘Was Peter sick?’

   b. B: Beteg.
   ‘sick’

   c. B: Az.
   ‘it’

(47) a. A: Anna jól érzi magát?
   Anna well feels herself.ACC
   ‘Is Anna feeling well?’

   b. B: Jól.
   ‘well’

(48) a. A: Péter haza-ment?
   Peter home-went
   ‘Has Peter gone home?’
(iv) If, finally, none of the above is present, the finite verb is repeated in answer to the yes-no question.

(49) a. A: Anna talált érdekes könyveket tegnap a bolt-ban?
    'Did Anna find interesting books in the shop yesterday?'

b. B: Talált.
    'She did.'

c. B: *Anna talált tegnap.

d. B: Talált érdekes könyveket tegnap a boltban.

e. B: Anna talált érdekes könyveket tegnap a bolt-ban
    'Anna found interesting books in the shop yesterday.'

As is indicated by the bold type, in cases (ii)–(iv) above it is also the focussed constituent that is repeated in the answer, suggesting that whenever no other constituent of the clause is focussed, the prefix, the verbal modifier, or, in their absence, the finite verb itself is emphasized in yes-no questions. Whereas the rest of the question can be repeated in each case above without making the answer totally unacceptable, it is the entire sentence (or the sentence without the topic constituent(s) placed to the left of the focus) that has to reoccur in the answer, though it always sounds awkward or tautological. Note that in yes-no questions no pro-drop of the subject or the object is possible, thus a “truncated” answer, as in the (c) or (d) examples above, is unacceptable—in contrast with what is discussed directly below.

1.1.1.2.4.1.2 Answers to question-word questions Answers to question-word questions generally consist of the constituent that satisfies the question-word. It is again technically possible to give a “full answer” with the caveat above, and then the answer follows the structure of the question. That is, since question-words are placed preverbally, the corresponding constituents in answers must occur in the same preverbal position, otherwise the answer will be ungrammatical.
Page 18

(50) a. A: Anna mit talált?
    ‘What did Anna find?’

b. B: **Kulcsot.**
    ‘A key.’

c. B: Anna **kulcsot** talált.
    ‘Anna found a key.’

d. B: Anna talált kulcsot.

Repeating the initial, i.e., pre-focus, constituent, as in examples (e) and (f) below, can yield some kind of multiple contrast to be discussed in 1.12. Note, however, that Hungarian is a “pro-drop” language; thus subjects (as well as singular definite objects) can be omitted under identity. Also note the curious case of the unacceptable (d) sentence, and example (g), in which the order is changed except for the adjacent answer (=focused) constituent and the verb.

(51) a. A: A kulcsot mikor találta meg Anna?
    ‘When did Anna find the key?’

b. B: Tegnap.
    ‘yesterday’

c. B: Tegnap találta meg.
    ‘She found it yesterday.’

d. B: Tegnap találta meg Anna.

(51) e. B: A kulcsot tegnap találta meg.
    ‘She found the key yesterday.’

(51) f. B: A kulcsot tegnap találta meg Anna.
    ‘Anna found the key yesterday.’

(51) g. B: Anna tegnap találta meg a kulcsot.
    ‘Anna found the key yesterday.’

In answer to question-word questions that contain the question-word inside some constituent, the entire constituent in question must in principle be repeated, with the answer proper filling in for the place of the question-word. Since, however, the head noun and the phrases adjoined to it can be omitted, it is often the case that the questioned constituent is given in the answer and it carries the case suffix of the entire NP.
Page 19

(52) 

a. A: Anna milyen kulcsot talált?  
   Anna what key.ACC found  
   ‘What key did Anna find?’

b. B: Hosszú kulcs-ot.  
   long key-ACC  
   ‘A long one.’

c. B: Hosszú-t.  
   long-ACC  
   ‘A long one.’

(53) 

a. A: Anna hány hosszú kulcs-ot talált?  
   how.many long key-ACC  
   ‘How many long keys did Anna find?’

b. B: Négy hosszú kulcs-ot.  
   four long key-ACC.  
   ‘Four long keys.’

c. B: *Négy hosszú-t.  

d. B: Négy-et.  
   four-ACC  
   ‘Four ones.’

In answer to questions containing question-words embedded in prenominal (nonfinite) clauses, the entire nonfinite clause has to be repeated, though the head noun can be omitted again, cf. 1.1.1.2.3.1.

(54) 

a. A: Anna [(hol olvasó) fiú-k-at] látott?  
   Anna where reading boy-PL-ACC saw.3SG  
   ‘For what place x, did Anna see boys reading at x?’

b. B: Könyvtár-ban olvasó (fiú)-k-at (látott).  
   library-INE reading boy-PL-ACC  
   ‘(She saw) boys reading in a library.’

1.1.1.2.4.1.3. Answers to echo-questions  
Answers to echo-questions follow the pattern established for answers to (genuine) question-word questions.

1.1.1.2.4.2. Minimal answers to yes-no questions  
Minimal answers to positive yes-no questions other than repetitions of elements of the question can be given by means of igen ‘yes’, nem ‘no, not’, as well as a number of other words and expressions, such as esetleg, talán ‘perhaps’, lehet ‘maybe’, biztos ‘sure, probably’, etc.

Minimal answers to negative yes-no questions are given by nem ‘no, not’, which means agreement with the negative assertion, or de igen ‘but’
yes’, dehogynem ‘but of course’, which convey disagreement with the negative assertion.

(55) a. A: Péter nem volt beteg?
   Peter not was sick
   ‘Wasn’t Peter sick?’

b. B: Nem, (nem volt beteg)
   ‘No (he wasn’t sick).’

c. B: De igen/Dehogynem (beteg volt)
   ‘Yes (he was).’

Minimal answers to question-word questions have been discussed above.

1.1.1.3. Imperative sentences

1.1.1.3.1. The form of the imperative

The imperative form is distinguished by means of an affix -j. The imperative marker is, however, not distinct from the subjunctive, leading to much confusion in grammars of Hungarian. Part of the problem is due to the fact that in addition to “primary” imperatives in second person singular and plural, and the secondary, though transparent, first person plural imperative, polite or formal second person (like French vous, Italian Lei, German Sie) is realized in this language by use of third person verb-forms, making the imperative paradigm almost complete. On the other hand, verb-forms essentially identical with the imperative are used in subordination (see below). The subjunctive will be discussed in 1.1.2.2.5.

1.1.1.3.1.1. The uses of the imperative The imperative affix is -j, which assimilates in a number of well-defined cases to the preceding sound. For more on the morphological paradigm, see 2.1.3.4.3. Since Hungarian is a pro-drop language, subject pronouns are not expressed in the default case in imperative sentences either.

(56) a. Másol-j egy kulcsot!
   copy-IMP a key-ACC
   ‘Copy (2SG) a key.’

b. Másol-j-atok egy kulcsot!
   copy-IMP-2PL a key-ACC
   ‘Copy (2PL) a key.’

c. Másol-j-unk egy kulcsot!
   copy-IMP-1PL a key-ACC
   ‘Let’s copy a key.’
d. Másol-j-on egy kulcsot!
   copy-IMP-3SG
   ‘Copy (2SG, formal/distant) a key.’

e. Másol-j-anak egy kulcsot!
   copy-IMP-3PL
   ‘Copy (3PL, formal/distant) a key.’

Although the “missing link”—that is, the first person singular—formally does exist and is used in subordinate sentences, since it is uninterpretable as a main clause, it is simply ungrammatical. The “suggestion” sense of first person imperatives is carried by a special form relying on hadd originally meaning ‘let, allow (IMP-2SG)’.

(57)   a. *Másol-j-ak egy kulcsot!
       copy-IMP-1SG a key.ACC
       ‘Let me copy a key.’
   b. Hadd másol-j-ak egy kulcsot!
       ‘Let me copy a key.’

Note, however, that the third person forms of the imperative can have a straightforward third person use in the “suggestion” or subjunctive sense.

(58)   a. Másol-j-on Anna egy kulcsot!
       copy-IMP-3SG Anna a key.ACC
       ‘Let Anna copy a key.’
   b. Másol-j-anak a fiúk egy kulcsot!
       copy-IMP-3PL the boys a key.ACC
       ‘Let the boys copy a key.’

1.1.1.3.1.2. Degrees of the imperative

Different degrees of the imperative are available for prefix+verb combinations, in which the position of the prefix is variable according to the force of the imperative. Thus, in second persons the standard or default imperative has the prefix in postverbal position. If, however, the prefix is in its otherwise usual preverbal location, the imperative is understood as a threat and the intonation is rising instead of the fall normal for imperatives.

(59)   a. Másol-j le egy kulcsot!
       copy-IMP PFX a key.ACC
       ‘Copy a key.’
   b. Le-másol-j egy kulcsot!
       ‘Copy a key, or…’

In other persons, in particular in the first person singular, this variation carries a different force, since the imperative is out of the question here. If used as an interrogative and the prefix is postverbal, it is a kind of
Page 22

echo-question to an imperative with an accompanying rising intonation on each major constituent.

(60) a. A: Másol-j le egy kulcsot!
   ‘Copy a key.’
   b. B: Másol-j-ak le egy kulcsot?
   copy-IMP-1SG
   ‘(You want me to) copy a key?’

Whether the prefix is placed preverbally or postverbally, the question is understood as an offer, and the intonation shows the usual rise-fall pattern of yes-no questions.

(61) a. Le-másol-j-ak egy kulcsot?
   ‘Shall I copy a key?’
   b. Másol-j-ak le egy kulcsot?
   ‘Shall I copy the key?’

1.1.1.3.2.1. **Negative imperatives** Negative imperatives are formed by placing the imperative/subjunctive version of the negation word ne ‘not’ in front of the inflected verb. For persons available in the negative paradigm, see the positive paradigm in 1.1.1.3.1.1.

(62) a. Ne másol-j kulcs-ot!
   not copy-IMP key.ACC
   ‘Don’t copy a key.’
   b. Ne másol-j-unk kulcsot!
   copy-IMP-1PL
   ‘Don’t let’s copy a key.’

1.1.1.3.2.2. **Degrees of negative imperative** Degrees of negative imperative are available according to the pattern seen in positive imperatives, except that the negative element must be different for reasons to be seen directly. Ne gives way to nehogy (literally, a combination of ne and the complementizer hogy ‘that’). Again, the intonation is rising, indicating the suppressed consequences. Another means is to place the negative word between the prefix and verb.

(63) a. Nehogy le-másol-d a kulcsot!
   not PFX-copy-IMP.DEF the key.ACC
   ca. ‘Don’t you copy the key, or...’
   b. Le ne másol-d a kulcsot!
   ca. ‘Don’t you copy the key, or...’
1.1.1.3.3. Further devices of expressing imperative

Other means of expressing imperative force include (a) second person positive or negative questions, used commonly, for example, by parents to babies to prevent (further) mishaps; (b) in formal relations by means of tessék ‘lit. please-IMP’, (c) légy szíves ‘be-2SG kind’ or legyen szíves ‘be-3SG kind’ with an infinitival, or (d) a finite, clause. Note that these last two formulas are no longer seen as constructs but are regarded as single items by speakers of the language, although orthography still observes their origins.

(64)  
   a. (Nem) Teszed le a kulcsot?
       ‘Don’t you put down the key (right away)’?
   b. Tessék le-másol-ni a kulcsot.
       ‘Please, copy the key.’
   c. Légy szíves le-másol-ni a kulcsot.
       ‘Be so kind as to copy the key.’
   d. Légy szíves, másol-j-ad le a kulcsot.
       ‘Please, copy the key.’

Note that intonation may be responsible for significant distinctions in interpreting the same sentence as a command or as a polite request: the former is always accompanied by a fall on the last stressed item, the latter by a much more even contour throughout.

1.1.1.3.4. Focus in imperative sentences

Focus in imperatives can arise in three ways: (a) if a constituent is stressed to the left of an unstressed verb in the imperative form; (b) if the negation word ne ‘not’ precedes the preverbal focus, and (c) if in imperatives it is possible for a heavily accented constituent to remain in a postverbal position; in this last case the meaning the imperative conveys is a strong suggestion of choosing one rather than another alternative.

(65)  
   a. A kulcsot tegyed le!
       ‘Put down the key (rather than something else)!’
   b. Ne a kulcsot tegyed le!
       ‘Don’t put down the key (put down something else)!’
c. Tegyed le a kulcsot!
‘(Try and) put down the key!’ = ca. ‘Let it be the key that you will put down.’

It is in the case of contrastive focus that prefixes, and in general verbal modifiers (also called “reduced complements”), can be placed and accented preverbally. The ensuing interpretation involves contrasting the complex verb or the verbal modifier itself with a specific or open alternative. In view of the above, this is but a subcase of focus in imperatives.

(66)  
(a). El-olvas-d a könyvet (ne csak nézegesd)!  
PFX-read-IMP.DEF.2SG the book.ACC (not just look.IMP.it)  
‘READ the book (don’t just look at it)!’

(b). Fel-men-j-él (ne le)!  
up-go-IMP-2SG not down  
‘Go up, not down!’

1.1.1.4. Other sentence-types

Grammars of Hungarian distinguish two further sentence-types.

1.1.1.4.1. Desideratives

To express desires, the verb in conditional form combines with grammatical formatives (conjunctions, adverbials) used for other functions in other contexts (e.g., introducing concessive, conditional, or coordinate clauses). In case of full formal identity the intonation contour reveals the difference: conditionals have a rising pattern, desires have a gradual descent.

(67)  
(a). Bár/Ha/Bár-ha tud-ná-nak olvas-ni!  
though/if know-COND-3PL read-INF  
‘If they could read!’

(b). Csak lemásol-t-uk volna a kulcsot!  
only PFX.copy-PAST-DEF.1PL COND the key.ACC  
‘If only we had found the key!’

Technically speaking, it is here that (literal) third and first person imperative forms belong, thus providing an argument for their more appropriate classification as a form of subjunctive.

(68)  
(a). Nyíl-j-on ki az ajtó!  
open-IMP-3SG out the door.NOM  
‘Let the door open up!’
Page 25

b. Ne lás-s-am többé a gyerekeimet (ha ez
not see-IMP-DEF.1SG more the my.children.ACC if this
nem igaz)! not true
‘May I not see my children again (if this isn’t true).’

Note that the example for first person is not at all formal, unlike its English translation, which is meant to illustrate
the effect of the subjunctive.

1.1.1.4.2. Exclamations
Exclamations can be simple or complex, but all instances must focus on some quality or quantity; the mere fact or
event cannot be the subject of an exclamation.
In adjective-focussed exclamations a statement is prefixed by the exclamatory particles milyen ‘what’, which is
apparently identical with the coordinating conjunction de ‘but’ and has a rising intonation contour. Note that the
optional indefinite article is between the adjective and the head noun, rather than in its normal position to the left of
the adjective.
(69) a. Milyen/De érdekes (egy) könyvet olvasol!
what/how interesting a book.ACC read.2SG
‘What an interesting book you’re reading!’
b. *De olvasol (egy érdekes könyvet)!
ca. *‘How you’re reading an interesting book!’

Predicate-focussed exclamations differ from simple ones by employing the adverbial question-words milyen+adverb
‘how’, mennyire ‘how much’, mit ‘what.ACC’, etc., or the simple particle de again. In these constructions it is required
that the prefix precede the verb. (For more on prefix-verb order, see below.) Recall that in questions prefixes cannot
occur between the question-word and the inflected verb. Excepting those beginning with de, they can all be
introduced by the general complementizer hogy ‘that’.
(70) a. (Hogy) mennyire meg-változtál!
that how.much PFX-changed.2SG
‘How much you have changed!’
b. De meg-változtál!
‘How much you have changed!’
c. Hogy meg-változtál!
‘How much you have changed!’
d. *Mennyire/De változtál meg!
Another variety is produced by inserting the negation word between the prefix (if any) and the verb. In this case the prefix can also be placed behind the verb. If there is no prefix, the negation element is between the question-word and the verb.

\[(71)\]

a. Mit el nem olvasott!
   what PFX not read.PAST.3SG
   ‘How much she has read!’

b. Mit nem olvasott el!
   ‘How much she has read!’

c. Mit nem olvasott!
   ‘How much she has read!’

It is perplexing at first sight that in certain types of exclamations both the prefix-verb and the verb-prefix order are allowed.

\[(72)\]

a. Mi (minden)-t el-olvasott!
   what all-ACC PFX-read.3SG
   ‘How much she has read!’

b. Mi (minden)-t olvasott el!
   ‘How much she has read!’

\[(73)\]

a. Milyen sok könyvet el-olvasott!
   how many book.ACC
   ‘How many books she’s read!’

b. Milyen sok könyvet olvasott el!
   ‘How many books she’s read!’

And it may be even more confusing that some exclamations allow the prefix to occur only postverbally.

\[(74)\]

a. (Egy) milyen érdekes könyvet olvastam el!
   what interesting book.ACC read.1SG PFX
   ‘What an interesting book I’ve (just) read!’

b. *Egy/Ø milyen érdekes könyvet el-olvastam!

This difference between the exclamations with prefixes fixed in preverbal and postverbal positions and those with movable prefixes may be due to their relatedness to corresponding quantified structures. The variation in the placement of the prefix ultimately goes back to the focussability (or contrastability) of the preverbal quantifier phrase, cf. also 1.11. For, if it cannot be focussed, the prefix must intervene between it and the verb, otherwise a focus reading would be generated. For comparison, see the
positions of the nonfocussable adverbial nagyon and a quantified phrase below in indicative clauses.

(75)  
  a. Nagyon meg-változtál.
       much PFX-changed.2SG
       ‘You’ve changed much.’
  b. *Nagyon változó meg.

(76)  
  a. Sok könyvet olvasott el.
       many book read.3SG PFX
       ‘She has read many books.’
  b. Sok könyvet el-olvasott.
       ca. ‘There are many books she has read.’

1.1.1.5. Indirect speech acts
In surveying sentences expressing desires it has been noted that they may only be differentiated from conditionals by the intonation contour. Other indirect speech acts include questions used as (a) requests, (b) commands, (c) statements, (d) suggestions, etc. (cf. also 1.1.1.3.3).

(77)  
  a. Le-ten-né-d a kulcs-ot?
       down-put-COND-DEF.2SG the key.ACC
       ‘Would you put down the key?’
  b. Miért nem tesz-ed (már) le a kulcs-ot?
       Why not put-DEF.2SG yet down the key.ACC
       ‘(Now) why don’t you put down the key?’
  c. Honnan tud-j-am, hol van a kulcs?
       where.from know-IMP-DEF.1SG where is the key
       ‘How should I know where the key is?’
  d. Nem kell-ene megvárni Annát?
       not need-COND.3SG PFX.wait.INF Anna.ACC
       ‘Shouldn’t we wait for Anna?’

1.1.2. Subordination
1.1.2.1. The marking of subordination
Subordination is marked by (a) the general or ‘neutral’ complementizer hogy ‘that’, (b) by a series of ‘meaningful’ complementizers, such as ha ‘if, mint ‘as, bár ‘although’, or (c) by a variety of (phrases containing) relative pronouns.
The order of constituents in subordinate clauses has the same variation as in main clauses, except of course that (phrases containing) relative pronouns must be clause-initial. For more on this, see below in 1.1.2.3. Note that the rules of punctuation in Hungarian require that all finite clauses be enclosed by commas, notwithstanding the intonation or the type of construction they are in.

1.1.2.2. Noun clauses

Clauses that occur in noun phrases can be one of the following five subtypes:
(a) hogy ('that') clauses with or without an expletive pronominal az ‘it’
(b) complement clauses to nominal heads
(c) relative clauses with a pronominal head
(d) relative clauses with NP heads
(e) ‘headless’ or free relative clauses.

(78)

(a) Anna tudta az-t, hogy Péter beteg.
   Anna knew.DEF it-ACC that Peter sick
   ‘Anna knew that Peter was sick.’
(b) Ha Péter beteg, nem dolgozik.
    if Peter sick not work.3SG
    ‘If Peter is sick, he isn’t working.’
(c) A fiú, aki beteg volt, nem dolgozik.
    the boy who sick was not work.3SG
    ‘The boy who was sick is not working.’

Note that the rules of punctuation in Hungarian require that all finite clauses be enclosed by commas, notwithstanding the intonation or the type of construction they are in.

(79)

(a) Anna tudta (azt), hogy Péter beteg.
   Anna knew.DEF it-ACC that Peter sick
   ‘Anna knew that Peter was sick.’
(b) Anna tudta az-t a tény-t, hogy Péter beteg.
    that-ACC the fact-ACC 
    ‘Anna knew the fact that Peter was sick.’
(c) Anna tudta az-t, ami-t Péter elhallgatott.
   Anna knew.DEF it-ACC what-ACC Peter concealed
   ‘Anna knew what Peter had concealed.’
(d) Anna tudta a titkot, amit Péter elhallgatott.
    the secret.ACC
    ‘Anna knew the secret that Peter had concealed.’
(e) Anna tudta, amit Péter elhallgatott.
    ‘Anna knew what Peter had concealed.’
In accordance with the structure of Routledge Descriptive Grammars, the last three will be discussed in 1.1.2.3, under adjective clauses, while noun complement clauses are treated in 1.2.5.2.10.

1.1.2.2.1. The marking and positions of noun clauses
Noun clauses as understood in this limited sense are always introduced by the complementizer hogy ‘that’, except in well-defined (though not necessarily well-understood) cases to be specified below.
Noun clauses cannot be directly marked for case; it is the pronoun az that carries the case suffix, unless it is omitted, which is in general possible in the nominative and the accusative.
Although subordinate clauses are most naturally placed finally in main clauses with the (often optional) pronominal inside the main clause, as in the case of all other finite clauses, preverbal positions are also possible and frequent (a) initially, with the pronominal preceding the clause, (b) initially, with or without the pronominal following the clause, and (c), less frequently, following some other initial constituent(s).

(80) a. Azt, hogy Péter beteg volt, Anna tudta.
   it.ACC that Peter sick was Anna knew
   ‘That Peter had been sick was known to Anna.’

b. Hogy Péter beteg volt, (azt) Anna tudta.
   that Peter sick was it.ACC Anna knew
   ‘That Peter had been sick was known to Anna.’

c. Anna (azt), hogy Péter beteg volt, tudta.
   Anna it.ACC that Peter sick was knew
   ‘Anna knew that Peter had been sick.’

1.1.2.2.2. Types of noun clauses
Subject and object clauses are distinguished from clauses with oblique case-marked expletive pronouns, since the latter cannot be omitted under normal conditions. Moreover, oblique pronominals have a variety in postverbal positions that is identical to the oblique forms of the third person singular personal pronoun Ő ‘he/she/it’, as against the only form that can occur preverbally and is identical to the demonstrative az ‘that, it’.

(81) a. (Az) hogy Péter beteg volt, mindenki-t meglepett.
   it that Peter sick was everyone-ACC surprised
   ‘That Peter was sick surprised everyone.’
b. Ar-ról, hogy Péter beteg volt, mindenki tudott.
   it-DEL that Peter sick was everyone knew
   ca. ‘Everyone knew (about it) that Peter had been sick.’

(c) Mindenki tudott *(ar-ról/ról-a), hogy Péter beteg volt.
   everyone knew it-DEL/DEL-it
   ca. ‘Everyone knew (about it) that Peter had been sick.’

(d) *Róla, hogy Péter beteg volt, mindenki tudott.

The personal pronominal version of the expletive cannot be deleted and it cannot occur preverbally in what is a topic or focus position. Thus it can—in fact, has to—occupy “weak” positions, just like its coreferential counterpart. In similar weak positions the coreferential third person singular pronoun can be dropped in the nominative or accusative.

    the film good but DEL-it Peter not read-PAST DEL-it
    ‘The film is good, but Peter hasn't read about it.’

b. A könyv jó, de Péter még nem olvas-t-a
   but Peter yet not read-PAST-DEF.3SG
   Ø/*ő-t/*az-t.
   (s)he/that-ACC
   ‘The book is good, but Peter hasn’t read it.’

It stands to reason to assume that the weak form of the nominative and accusative expletive is identical to the (dropped) personal pronoun. Note that as a “real” pronoun only the null form of the personal pronoun can be used referring back to nonhuman/inanimate antecedents, and although the strong pronoun az-t ‘that/it-ACC’ is, in principle, somewhat better, since it indicates inanimacy, it is at least unjustified, if not ungrammatical.

That there is a definite object in the clause is indicated by the definite conjugation on the verb (glossed as “DEF”) in the (b) example, as compared to the indefinite or “subjective” conjugation in example (a) above. Similar distinctions obtain above in (80)-(81) with respect to the object clauses with null expletives versus those with oblique pronouns as seen in the difference between tud-ott ‘know-PAST.3SG’ and tud-t-a ‘know-PAST-DEF.3SG’. For more on the definite conjugation, see 2.1.3.6.1.2.

1.1.2.2.3. Indirect statements
Indirect statements as strictly understood are subsumed under object or noun complement clauses, but show no differences from other object clauses. As regards the changes from a direct quote, the only modification
1.1.2.4. Indirect questions

Indirect questions are understood here with reference to all subordinate interrogative clauses, whether the main clause predicate is a verb of saying or not. They can occupy any one of the structural positions (or equivalently, they can have any one of the syntactic functions), subject, object, oblique or noun complement.

(84) a. (Hogy) ki volt beteg, (az) Anná-t nem erdékelte.
   ‘Anna wasn’t interested in who had been sick.’

b. Anna nem tudta (azt), (hogy) ki volt beteg.
   ‘Anna didn’t know who had been sick.’

c. Anna kíváncsi volt ar-ra, (hogy) ki volt beteg.
   ‘Anna was curious about who had been sick.’

d. A kérdés, (hogy) ki volt beteg, érdekes.
   ‘The question of who was sick is interesting.’

As is clear from the parentheses around the complementizer hogy, it can be freely deleted in all embedded question clauses.

While indirect question-word questions do not differ from main clause questions, embedded yes-no questions require that the question clitic -e, which is optional in main clauses, always be present. (Focus is in bold type.)

(85) a. Anna azt kérdezte, (hogy) Péter beteg volt-e.
   ‘Anna asked whether Peter had been sick.’
b. Anna azt kérdezte, (hogy) Péter nem volt-e beteg.
   not
   ‘Anna asked whether Peter hadn’t been sick.’

c. Anna azt kérdezte, (hogy) Péter volt-e beteg.
   ‘Anna asked if it was Peter that had been sick.’

Naturally, the rise-fall pattern characteristic of main clause yes-no questions is missing in embedded ones.

1.1.2.2.5. Indirect commands

Indirect commands have the same structural properties as direct imperatives: the prefix (if any) is placed behind the
verb, and the verb is marked by the affix -j (assimilated in various ways to the preceding phoneme).

(86) a. Anna azt mondta, (hogy) tanul-ja-d meg a
   verset.
   poem.ACC
   ‘Anna told you to learn the poem.’

b. Anna azt javasolta, (hogy) Péter tanulja meg a verset.
   suggested.DEF
   ‘Anna suggested that Peter learn the poem.’

As indicated by the parentheses, the complementizer hogy can be omitted in indirect commands, too.

Indirect commands are distinguished from subjunctive clauses that are complements to a distinct class of verbs,
adjectives, and adpositions. Their finite verbs are in the subjunctive as indicated not by a different modality marker
on the verb, since the imperative and the subjunctive are formally identical, but by (a) the nondeletability of the
complementizer hogy, and (b) an obligatory prefix-verb order in the (nonfocussed) clause, which contrasts with the
obligatory verb-prefix order in indirect commands.

(87) a. Nem szükséges, *(hogy) Péter meg-tanul-j-a a
   vers-et.
   poem.ACC
   ‘It isn’t necessary for Peter to learn the poem.’

b. *Nem szükséges, hogy Péter tanulja meg a verset.

c. *Anna azt javasolta, hogy meg-tanuljad a verset.
Focus may of course overrule the neutral prefix-verb order and shift the prefix into a postverbal position.

1.1.2.2.6. Infinitival clauses

Infinitival clauses are the only nonfinite construction-type available for subject and complement functions. (Nominalizations are genuine noun phrases, disregarded here.)

(88) a. Fontos volt meg-tanul-ni a verset
    important was PFX-learn-INF the poem-ACC
    ‘It was important to learn the poem.’

b. Anna meg-próbál-t-a meg-tanul-ni a verset.
    Anna PFX-tried-PAST-DEF.3SG
    ‘Anna tried to learn the poem.’

Verbs like megpróbál ‘try’, which constitute the first subclass of main verbs governing infinitival clauses, must be marked for the definiteness of the object of the infinitival clause. It is questionable whether the infinitival clause is (always) an object. Another group of verbs takes object clauses and infinitives, depending on subject identity between the main and the subordinate clauses. (An accusativus-cum-infinitivo construction is excluded with these verbs.)

(89) a. Anna most akar olvas-ni.
    Anna now wants read-INF
    ‘Anna wants to read now.’

b. Anna az-t akar-ja, hogy Péter most olvas-s-on.
    Anna it-ACC want-DEF.3SG that Peter now read-IMP-3SG
    ‘Anna wants Peter to read now.’

c. *Anna akarja Péter-t olvas-ni.
    Anna wants.DEF Peter-ACC read-INF

A third subclass of verbs cannot take (nominal or clausal) object complements at all, and, unlike meg-próbál ‘try’ above and the verbs in its group, they cannot undergo definiteness agreement with the object of their infinitival complement clause either.

(90) a. Anna igyekez-ett/ *igyekez-t-e meg-tanul-ni
    Anna strive-PAST.3SG/strive-PAST-DEF.3sg PFX-learn-INF
    a vers-et.
    the poem-ACC
    ‘Anna strove to learn the poem.’
b. Anna meg-próbál-t a /*meg-próbál-t
    PFX-try-PAST-DEF.3SG/PFX-try-PAST.INDEF.3SG
    megtanulni a verset.
    ‘Anna tried to learn the poem.’

Both igyekez-t-e ‘strive-PAST-DEF.3SG’ in (a) and meg-próbál-t ‘PFX-try-PAST.INDEF.3SG’ in (b) would result in ungrammaticality. In addition, it is possible to use the question-word mit ‘what-ACC’ only with predicates like akar ‘want’ and meg-próbál ‘try’, but never with igyekez ‘strive’.

As far as indirect statements, commands, and questions are concerned, none of these is expressible by means of infinitival clauses. The cases that appear to be indirect commands or questions can be shown to fall under different headings.

In the example below the infinitival clause is one of purpose, a frequent construction in Hungarian, rather than a command, and an analogous (and synonymous) finite clause of purpose is always available.

(91) a. Anna meg-hívta Pétert fel-olvas-ni a
    Anna PFX-invited.DEF Peter.ACC PFX-read-INF the
    verset.
    poem.ACC
    ‘Anna invited Peter to read out the poem.’

b. Anna meghívta Pétert, hogy (az) fel-olvassa a
    that he PFX-read.DEF the
    verset.
    poem.ACC
    ‘Anna invited Peter in order that he read the poem.’

1.1.2.6.1–7. Properties of infinitival clauses
The verbal categories lost are all inflectional affixes marking tense, mood, definite object, though causative (CAUS) and frequentative (derivative) affixes (FREQ) can be retained. The (inflectional) affix expressing permission or possibility is also missing. For number and person, see below.

(92) a. Fontos volt Pétert olvas-tat-ni.
    important was Peter.ACC read-CAUS-INF
    ‘It was important to have Peter read.’
b. Anna most akar olvas-gat-ni.
Anna now wants read-FREQ-INF
ca. ‘Anna wants to be reading (intermittently) now.’
c. *Anna most akar olvas-hat-ni.
read-POSS-INF
‘Anna wants to be permitted/it to be possible to read.’

Infinitives are formed by adding the invariant suffix -ni to the stem. The infinitive marker can be followed by optional person and number agreement with the subject, whether overt (and then always in the dative case) or suppressed.

(93)

important was Peter-DAT read-INF-3SG
‘It was important for Peter to read.’
b. Fontos volt Péter-nek olvas-ni.
‘It was important for Peter to read.’
c. Fontos volt olvas-ni-a.
It was important for him/her to read.’
d. Fontos volt olvasn-i.
‘It was important (for anyone) to read.’

When in complement function, however, the infinitival clause cannot be marked for person and the subject must be suppressed and consequently identical with the subject (or some other designated argument) of the main clause.

(94)

Peter tries swim-INF-3SG
Peter wants Anna-DAT swim-INF-3SG

Note that person-marked infinitives in complement functions were acceptable in a previous period of the language, though dative subjects were not.

Apart from subjects, all other arguments are retained unchanged in infinitival clauses and no further morphological material in addition to the dative case assigned to (some) subjects is inserted. Adverbials are used in the same form as in finite clauses and all subtypes are possible.

(95) Anna megpróbál gyakr-an/gyors-an/beteg-en olvasni.
Anna tries often-ADV/quick-ADV/ill-ADV read.INF
‘Anna tries to read often/fast/(when she’s) sick.’
1.1.2.6.8. Clause union

Constituents of infinitival clauses can move into main clauses with ease, especially, but not exclusively, if they become topics or foci in the main clause. Note that if they are raised into preverbal positions in the main clause, they are invariably interpreted as either topic or focus, depending on stress and the order of the preverbal constituent (verbal modifier) with respect to the inflected verb. (For focus and topic, see 1.11 and 1.12.)

(96)  
      this the book.ACC important was John.DAT PFX-read-INF-3SG  
      'As for this book, it was important for John to read it.'
  b. Ezt a könyvet akarja Anna el-olvas-ni.  
      this the book.ACC wants.DEF Anna PFX-read-INF  
      'It's this book that Anna wants to read.'
  c. Fontos volt ezt a könyvet elolvasnia Jánosnak.  
      'It was important for John to read that book.'

Furthermore, there is a class of verbs that in the neutral case requires that the prefix or verbal modifier of the infinitive in the lower clause immediately precede it in the main clause, i.e., that it move in front of the finite matrix verb. Verbs of this "prefix-raising" class include the auxiliaries fog 'will', szokott 'used to', talál 'happen to', as well as full verbs like tud, bír 'can, be able to', mer 'dare', néz 'see', kíván 'wish', szeret 'love', utál 'hate', szeretne 'would like', akar 'want'.

The class of "prefix-freezing" verbs, which do not allow such movement, contain szeret 'like', imád 'love', utál 'hate', fél 'fear', siet 'hurry', igyekszik 'strive', etc., and almost all predicative adjectives (e.g., hajlandó 'willing', köteles 'obliged'). For more, see Kálmán et al. (1989).

(97)  
  a. Anna el akarja olvas-ni a könyvet.  
      Anna PFX wants.DEF read-INF the book.ACC  
      'Anna wants to read the book.'
  b. Anna igyekszik el-olvas-ni a könyvet.  
      Anna strives PFX-read-INF the book.ACC  
      'Anna strives to read the book.'
  c. *Anna el igyekszik olvas-ni a könyvet

Note that the order in which the finite main verb is followed by the prefix+infinitive is perfectly acceptable for the first class of verbs, provided the sentence is focussed, negated, or modified in some other comparable way that justifies the immobility of the prefix.

Finally, it should also be noted that although the infinitive is capable of assigning accusative to its object, it cannot be inflected for definiteness, unlike finite verbs. However, as was mentioned above, a number of ma-
trix verbs are marked for the definiteness of the object of the embedded infinitive. They include not only all of the “prefix-raising” verbs, but several of the “prefix-freezing” ones, in particular those that allow nominal objects as well as infinitival ones, e.g., szeret ‘like’, imád ‘love’. In other words, the group of prefix-freezing verbs has two subclasses, that of object-agreement verbs, e.g., szeret ‘like’, and that of non-object-agreement verbs, like fél ‘fear’. (Note that the absence of the suffix of the definite conjugation qualifies as indefinite conjugation in third person singular verb-forms as below.)

(98) a. Anna most akar *(-ja) el-olvas-ni a könyv-et.
    Anna now want-DEF.3SG PFX-read-INF the book-ACC
    ‘Anna wants to read the book now.’
b. Anna most akar (*-ja) el-olvas-ni egy könyv-et.
    wants-DEF.3SG a book-ACC
    ‘Anna wants to read a book.’
c. Anna szeret *(-i) el-olvas-ni a könyv-et.
    like-DEF.3SG
    ‘Anna likes to read the book.’
d. Anna fél (*-i) el-olvas-ni a könyv-et.
    fears-DEF.3SG
    ‘Anna is afraid to read the book.’

1.1.2.3. Adjective clauses (relative clauses)
Strictly speaking, clauses that can be classified as adjectival comprise not only relative clauses but also ones that substitute for adjectival phrases, whether in attributive or predicative use, cf.:

(99) a. Anna olyan könyvet olvas, amilyen-t Péter (olvas).
    Anna such book reads what-ACC Peter reads
    ca. ‘Anna is reading a book similar to what Peter is reading.’
b. Anna olyan volt, amilyen Péter (volt).
    Anna such was what Peter was.
    ca. ‘Anna was like Peter.’

The glosses above are defective in that they do not reveal that the proadjective o-lyan in the main clause is analyzed into a “demonstrative” o- and an adjectival ending -lyan/lyen also found in the relative pronoun ami-lyen, whose first element a- is another form of the demonstrative. This demonstrative element defines relative pronominals if followed by question-words such as mi ‘what’, exclusively a pro-noun in Hungarian. Related properties of this structure will be discussed under degree clauses.
and equatives (1.9). In this section, however, we will restrict our attention to relative clauses.

1.1.2.4.2.7. The marking of relative clauses

Prenominal relative clauses are nonfinite, marked on the clause-final verb as an active (“present”) or passive (“past”) participle. For more discussion, see 1.1.2.3.9.

   the book.ACC read-APRT girl sick was
   ‘The girl reading a/the book was sick.’

   the girl by read-PPRT book interesting was
   ‘The book read by the girl was interesting.’

Postnominal relative clauses are marked by an optional demonstrative along with the lexical head noun and a (phrase containing the) obligatory relative pronoun in a clause-initial position.

(101) (Az) a könyv, amely-et Anna olvas-ott, érdekes volt.
   that the book which-ACC Anna read-PAST interesting was
   ‘The book that Anna was reading was interesting.’

1.1.2.3.2. Restrictive and nonrestrictive

There is no structural difference between restrictive and nonrestrictive prenominal clauses, but it is possible, and in some positions necessary, to distinguish them by means of the distribution of accents. Much as in the case of simple prenominal adjectives, when the stress on the head noun is at the same level as that on the prenominal clause, the structure is interpreted as nonrestrictive. If the stress on the head noun is decreased, restrictive interpretation is in order. ([‘] stands for primary stress, [‘] for secondary stress, and no marking for zero stress.)

   the diligent Hungarians.ACC everyone appreciates
   ‘Everyone appreciates the diligent Hungarians.’
   (nonrestrictive—all Hungarians are diligent and all are appreciated)

   ‘Everyone appreciates diligent Hungarians.’
   (restrictive—some Hungarians are diligent and they are appreciated)
Page 39

(103)  a. [A [sokat olvas-ó] magyarokat mindenki
       the much.ACC read-APRT Hungarians.ACC megbecsüli.
       ‘Everyone appreciates the Hungarians, who read a lot.’
       (nonrestrictive)
       ‘Everyone appreciates the Hungarians that read a lot.’
       (restrictive)

In postnominal (finite) clauses the distinction is not brought out by structure, types of relative pronoun, accents,
pauses, intonation, or punctuation, since although restrictives can be pronounced without a break between the head
noun and the clause, it is by no means obligatory, thus restrictives and nonrestrictives can have identical formal
properties. There are, however, two tests that can be applied.

For one, the demonstrative on the head noun disambiguates the construction since it defines a restrictive reading. In
case it is used as a linguistic expression of extralinguistic deixis (pointing at the object), the intonation will be
different and the pause obligatory.

(104)  a. (Az/*Ez) a lány, aki a könyvet olvassa, beteg volt.
       that/this the girl who the book.ACC reads.DEF sick was
       ‘The girl who’s reading the book was sick.’
       (restrictive)
   b. Ez/Az a lány, aki a könyvet olvassa, beteg volt.
       this/that the girl
       ‘This/That girl, who’s reading the book, was sick.’
       (nonrestrictive)

While restrictives can be separated from their heads and occur in a clause-final position in the main clause,
nonrestrictives must be attached to their heads.

(105)  a. Az a lány beteg volt, aki a könyvet olvassa.
       ‘The girl was sick who’s reading the book.’
   b. *Ez a lány beteg volt, aki a könyvet olvassa,
      ‘This girl was sick, who is reading the book.’

Another test of limited scope can be devised on the basis of the behaviour of relative pronouns with respect to
numerical expressions in the head noun phrase. In Hungarian, number is marked on the head noun only if there is
no numeral in the noun phrase; but if there is one, the head noun will remain singular. The relative pronoun in the
restrictive clause.
can optionally agree with the singular head noun in number. The relative pronoun in nonrestrictives, in turn, must be in the plural.

(106) a. (Az) a nyolc lány, aki-(k) olvast-a/ák a könyvet,...
that the eight girl who-(PL) read-DEF.SG/PL the
book.ACC

'The eight girls that have read the book
(restrictive)

b. (Ez) a nyolc lány, aki*(-k) olvast-a/ák a könyvet...
this the eight girl who-PL read-SG/PL the book.ACC

'These/The eight girls, who have read the book,
(nonrestrictive)

1.1.2.3.3. The position of the head noun
The head noun can be either before or after the clause; in the first case it is followed by a finite clause, in the second it is preceded by a nonfinite one, as was illustrated in section 1.1.2.3.1 above.

1.1.2.3.4–5. Relative pronouns
Hungarian uses obligatory relative pronouns in place of the relativized element. They are regularly derived from question-words by means of being prefixed by a-, which is historically identical to one form of the demonstrative az: cf. a-ki ‘REL-who’, a-mennyi ‘REL-how.many’, a-hogy ‘REL-how’, etc. A number of relative pronouns have varieties without the relative marker a-, which sometimes sound more archaic, e.g., amely/mely ‘which’, but ami/?mi ‘which, what’, amennyi/*mennyi ‘as many/much’. Relative pronouns cannot be deleted and are always in a clause-initial position, except in one case in present-day Hungarian, which will be discussed in the section on degree clauses below, as well as in 1.8 and 1.9.

The selection of the relative pronoun depends on the human/ nonhuman, countable/uncountable, and specific/nonspecific distinctions in the head noun (or the relativized element), human antecedents requiring aki ‘who’, while nonhuman specific or countable antecedents select amely ‘which’ or, in the colloquial language, ami ‘what, which’, and non-specific or uncountable nouns take ami ‘what, which’ in all registers. Note that pronominally headed clauses, when referring to [—human] antecedents, always take ami (rather than amely) pronouns in the relevant cases, just like headless or free relative clauses, whether or not the head is understood as specific or countable.
Page 41

1.1.2.3.6. Headless relative clauses

Headless (or free) nominal relative clauses occur as subjects and objects in main clauses, while structurally similar adverbial relative clauses can function as adverbs of place and time.

(107) a. Az, amit/*amelyet Anna olvasott, érdekes volt.
    that what/which.ACC Anna read interesting was
    ‘What Anna was reading was interesting.’

b. Az a könyv, amit/amelyet Anna olvasott, érdekes
    that the book what/which.ACC Anna read interesting
    volt.
    was
    ‘The book Anna was reading was interesting.’

c. a pénz, amit/*amelyet kölcsönöztél,…
    the money what/which.ACC lent.2SG
    ‘the money you lent’

d. a farkas, amely/*ami az úton áll,…
    the wolf which/what the road.SUP stands
    ‘the wolf which is standing on the road’

(108) a. Amit Anna el-olvasott, érdekes volt.
    what-ACC Anna PFX-read interesting was
    ‘What Anna read was interesting.’

b. Anna el-olvasta, ami érdekes volt.
    Anna PFX-read what interesting was
    ‘Anna read what was interesting.’

(109) a. A-hol Anna dolgozik, sok könyv van.
    REL-where Anna works many book is
    ‘There are many books where Anna works.’

b. A-mikor Anna dolgozik, sok könyvet olvas.
    REL-when Anna works many book.ACC read.3SG
    ‘When Anna is working she reads many books.’

Headless nominal relative clauses have two varieties, thus they come from two sources. In object function, one of them requires the definite conjugation, the other the indefinite one.

(110) a. Tegy-ed, ami-t mond-t-am.
    do-DEF.2SG what-ACC say-PAST-1SG
    ‘Do what I told you to.’
b. *Tegy-él, ami-t mond-t-am.
   do-INDEF.2SG

(111) a. Tegy-el, ami-t akar-sz.
   do-INDEF.2SG what-ACC want-2SG
   ‘Do what(ever) you want to.’

   do-DEF.2SG

The definite headless clause is interpreted as one introduced by a pronominal that can be dropped in subject and object functions (‘Do the thing I told you to do’), as was seen in the case of complement clauses in 1.1.2.2.2. The indefinite headless relative clause is, in turn, interpreted as if it was introduced by a quantifier (‘Do anything you want to do’) and the relative pronoun was located in the head position. A similar contrast is observed in adverbial free relative clauses. (For more on this, see Kenesei 1994.)

1.1.2.3.7. Elements relativized

Since relative pronouns are formed of question-words, any item that can be questioned can be relativized as a rule. In harmony with the account in 1.1.2.2.1, below the following relativized positions will be illustrated: (a) subject, (b) object, (c) dative complement, (d) oblique noun phrase, (e) postpositional noun phrase, (f) case-marked standard of comparison, and (g) possessor noun phrase (marked for dative case).

(112) a. Itt van a fiú, aki megtalálta a választ.
   here is the boy who found.DEF the answer
   ‘Here is the boy who found the answer.’

b. Itt van a könyv, amely-et a fiú megtalált.
   here is the book which-ACC the boy found
   ‘Here’s the book which the boy found.’

c. Itt van a fiú, aki-nek Anna felolvasta a
   book.ACC
   könyvet.
   ‘Here’s the boy to whom Anna read the book.’
d. Itt van a könyv, amely-ben a fiú megtalálta a
  választ.
  Here's the book which-INDEF the boy found.DEF the
  answer.
  ‘Here’s the book in which the boy has found the answer.’

e. Itt van a könyv, amely alatt a fiú megtalálta a
  választ.
  Here is the book which under the boy found.DEF the
  answer.ACC
  ‘Here’s the book under which the boy found the answer.’

f. Itt van a fiú, aki-nél a lány magas-abb.
  Here is the boy who-ADE the girl tall-er
  ca. ‘Here’s the boy who the girl is taller than.’

g. Itt van a fiú, aki-nek a könyv-é-t Anna
  olvasta.
  read.DEF
  ‘Here’s the boy whose book Anna read.’

Corresponding to each case-marked, postpositional, or adverbial question-word, there are case-marked,
postpositional, or adverbial relative pronouns as well, e.g., a-mi-hez ‘REL-what-ADE=to which’, a-mi-vel ‘REL-what-
INS=with which’; a-mi mögött ‘REL-what behind=behind which’, a-mi-óta ‘REL-what-since=since which/when’; a-
honnan ‘REL-where.from=from where’, a-hogyan ‘REL-how=in which way/manner’, a-miért ‘REL-why=for which
reason’, etc.

(113) a. Itt van a szoba/*könyv, ahol a fiú megtalálta a
  választ.
  answer.
  ‘Here’s the room/book where the boy has found the answer.’

  b. Ez az, a-miért Anna elolvasta a könyvet.
   This it REL-why Anna PFX.read.DEF the book.ACC
   ‘That’s why Anna read the book.’

Note that (a) standards of comparison in the alternative, clausal, construction cannot be relativized, (b) nor can
possessed nouns.

(114) a. *Itt van a fiú, mint aki a lány magasabb.
  here is the boy than who the girl taller
1.1.2.3.8. Movement of phrases containing a relative pronoun

While question-words can carry along (i.e., “pied-pipe”) relatively large phrases, relative pronouns are not capable of similar operations. (The suffix -i, glossed as ATTR, changes postpositional phrases into prenominal attributes.)

(115)  
\[ \text{a. Melyik fiú mögött-i könyv-ét olvasta Anna?} \]
ca. ‘The book behind which boy has Anna read?’

\[ \text{b. *Itt van a fiú, aki mögött-i könyv-ét Anna olvas-ott/ta} \]
read-INDEF/DEF
ca. ‘Here’s the boy the book behind whom Anna has read.’

Another construction-type that cannot be moved along with the relative pronoun, and thus cannot be relativized, is the prenominal relative clause.

(116)   
\[ \text{a. Milyen könyveket olvasó fiúkkal találkoztál?} \]
ca. ‘Boys reading what books did you meet?’

\[ \text{b. *Itt vannak a könyvek, amelyeket olvasó fiúkkal} \]
találkoztál.
ca. ‘Here are the books boys reading which you met.’

But, just as in the case of questions, relative pronominal possessor noun phrases cannot only carry along the whole noun phrase, they can be moved out of the possessive noun phrase with ease.

(117)  
\[ \text{a. Itt van a fiú, [aki-nek a könyv-ét] Anna olvasta.} \]
read.DEF
ca. ‘Here’s the boy whose book Anna has read.’
Page 45

b. Itt van a fiú, [aki-nek] Anna olvasta [a könyv-é-t]
   ‘Here’s the boy whose book Anna has read.’

But, whereas the possessed nominal can be questioned, it cannot be relativized.

(118)  a. Anná-nak mi-jé-t olvasta Péter?
   Anna-DAT what-POSS.3SG-ACC read.DEF Peter
   ca. ‘What that belongs to Anna did Peter read?’
   b. *a könyv, Anná-nak ami-jé-t Péter olvasta,
   the book Anna-DAT which-POSS.3SG-ACC Peter read.DEF

Again similarly to question-words, relative pronouns can be moved out of a finite or infinitival complement clause into a higher one.

(119)  a. Itt van egy könyv, ami-t nem tudom, mikor
   here is a book which-ACC not know.1SG when
   olvassák el.
   read.1SG PFX
   ‘Here’s a book which I don’t know when I should read.’
   b. Itt van egy könyv, ami-t fontos volt elolvas-ni,
   here is a book which-ACC important was read-INF
   ‘Here’s a book which it was important to read.’

1.1.2.3.9. Nonfinite relative clauses
The two types of prenominal participial relative clauses were reviewed in section 1.1.2.3.1. (For more details, see Komlósy 1994.)

1.1.2.3.9.1. Active (present) participles They have their subjects relativized, with all other complements (including accusative marked objects) retained.

   the book-ACC the boy-DAT fast read-APRT girl here
   van.
   is
   ‘The girl who reads the book to the boy fast is here.’
   the boy-INS every day meet-APRT girl here is
   ‘Here is the girl who meets the boy every day.’

Sentences with copulas or subjectless predicates do not have a nonfinite equivalent.
Page 46

(121) a. A fiú diák volt.
   the boy student was
   
   The boy was a student.

b. *[A [diák val-ő/lév-ő] fiú]...
   the student be-APRT boy
   'The boy was a student.'

(122) a. Ø Havazik.
   snows
   
   'It's snowing.'

b. *[A [havazó] hó/ég/...]
   the snowing snow/sky
   'The student be-APRT boy'

But the verb of existence (obligatorily) used locative predicates can be changed into an active participle.

(123) a. A könyv a szobá-ban van.
   the book the room-INE is
   'The book is in the room.'

b. a szobá-ban lév-ő könyv
   the room-INE be-APRT book
   'the book in the room'

1.1.2.3.9.2. Passive (past) participles

In the basic paradigm the passive participle relativizes the object with the subject expressed by means of the agentive postposition által 'by' and all other complements or adjuncts retained.

Note that the form of participial affix coincides with the 3SG (i.e. unmarked) form of the past tense suffix in the indefinite conjugation.

(124) a. Anna tegnap olvas-ott egy könyv-et.
   Anna yesterday read-PAST a book-ACC
   'The book read by Anna yesterday'

b. az [Anna által tegnap olvas-ott] könyv
   the Anna by yesterday read-PPRT book
   'the book read by Anna yesterday'

However, nonagentive intransitive verbs can relativize their subjects if they are prefixed.

(125) a. A könyv ki-nyíl-t az első oldal-on
   the book PFX-open-PAST the first page-SUP
   The book opened on the first page.'

b. az [első oldalon ki-nyíl-t] könyv
   the first page.SUP PFX-open-PPRT book
   'the book that opened (by itself) on the first page' (nonagentive reading)
Achievement verbs can also be used in this construction with the subject relativized, even if they are agentive intransitive ones.

(126)

a. A lány tegnap London-ba érkez-ett.  
   the girl yesterday London-ILL arrive-PAST  
   ‘The girl arrived in London yesterday.’

b. a [tegnap London-ba érkez-ett] lány  
   the yesterday London-ILL arrive-PPRT girl  
   ‘the girl that arrived in London yesterday’

c. A lány a medencé-be ugr-ott.  
   the girl the pool-ILL dive-PAST.3SG  
   ‘The girl dived into the pool.’

d. a [medencé-be ugr-ott] lány  
   the pool-ILL dive-PPRT girl  
   ‘the girl that (has/had) dived into the pool’

In colloquial Hungarian, transitive verbs in general are more and more used in this construction, with the subject relativized and expressing an action prior to that of the main clause.

(127)

a. Az autós el-gázol-t egy gyalogos-t.  
   the motorist PFX-hit a pedestrian-ACC  
   ‘The motorist hit a pedestrian.’

b. Most beszéltünk [a gyalogos-t el-gázol-t]  
   now spoke.1PL the pedestrian.ACC PFX-hit-PPRT  
   autós-sal.  
   motorist-INS  
   ‘We have just spoken with the motorist that hit a pedestrian.’

1.1.2.4. Adverbial clauses
1.1.2.4.1. The marking and positions of adverbial clauses

Finite adverbial clauses have two subtypes: (a) they can be introduced by the general subordinating complementizer hogy ‘that’, often accompanied by the appropriate adverbial form of the pronominal az ‘that, it’ in the main clause, which acts as an anticipatory phrase or a “place-holder” for the topic or focus functions, which the clause cannot directly fulfill, or (b) they are more like (free) relative clauses with an initial relative pro-adverb.
Page 48

(128) a. Az-óta, hogy Anna megérkezett, Péter elolvasta a könyvet.
   ‘Since Anna arrived, Peter has read the book.’

b. A-mi-óta Anna megérkezett, Péter elolvasta a könyvet.
   ‘Since Anna arrived, Peter has read the book.’

The positions adverbial clauses can occupy are in general the same as those listed and illustrated in reviewing noun clauses: they can be (a) initial, (b) noninitial and preverbal, generally non-focussed, and (c) final.

(129) a. Amikor Anna megérkezett, Péter olvasott.
   ‘When Anna arrived, Peter was reading.’

b. Péter, amikor Anna megérkezett, olvasott.
   ‘When Anna arrived, Peter was reading.’

c. Péter olvasott, amikor Anna megérkezett.
   ‘When Anna arrived, Peter was reading.’

1.1.2.4.2. Types of adverbial clauses

1.1.2.4.2.1. Time adverbial clauses

Time adverbial clauses are defined by (a) a pro-adverb in the main clause and/or (b) a (quasi-relative) time adverbial conjunction in the subordinate clause.

(130) a. Az-előtt, hogy/a-mi-előtt Anna megérkezett, olvasott.
   ‘Before Anna arrived, she had been reading.’

b. (*A-)mi-előtt Anna megérkezett, olvasott.
   ‘Before Anna arrived, she had been reading.’

The clauses can express (a) past, (b) present (general), and (c) future time reference depending on the form of the verb. Note that (c) is understood
as a plain future prediction, rather than a conditional, and present tense cannot be used in the time clause.

(131)  
   a. (Am)ikor Anna olvasott, Péter aludt.  
       when Anna read.PAST Peter slept  
       ‘When/while Anna was reading, Peter was sleeping.’
   b. (Am)ikor Anna olvas, Péter alszik.  
       when Anna read-PRES Peter sleeps  
       ‘When(ever) Anna is reading, Peter is sleeping.’
   c. (Am)ikor Anna olvas-ni fog, Péter alud-ni fog.  
       when Anna read-INF will Peter sleep-INF will  
       ‘When/While Anna will be reading, Peter will be sleeping.’

The illustrations above made use of nonprefixed verbs in both the subordinate and the main clauses. If, however, prefixed verbs are chosen, the paradigm has to change, especially since prefixed verbs have future reference in present tense.

(132)  
   a. Amikor Anna meg-érkezett, Péter aludt.  
       when Anna PFX-arrived Peter slept  
       ‘When Anna arrived, Peter was asleep.’
   b. Amikor Anna meg-érkezik, Péter alszik.  
       when Anna PFX-arrives Peter sleeps  
       ‘When(ever) Anna arrives, Peter is asleep.’
   c. Amikor Anna meg-érkezik, Péter aludni fog.  
       when Anna PFX-arrives Peter sleep.INF will  
       ‘When Anna arrives, Peter will be asleep.’

If the time clause introduced by (a)mikor ‘when’ has a prefixed predicate, and a prefixed verb is used in the main clause, the two events are understood as ordered consecutively. By optionally suffixing the time conjunction, the order of events can be made more transparent.

(133)  
   a. Amikor (-ra) Péter el-aludt, Anna meg-érkezett.  
       when -SUB Peter PFX-slept Anna PFX-arrived  
       ‘When/By the time Peter had fallen asleep, Anna arrived.’
   b. Amikor (-ra) Péter el-alszik, Anna meg-érkezik.  
       when -SUB Peter PFX-sleeps Anna PFX-arrives  
       ‘When/By the time Peter falls asleep, Anna will arrive.’

Except for a few general adverbials like mikor ‘when’, mi-óta ‘since (when)’, disparate sets of time conjunctions are used for simultaneous versus consecutive events. Those marking simultaneity include: mi-alatt, mi-közben ‘during (when)’, (a)míg ‘while’, ahogy, amint ‘as’. Clauses whose
Page 50

action precedes or follows that of the main clause are introduced by conjunctions like mi-után ‘after (when)’, mi-előtt ‘before (when)’, hogy ‘that, as’, mihelyt, alighogy ‘as soon as’. The pro-adverb in the main clause, which points at the clause, can in a large majority of cases be inserted, and it is, in fact, obligatory if the clause is to be interpreted as focussed.

(134) a. (Akkor-ra,) amikor-ra Péter elalszik, Anna megérkezik.
  then-SUB when-SUB Peter PFX.sleeps Anna PFX.arrives
  ‘By the time Peter falls asleep, Anna will arrive.’
  b. Anna csak *(akkor-ra) érkezik meg, amikorra Péter
  only then-SUB arrives PFX when.SUB Peter
  elalszik.
  PFX.sleeps
  ‘Anna will arrive only when Peter has fallen asleep.’

Since the conditional conjunction ha ‘if’ originates from a time adverb, it is small wonder that its meaning often oscillates between a temporal and a conditional reading, just as much as clauses introduced by unequivocal time conjunctions can have a conditional interpretation.

(135) Ha Péter elalszik, Anna megérkezik.
  if Peter PFX.sleeps Anna PFX.arrives
  ‘When/If Peter falls asleep, Anna arrives/will arrive.’

1.1.2.4.2.2. Manner adverbial clauses
The most general and frequent pro-adverb associated with manner adverbial clauses in the main clause is úgy ‘thus’; others include ak-képpen ‘in that manner’, a-nélkül ‘without that’. The clause can be introduced by the general subordinating complementizer hogy ‘that’, or relative pro-adverbs like a-hogy ‘REL-how=in which way’, a-mi-képpen ‘REL-what-TER=in which manner’, (a)-mi-nt ‘REL-what-FOR=as’.

(136) a. Péter úgy aludt el, hogy olvasott.
  Peter thus slept PFX that read.3SG
  ‘Peter fell asleep in such a manner that he was reading.’
  b. Péter úgy aludt, ahogy gyerekkorában szokott.
  Peter thus slept as in.his.childhood used.3SG
  ‘Peter fell asleep the way he used to in his childhood.’

1.1.2.4.2.3. Clauses of purpose
The anticipatory pro-adverb in the main clause can be az-ért ‘that-CAU’, a-végett ‘that-in.order’, although they can be easily dispensed with since the clause is in the subjunctive, thus providing an unequivocal clue for its interpretation. Clauses are introduced by a nonomissible complementizer hogy ‘that’.

< previous page  page_50  next page >
(137) a. Anna olvasott, hogy el-alud-j-on.
Anna read that PFX-sleep-SUBJ-3SG
‘Anna was reading so that she could fall asleep.’
b. Péter az-ért olvasott, hogy ne alud-j-on el.
Peter that-for read that not sleep-SUBJ-3SG PFX
‘Peter was reading so that he would not fall asleep.’
c. Péter azért olvasott, ne-hogy el-alud-j-on.
not-that PFX-sleep-SUBJ-3SG
‘Peter was reading lest he fall asleep.’

Purpose clauses are the only contexts that allow the negative particle to be attached to the complementizer hogy, as in the (c) example above.

### 1.1.2.4.2.4. Clauses of cause

They are associated with pro-adverbs like a-miatt ‘that-because’ and az-ért ‘that-for’ and are introduced (a) by the complementizer hogy ‘that’ and, more often, (b) by a conjunction that goes back to a relative pro-adverb that no longer fills the role: mert ‘lit. for-what=because’; (c) independent clauses of cause, i.e., ones that are not associated with any “pointer” in the main clause, are introduced by mivel, minthogy, miután ‘since’. (Note that each has a distinct literal meaning, e.g., mi-vel ‘what-with’, which, however, no longer figures in their interpretation.)

(138) a. Anna a-miatt haragszik, hogy Péter elaludt.
Anna that-because is.angry that Peter PFX-slept
‘Anna is angry because Peter has fallen asleep.’
b. Anna az-ért haragszik, mert Péter elaludt.
Anna that-for is.angry because Peter PFX-slept
‘Anna is angry because Peter has fallen asleep.’
c. Mivel Péter elaludt, Anna olvas.
since Péter PFX.slept Anna reads
‘Since Peter has fallen asleep, Anna is reading.’

### 1.1.2.4.2.5. Conditional clauses

The obligatory conjunction is ha ‘if’, although its complex variety hogy-ha ‘that-if=if’ or the official-sounding amennyiben ‘in as much as’ can also be used. The main clause frequently contains the “place-holder” pro-adverb akkor ‘then’, especially if the conditional fills in the role of topic or focus, as in other cases reviewed above. Note that the clause itself can occur in focus position unless it is too long.

(139) a. Ha Péter el-alszik, (akkor) Anna meg-haragszik.
if Peter PFX-sleeps then Anna PFX-is.angry
‘If Peter falls asleep, Anna will get angry.’
b. Anna csak *(akkor) haragszik meg, ha Péter el-alszik.
   ‘Only if Peter falls asleep, will Anna get angry.’

c. Anna csak [ha Péter el-alszik] haragszik meg.
   ‘Only if Peter falls asleep will Anna get angry.’

The basic subtypes of conditional constructions are as follows:

(i) In real conditional clauses the verb can be in any of the past, present, or future tenses (or present tense with future reference if prefixed).

\[(140)\]
\[a. \text{Ha Péter elaludt, Anna haragudni fog.}\]
\[\text{if Peter fell/has fallen asleep, Anna will be angry.}\]
\[b. \text{Ha Péter alszik, Anna haragudni fog.}\]
\[\text{if Peter is asleep, Anna will be angry.}\]
\[c. \text{Ha Péter aludni fog, Anna meg-haragszik.}\]
\[\text{if Peter will be asleep, Anna will get angry.}\]

(ii) In hypothetical clauses, the present conditional form of the verb is used with reference to present or future.

\[(141)\]
\[a. \text{Ha Péter alud-na, Anna haragud-na.}\]
\[\text{if Peter were sleeping, Anna would be angry.}\]
\[b. \text{Ha Péter el-alud-na, Anna haragud-na.}\]
\[\text{if Peter fell asleep, Anna would be angry.}\]

(iii) In counterfactual conditionals, the verb is in past conditional, a complex form made up of the formal past tense of the verb and the invariable conditional form volna of the copula van ‘be’. Note that the verb is marked for agreement with the subject.

\[(142)\]
\[a. \text{Ha Péter alud-t volna, Anna haragud-ott volna.}\]
\[\text{if Peter had been asleep, Anna would have been angry.}\]
\[b. \text{Ha Péter el-alud-t volna, Anna most haragud-na.}\]
\[\text{if Peter had fallen asleep, Anna would be angry now.}\]

1.1.2.4.2.6. Result clauses
The result of the action or event expressed by the matrix predicate can take the form of a hogy (‘that’) clause with an
appropriate pro-element in the main clause, such as olyan ‘so, such’, annyi(t) ‘so much/many/little/few (=such a quantity)’, often marked similarly to degree adverbials by a suffix formally identical with the accusative -t.

(143) a. Péter annyi-t/olyan sok-at aludt, hogy Anna
    megharagudott.
    got-angry
    ‘Peter slept so much that Anna got angry.’

b. Péter annyi/olyan kevés könyvet olvasott, hogy Anna
    megharagudott.
    got.angry
    ‘Peter had read so many/few books that Anna got angry.’

Note here that result clauses and clauses of purpose are differentiated only by the mood of the verb in the subordinate clause; while it is in the indicative in the above result clauses, it is in the subjunctive in clauses of purpose.

1.1.2.4.2.7. Degree clauses Both equative and comparative clauses can have anticipatory pro-elements in their main clauses, such as olyan ‘such’, annyi(t) ‘so much/little-ACC’, while in the clauses themselves the complementizer mint ‘as, than’ and the adjectival or adverbial relative pronominals a-milyen ‘REL-what [Adj]’ a-mennyi(t) ‘REL-as.much-(ACC)’, ahogyan ‘REL-how’ can cooccur. In equative clauses, either (but never both) can be omitted, if the verbs are identical (see 1.9.3.) whereas in comparative clauses it is always the complementizer that has to stay. When the complementizer is absent, the clause becomes indistinguishable from, for example, an adverbial clause of manner, for which see above. Note that if the predicate of the clause is missing, minimally the conjunction mint and the object of comparison are always sufficient.

(144) a. Péter annyit aludt, (mint) amennyit Anna (olvasott).
    Peter so.much slept as as.much Anna read
    ‘Peter slept (just) as much as Anna (read).’

b. Péter úgy alszik, (mint) ahogyan gyerekkorában (aludt).
    Peter thus sleeps as how in.his.childhood slept.3SG
    ‘Peter sleeps just like (he slept) in his childhood.’

(145) a. Péter többet alszik, mint Anna/mint amennyit Anna (alszik).
    Peter more sleeps than than as.much Anna sleeps
    ‘Peter sleeps more than Anna.’
b. Péter gyors-abb-an olvas, mint Anna/mint ahogyan Anna
   Peter quick-er-ly reads than than how Anna
   reads
   ‘Peter reads faster than Anna.’

Such examples demonstrate that the relative pronoun (or pro-adverb) is not absolutely initial in its clause, an
observation supported by data involving other conjunctions and relative pronouns from an earlier stage of the

1.1.2.4.2.8. Concessive clauses Complex sentences having concessive clauses in them come in two subtypes:
some qualify as subordination, others as coordination. The difference is shown by the potential of alternative orders
in the former, but not in the latter.

(146)  a. Anna olvas, noha/jóllehet/bár Péter alszik
   Anna reads although/albeit Peter sleeps
   ‘Anna is reading, although/albeit Peter is sleeping.’
   ‘Although Peter is sleeping, Anna is reading.’

(147)  a. Anna olvas, holott/pedig Péter alszik
   ca. ‘Anna is reading, although Peter is sleeping.’
   b. *Holott/Pedig Péter alszik, Anna olvas.’

1.1.2.4.2.9. Place adverb clauses Clauses that are classified as adverbials of place are usually free or
pronominally headed relative clauses, whose relative pro-adverbial reveals the nature of the relationship.

(148)  a. Péter ott alszik, ahol Anna olvas
   Peter there sleeps where Anna reads
   ‘Peter is sleeping where Anna is reading.’
   b. Ahol Anna olvas, Péter alszik.
   where Anna reads Peter sleeps
   ‘Where Anna reads, Peter sleeps.’

(149)  a. Anna add-ig futott, amedd-ig a csík tartott.
   Anna that-to ran where-to the stripe lasted
   ‘Anna ran as far as the end of the stripe.’
   b. Anna futott, ameddig a csík tartott.
   ‘Anna ran as far as the end of the stripe.’
1.1.2.4.3. Nonfinite adverbial clauses

Traditional grammars of Hungarian differentiate between (a) infinitives, (b) attributive participles (see 1.1.2.3.1), and (c) adverbial participials or converbs. Of these, only the first and the third types partake in forming nonfinite adverbial clauses, as will be illustrated below. In what follows, we will adhere to the numbering of subsections in the preceding section; therefore, if a subsection number is missing, there is no corresponding nonfinite adverbial clause there. For more on this topic, see de Groot (1995).

1.1.2.4.3.1. Nonfinite clauses of time Of the two types of the so-called adverbial participial clause, or clauses containing converbs, the one that we will call simple and whose affix we will abbreviate as SCVB can be used to express simultaneous actions: (a) it suppresses the subject, but (b) all other complements and adjuncts can be freely retained; (c) if the verb is prefixed (and perfective), the simple converb can refer to an antecedent action.

(150) a. Anna áll-va olvasta a könyvet.
    Anna stand-SCVB read the book.ACC
    ‘Anna was reading the book standing.’

b. Anna olvasott a könyvet a kezében tartva.
    Anna read the book.ACC the in.her.hand hold-SCVB
    ‘Anna was reading, holding the book in her hands.’

c. Anna [a könyvet le-té-ve] elaludt.
    Anna the book.ACC down-put-SCVB fell.asleep
    ‘Having put the book down, Anna fell asleep.’

Another, rather infrequently used, adverbial participial clause (with a somewhat literary or even archaic flavour) expresses antecedent actions. Its peculiarity is that it can contain a nominative subject noun phrase as well as any other complement appropriately case-marked. Only prefixed (perfective) verbs can occur here, which is why it is called here perfective converb and abbreviated as PCVB. Note that, owing to its increasing obsolescence, it often surfaces with nonperfective verbs in functions by and large identical with those of the simple converb.

(151) a. El-olvas-ván a könyvet, Péter elaludt.
    PFX-read-PCVB the book.ACC Peter fell.asleep
    ‘Having read the book, Peter fell asleep.’

b. Az eső el-áll-ván, elindultunk a hegytetőre.
    the rain PFX-stop-PCVB left.1PL the hilltop.SUB
    ‘With the rain stopped, we left for the hilltop.’
1.1.2.4.3.2. Nonfinite clauses of manner
Simple participial clauses can often be taken to be manner adverbials, since they can be easily reinterpreted as specifying the manner in which the action was carried out, a point that shows the fallibility of such distinctions.

(152) a. Péter [a könyvet szorosan a kezében tart-va] olvasott.
Peter the book.ACC fast the in.his.hand hold-SCVB read-PAST
‘Peter was reading holding the book fast in his hands.’
b. Péter [a lapokat ki-tép-ve] olvassa a könyvet.
Peter the pages PFX-tear-SCVB reads the book.ACC
‘Peter is reading the book tearing out its pages.’

1.1.2.4.3.3. Nonfinite clauses of purpose
Infinitives are an option some main verbs can choose for an adverbial clause of purpose, provided the subject of the infinitival clause is identical with the subject or some complement of the main clause, since infinitival clauses have to suppress their subjects.

(153) a. Péter el-ment olvas-ni a könyvet.
Peter away-went read-INF the book.ACC
‘Peter has gone to read the book.’
b. Anna elküldte Péter-t [a könyvet olvas-ni]
Anna sent Peter-ACC the book-ACC read-INF
‘Anna sent Peter to read the book.’

1.1.2.5. Sequence of tenses
Two tenses are morphologically marked: (a) past and (b) present. Future is expressed by means of either (c) an analytic form made up of the auxiliary fog ‘will’ and the infinitive of a nonperfective (generally unprefixed) verb or (d) the present tense form of a perfective (or prefixed) verb. Note that the analytic future of perfective verbs has spread quite extensively in present-day Hungarian; since fog is prefix-raising, it is placed between the prefix and the verb in the neutral case (see (e) below).

(154) a. Péter olvas.
Peter read.3SG
‘Peter is reading.’
b. Péter olvas-ott.
Peter read-PAST.3SG
‘Peter was reading.’
c. Péter olvas-ni fog egy könyvet.
   Peter read-INF will a book.ACC
   ‘Peter will be reading a book.’

d. Péter el-olvas egy könyvet.
   Peter PFX-read.3SG a book.ACC
   ‘Peter will read (=finish reading) a book.’

e. Péter el fog olvas-ni egy könyv-et.
   ‘Peter will read (=finish reading) a book.’

In complement clauses, the time of the event reported in the clause is taken to be relative to the time of the action in the main clause and is expressed by the same tenses, which observe the following regularities,

(i) In the case of nonperfective verbs, (a) present tense forms stand for simultaneous actions, (b) past tense forms for antecedent actions.

(155)  
   a. Anna tudta, hogy Péter olvas.
      Anna knew that Peter reads
      ‘Anna knew that Peter was reading.’
   b. Anna tudta, hogy Péter olvas-ott.
      Anna knew that Peter read-PAST.3SG
      ‘Anna knew that Peter had (been) read(ing).’

(ii) In the case of perfective verbs, (a) present tense forms signal “future-in-the-past”, while (b) past tense forms denote actions accomplished prior to the time of the action in the main clause.

(156)  
   a. Anna tudta, hogy Péter el-olvas egy könyvet.
      Anna knew that Peter PFX-reads a book.ACC
      ‘Anna knew that Peter would read a book.’
   b. Anna tudta, hogy Péter el-olvas-ott egy könyvet.
      Anna knew that Peter PFX-read-PAST.3SG a book.ACC
      ‘Anna knew that Peter had read a book.’

Finally, the analytic future form is used to construct the ‘future-in-the-past’ for unprefixed verbs, but, as was noted, it is possible to form an analytic future of prefixed verbs, in both subordinate and main clauses.

(157)  
   a. Anna tudta, hogy Péter olvas-ni fog.
      Anna knew that Peter read-INF will.3SG
      ‘Anna knew that Peter will/would be reading.’
b. Anna tudta, hogy Péter el-olvas/el fog olvas-ni egy könyvet.
   ‘Anna knew that Peter will/would read a book.’
While tense in complement clauses is always understood as relative to the main clause, tenses in adjunct clauses (including relatives) are understood as independent of those in the main clause.
(158)
   a. Bár Anna el-alud-t, Péter olvas-ni fog.
      ‘Although Anna has fallen asleep, Peter will be reading.’
   b. Anna ír-ta a könyvet, amelyet Péter olvas-ni fog.
      Anna wrote the book.ACC which.ACC Peter read-INF will
      ‘Anna wrote the book that Peter will be reading.’
For indirect commands, see section 1.1.2.2.5.
1.2. STRUCTURAL QUESTIONS
1.2.1. Internal structure of the sentence
1.2.1.1. Copular sentences
Copular sentences have two varieties: nominal and adjectival ones are constructed without the copula in the “unmarked” case, i.e., when the verb is in present indicative third person singular and plural, as discussed in the next two subsections contracted into one. In adverbial copular sentences, however, the copula has to occur in all persons. For more on this, see 1.2.1.1.4–5.
Below neutral word order is illustrated throughout unless otherwise noted. For focussed sentences and constituent orders, see 1.11.
1.2.1.1.1–2. Copular sentences with nominal and adjectival complement
In these constructions the predicate noun or adjective agrees in number with the subject, as shown by the plural suffix below.
(159)
   a. A lány magas/diák volt.
      the girl tall/student was
      ‘The girl was tall/a student.’
   b. A lány-ak magas-ak/diák-ak volt-ak.
      the girl-PL tall-PL/student-PL were-PL
      ‘The girls were tall/students.’
Page 59
The only exception is when a collective noun is used predicatively. But even then it is easier to have a singular predicative noun with other than third person subjects, cf. (a). If there is a third person subject, the construction feels awkward, see (b); and synonymous expressions can take over, cf. (c). The alternative, i.e., plural predicative noun, is not workable, since the resulting meaning would be different, cf. (d). Note, finally, that in the present tense the issue of subject-predicate agreement does not arise, because the copula is nonovert, cf. (e).

(160) 
(a) Mi jó csapat volt-unk.
   we good team were-1PL
   ‘We were a good team.’
(b) ??A lányok jó csapat voltak.
   the girls good team were
   ‘The girls were a good team.’
(c) A lányok jó csapat-ot alkottak.
   the girls good team-ACC formed
   ‘The girls formed a good team.’
(d) A lányok jó csapatok voltak.
   ‘The girls were good teams.’
(e) A lányok jó csapat.
   ‘The girls are a good team.’

The difficulty experienced with the (b) case may go back to properties of agreement in Hungarian. In the case of a non-third person subject its agreement requirements overrule those of the (apparently third person) predicate nominal. If, then, both the subject and the predicate nominal are third person, but they differ in number, a genuine conflict of agreement arises.

In addition to plural agreement on the adjective—which, incidentally, does not agree with head nouns inside noun phrases—another interesting property of this construction is the absence of the indefinite article from in front of the singular noun (phrase). Although in current colloquial Hungarian the use of the indefinite article has been spreading, there is still a marked difference in at least a number of constructions. When an adjective+noun construction occurs, the use of the indefinite article is becoming the rule, see (a). If, however, there is a single noun in the predicate, the absence/presence of the indefinite article can make the difference between (b) a literal and (c) a metaphorical interpretation.

(161) 
(a) A mi osztályunk (egy) jó csapat volt
   the our class a good team was
   ‘Our class was a good team.’
Page 60

b. Anna őrmester volt.
   Anna sergeant was
   ‘Anna was a sergeant.’

c. Anna egy őrmester volt.
   ‘Anna was (like) a (real) sergeant.’

Neither the noun nor the adjective has any marking other than the plural suffix in finite clauses. If, in turn, they are part of an infinitival clause, they assume what appears to be a dative case suffix.

(162) a. [Jó csapat-nak lenni] nehéz volt,
   good team-DAT be-INF difficult was
   ‘It was difficult to be a good team.’

   tall-DAT be-INF not always was good
   ‘It wasn’t always good to be tall.’

The dative marking on the predicative adjective is probably related to the same case on subject complement adjectives in predicates like látszik ‘seem’ or tűnik ‘appear’, but note that predicative adjectives in infinitival complement clauses of verbal predicates do not change into the dative.

(163) a. Anna magas-nak látszott.
   Anna tall-DAT seemed
   ‘Anna seemed tall.’

b. Anna magas(*-nak) akart lenni.
   Anna tall-DAT wanted be.INF
   ‘Anna wanted to be tall.’

So far, only the absence or presence of the indefinite article has been illustrated. Naturally, if there is a definite article on the predicate nominal (or the adjective), it changes the sentence into a statement of identity.

(164) a. Anna a diák volt.
    Anna the student was
    ‘Anna was the student.’

b. Anna a magas volt.
    Anna the tall was
    ‘Anna was the tall one.’

Two comments are in order here. First, adjectives can be used as elliptical noun phrases in Hungarian, and they can also be case-marked as such. Secondly, with two definite noun phrases in a statement of identity, questions of order become relevant in as much as it is possible to exchange the
two noun phrases without difficulty, though not without a change of topic-focus structure, as will be seen in 1.11, the section on emphasis.

The unmarked order of the constituents is as has been illustrated throughout: Subject-Noun/Adjective-Copula (if overt).

1.2.1.1.3. Copular sentences with adverbial complement
These constructions differ from nominal and adjectival ones in that the copula is in general present in all persons and numbers. Here only sentences with definite subject noun phrases are illustrated. Those with indefinite subjects will be treated directly in section 1.2.1.1.6.2.

(165)

a. Anna a szobá-ban van.
   Anna the room-INE is
   ‘Anna is in the room.’

b. A lányok jól vannak.
   the girls well are
   ‘The girls are well.’

c. Az óra tegnap volt.
   the class yesterday was
   ‘The class was yesterday.’

For reasons relating to the obligatory presence of the copula, existential sentences with numerals in the predicate are also included in this subsection, rather than the previous one. This construction is applicable only to human (or at best animate) subjects, and then the predicative numeral is marked by a curious -an/en suffix, cf. 1.16.6. When inanimate or nonhuman subjects are involved, a quasi-partitive construction takes over.

(166)

   the girls four-AFX be-3PL
   ‘The girls are four.’

   the books

c. Könyv-ből négy van.
   book-ELA four is
   ‘Of books, there are four.’

The order illustrated, i.e. Subject-Adverbial-Copula, corresponds to neutral sentences. In a presentative construction, however, in which an existential/locative predication is made, the place adverbial is placed initially with the subject following it and the third person singular form of the copula can be omitted.
Apart from adverbial suffixation the predicate adverbial is not marked in any way.

1.2.1.4–5. Copular sentences without overt copula

Apart from the adverbial predicates without overt copula just discussed, the only structures without the copula are nominal and adjectival predicates in present indicative third person forms, whether singular or plural.

(168)

a. A lány magas/diák.
   the girl tall/student
   ‘The girl is tall/a student.’

b. A lány-ok magas-ak/diák-ok.
   the girl-PL tall-PL/student-PL
   ‘The girls are tall/students.’

The rest of the paradigm is as follows. Note that subject pronouns can be omitted if unstressed throughout.

(169)

a. Én magas vagyok.
   I tall am
   ‘I am tall.’

b. Te magas vagy.
   you.SG tall are
   ‘You are tall.’

c. Mi diák-ok vagyunk.
   we student-PL are
   ‘We are students.’

d. Ti diák-ak vagyotok.
   you.PL student-PL are
   ‘You are students.’

In nonindicative moods or past tense, the copula is required. (Past tense was shown above.)

(170)

a. Anna diák legyen.
   Anna student be.SUBJ
   ‘Anna ought to be a student.’

b. Anna diák lenne.
   Anna student be.COND
   ‘Anna would be a student.’
1.2.1.1.6. Types of copula

1.2.1.1.6.1. The suppletive forms of the copula

There are two verbs in the role of the copula, the “stative” van ‘is’ forms the present and past forms, as illustrated all through above. However, it does not have an infinitive; it is the verb lesz ‘will-be, become’ that serves as the base of the infinitive, the future, or, for that matter, of the nonindicative forms shown above. (The analytic future *fog lenni ‘will will-be’ is ungrammatical.)

(171) a. Anna diák lesz.
   Anna student will-be
   ‘Anna will be/become a student.’

   b. A lányok magasak lesznak.
      the girls tall.PL will-be
      ‘The girls will be tall.’

   c. Anna nem akar diák lenni.
      Anna not wants student be-INF
      ‘Anna doesn’t want to be/become a student.’

Lesz is ambiguous between a stative and a dynamic (‘become’) meaning in its finite (future) as well as nonfinite (infinitival) uses, since it has no alternative there. In the past tense, however, there is a difference between volt and lett, the former signifying state and the latter a change of state, cf.:

(172) a. Anna diák volt.
   ‘Anna was a student.’

   b. Anna diák lett.
   ‘Anna became a student.’

In the third person present forms (both singular and plural) the negated copula has another set of suppletive forms: nincs(en) ‘is not’ and nincsenek ‘are not’. For all other persons and tenses the analytic negative nem ‘not’+copula is used, including those in which the copula is omitted.

(173) a. Anna nincs a szobá-ban.
   Anna not.be.3SG the room-INE
   ‘Anna isn’t in the room.’

   b. A lány-ök nincsen-ek jól.
      the girl-PL not.be.3-PL well
      ‘The girls aren’t well.’

(174) a. Anna nem volt a szobá-ban
   Anna not was the room-INE
   ‘Anna wasn’t in the room.’
b. A lány-ök nem magas-ak.
   the girl-PL not tall-PL
   ‘The girls aren’t tall.’

1.2.1.6.2. Existential sentences

The copula (in third person singular or plural) has to occur in the common
form of sentences expressing the existence of some object at some location. The subject, which by definition is
indefinite, occurs invariably in postverbal position, provided the sentence has no focus or emphasis in it. Thus the
order of constituents is: Copula-Subject-Complement or Complement-Copula-Subject, with possible time adverbials
placed initially or finally. Each lexical head, including the copula, is stressed with equal intensity.

(175) a. Van egy könyv az asztal-on.
   is a book the table-SUP
   ‘There is a book on the table.’

b. Holnap az irodá-ban lesz egy kis munka.
   tomorrow the office-INE will-be a little work
   ‘There will be some work (to do) in the office tomorrow.’

c. Volt néhány lány a csapat-ban tavaly.
   were some girl the team-INE last-year
   ‘There were some girls in the team last year.’

A more marked variety of existential sentences is the one that may contain no adverb of place complement, but
even if it does it expresses “pure” existence by omitting all articles from in front of the subject nominal, thus making
it nonspecific. Ordering requirements are the same as above.

(176) a. Van könyv az asztal-on.
   is book the table-SUP
   ‘There is/are (a) book(s) on the table.’

b. Lesz munka az irodá-ban.
   will-be work the office-INE
   ‘There will be work (to do) in the office.’

c. Vannak egyszarvúak.
   are unicorns
   ‘Unicorns exist.’

The constituent order seen in these sentences is parallel to that in verbal presentational clauses, in which the verb
precedes the subject and the complements, and is stressed more prominently than the rest of the sentence, as
marked by bold type. For more, see below. Note that this verb-first structure is ungrammatical if the subject is
definite, cf. 1.2.1.1.3.
1.2.1.1.6.3. Possessional sentences with copula

Hungarian is one of the languages that construct sentences expressing possession by means of a case-marked possessor, the copula, and a possessed nominal in the nominative. Since they will be discussed in more detail in section 1.10, the review given here concentrates on their properties related to the copula. For an extensive analysis, see Szabolcsi (1986/1992, 1994). These structures are analogous to existential sentences in that their “subjects” must be indefinite, and the distinctions arising from the presence or absence of the articles carry over here. Note here that the possessor is in the dative and the possessed noun is marked for agreement with the possessor, glossed simply as “POSS” below.

The neutral order is: Possessor-Copula-Possessed-Other.

Anna-DAT is a book-POSS London-DEL
‘Anna has a book about London.’

b. Péter-nek van egy kis munká-ja a hivatal-ban.
Peter-DAT is a little work-POSS the office-INE
‘Peter has some work in the office.’

When there is no article on the possessed nominal, “pure” existential interpretation takes over with the most prominent stress, indicated by capitals, falling on the copula.

Anna-DAT is a book-POSS London-DEL
‘Anna DOES have (a) book(s) about London.’

b. Péter-nek van munká-ja (a hivatal-ban).
Peter-DAT is a work-POSS the office-INE
‘There IS work for Peter (in the office).’

1.2.1.1.6.4. Another possible copula

Only one main verb can be classified as a quasi-copula: marad ‘remain’, since it takes nominal and adjectival complements unsuffixed for dative or any other case but agreeing in number with the subject. All other possible candidates, like látszik ‘seem’, tűnik ‘appear’, vállik ‘become’ mark their complement nominals or adjectives for dative or some other case, and at least in some dialects their adjectival complements, in others even their nominal ones, may lack agreement in number with the subject.

(179)a. Anna magas/diák maradt.
Anna tall/student remained.3SG
‘Anna remained tall/a student.’

b. A lány-ok magas-ak/diák-ok maradt-ak.
the girls tall-PL/student-PL remained-3PL
‘The girls remained tall/students.’
Page 66

(180) a. Anna magas-nak/diák-nak látszott.
   Anna tall-DAT/student-DAT seemed.3SG
   ‘Anna seemed (to be) tall/a student.’

b. A lányok magas-(ak)-nak/diák-(ok)-nak látszott-ak.
   the girls tall-PL-DAT/student-PL-DAT seemed-3PL
   ‘The girls seemed (to be) tall/students.’

1.2.1.2. Verbal sentences
1.2.1.2.1. Verbal sentences without subjects
Sentences with weather-verb predicates have no subjects at all. Although Hungarian is a pro-drop language, and suppressed subjects are frequent, they are always recoverable and can be made overt, as will be seen at the end of this subsection. In sentences with weather-verbs such reconstruction is not possible. Adjuncts can freely be added throughout these constructions.

(181) a. (En) olvas-ok.
   I read-1SG
   ‘I’m reading.’

b. (Az) érdekes volt.
   it interesting was
   ‘It was interesting.’

(182) a. (*Az) havaz-ott.
   it snow-PAST.3SG
   ‘It was snowing.’

b. (*Az) fagy-ni fog.
   it freeze-INF will
   ‘It will be freezing.’

A number of weather-verbs are derived from nouns expressing meteorological phenomena or times of the day, as seen below, where “VRB” is a gloss for a denominal or dejectival derivational affix.

(183) a. Villám-l-ott.
   lightning-VRB-PAST.3SG
   ‘Lightning’s struck.’

b. Este-led-ett.
   evening-VRB-PAST.3SG
   ‘Evening was falling.’
PFX-dark-VRB-PAST.3SG
'It has become dark.'

As Komlósy (1994) notes, there is an equivalent construction-type for some of these weather-verb sentences, making use of a (possibly modified) adjective or noun. He argues that these too can be considered subjectless clauses.

(184) a. A szobá-ban (nagyon) meleg/hideg/sötét volt.
the room-INE very hot/cold/dark was
'It was (very) hot/cold/dark in the room.'
b. Itt (nagy) hőség van.
here big heat is
'It’s very hot here.'

Sentences with optional dummy or expletive subjects are a result of pro-drop that allows pronominals to be omitted in nonprominent positions. The (overt) expletive invariably has the form az ‘it, that’ in the nominative.

(185) (Az) érdekes, hogy Anna olvasta a könyvet.
it interesting that Anna read.DEF the book.ACC
'It is interesting that Anna has read the book.'

Possessional sentences provide some problem in identifying their subject: since the “notional subject”, the possessor, is in the dative, while the object of possession is in the nominative, in traditional grammars the latter was regarded as the subject. Under Szabolcsi’s (1986/1992, 1994) analysis, however, the possessor is moved out of the possessive noun phrase, which as a whole constitutes the subject of an existential sentence. For more details, see 1.10. The coindexed trace of the moved possessor is marked by “t”.

(186) a. Van [Anna-nak egy könyv-e]

is Anna-DAT a book-POSS
'There is a book of Anna’s.'
b. Anná-naki van [ti egy könyv-e]

lit. ‘To Anna is a book of hers.’=‘Anna has a book.’

Impersonal constructions are also possible in this language, where passive is mostly nonexistent. As in a number of other languages, e.g., Italian, pro-dropped third person plural subjects can be used to stand for unspecified agents. Note that these unexpressed agents are invariably construed as human, even if the predicate would generally require a nonhuman subject.

< previous page page_67 next page >
Finally, although apparently subjectless, sentences with pro-dropped subjects do not belong under this heading. Subject pronouns in all persons and numbers can be suppressed in any tense or mood; in fact, their presence is required only if they would occur in one of the more “prominent” positions, such as topic or focus.

(188)

1.2.1.2.2. Transitive and intransitive verbs

Intransitive verbs take no objects, while transitive verbs must have an object complement.

(189)

1. a. Péter kopog (*egy ajtó-t).
Peter knocks a door-ACC
‘Peter is knocking (the door).’

b. Péter fog *(egy ajtó-t).
Peter holds a door-ACC
‘Peter is holding a door.’
A large class of transitive verbs can be used intransitively as activity verbs with their “natural objects” understood, e.g., ír ‘write’, olvas ‘read’, eszik ‘eat’, etc. Another set of transitive verbs denote properties when intransitive, e.g., ráz ‘shake something’ vs. ‘give (electric) shocks’, rúg ‘kick something/somebody’ vs. ‘have the habit of kicking people’. Yet another group is like underived nonagentive intransitive verbs, although Hungarian has a variety of derivational affixes for this purpose, cf. (jól) húz ‘(well) pull’ vs. ‘has the ability of pulling (carts, etc.) well’. Finally, a limited set of agentive verbs can be used intransitively to denote repeated or characteristic actions, e.g., nyit ‘open’, zár ‘close’, kiköt ‘dock’, although there are again available detransitivized forms available in principle, such as nyilik ‘open (intr.)’, which signify single events not involving agents.

(190)

a. Péter nyit-ott egy bolt-ot.
Peter open-ed a shop-ACC
b. A bolt kilenc-kor nyit/*nyílik.
the shop nine-at opens

‘The shop opens at nine.’

Transitive verbs have two conjugations. If the third person object is definite, the definite or “objective” conjugation is used; if it is indefinite (or the verb is intransitive), the indefinite or “subjective” conjugation is required. (For more, see 2.1.3.6.1.2.) The definite conjugation makes it possible to drop the object pronominal if it is in the singular, but if plural it has to be retained, even if the antecedent has been given in the context.

(191)

a. Olvas-om.
read-DEF.1SG
‘I’m reading it.’
b. Olvas-od.
read-DEF.2SG
‘You are reading it.’
c. Olvas-sa.
read-DEF.3SG
‘(S)he is reading it.’
d. Olvas-suk.
read-DEF.1PL
‘We are reading it.’
e. Olvas-sá-tok.
read-DEF.2PL
‘You are reading it.’
f. Olvas-sák.
   read-DEF.3PL
   ‘They are reading it.’

    read-DEF.1SG them[—human]
    ‘I’m reading them.’
b. Lát-om *(őket).
    see-DEF.1SG them[+human]
    ‘I see them.’

Other than third person pronouns can also be dropped if singular, but then the indefinite conjugation is used (for first person objects), or a particular “second person object” (2OBJ) suffix is attached to the verb in first person singular.

(193) a. Lát-sz (engem)/minket.
    see-2SG me/us
    ‘You see me/us.’
b. Lát (engem)/minket.
    see.3SG me/us
    ‘S/he sees me/us.’
c. Lát-lak (téged)/titeket.
    see-2OBJ.1SG you.SG/PL
    ‘I see you.’
d. Lát (téged)/titeket.
    see.3SG you.SG/PL
    ‘S/he sees you.’

1.2.1.2.3. Indirect objects

Strictly speaking, there are no indirect objects in Hungarian, though we will use the term for ease of reference. Indirect objects are expressed solely by means of a noun phrase in the dative case.

(194) a. Anna Péter-nek adott egy könyv-et.
    Anna Peter-DAT gave a book-ACC
    ‘Anna gave a book to Peter.’
b. Anna Péter-nek el-mesélt egy történet-et.
    Anna Peter-DAT PFX-recounted a story-ACC
    ‘Anna told a story to Peter.’

Since only subject pronouns (whether singular or plural) and singular object pronouns can be suppressed, indirect objects cannot be pro-
dropped, nor can any other arguments of the verb. Note that the dative has a number of different functions in Hungarian, such as marking the possessor, the subject of infinitives, or the nominal or adjectival complements of a number of verbs.

1.2.1.2.4. Other arguments

There are a large number of possible arguments of verbs as well as adjectives in cases other than the accusative or dative, which the following will illustrate. Some of these oblique arguments are optional, marked by parentheses, others are obligatory.

(195) a. Anna Péter-re bíz-ott egy könyv-et.
    Anna Peter-SUB entrust-PAST a book-ACC
    ‘Anna entrusted Peter with a book.’
  b. Anna vár (Péter-re).
    Anna waits Peter-SUB
    ‘Anna is waiting (for Peter).’

(196) a. Anna nem könyörül Péter-en.
    Anna not has-mercy Peter-SUP
    ‘Anna doesn’t have mercy on Peter.’
  b. Anna segített (Péter-en).
    Anna helped Peter-SUP
    ‘Anna helped (Peter).’

(197) a. Péter mentes az irigység-től.
    Peter free the envy-ABL
    ‘Peter is free from envy.’
  b. Péter független volt (az apjá-tól).
    Peter independent was the his.father-ABL
    ‘Peter was independent (of his father).’

(198) a. Anna foglalkozott a könyv-vel.
    Anna dealt the book-INS
    ‘Anna dealt with the book.’
  b. Anna beszélt (Péter-rel).
    Anna spoke Peter-INS
    ‘Anna spoke (with Peter).’

Another group of verbs determines the general nature of the argument, such as locative or directional, but does not specify the case in question. (For more on this, see Komlósy 1994.)
Page 72

(199)  a. Péter most ért a ház-ba /rét-re /fa alá…
Peter now reached the house-ILL/meadow-SUB/tree under
‘Peter has now reached the house/meadow/under the tree.’
Peter the house-INE/meadow-SUP/tree under lives
‘Peter lives in the house/meadow/under the tree.’
Note that the sentences are ungrammatical if no complements occur. In other words, these verbs have obligatory
arguments.
Manner adverbs also appear as obligatory complements with a limited class of verbs.
(200)  Anna *(jól) bánik Péter-rel.
Anna well treats Peter-INS
‘Anna treats Peter well.’
A large class of transitive verbs take case-marked nouns (without any article) or adjectives that are traditionally
classified as object complements, although they are in fact predicated of the object in some kind of secondary
predication.
(201)  a. Péter könyv-vé alakította a kézirat-ot.
Peter book-TRA formed the manuscript-ACC
‘Peter formed the manuscript into a book.’
b. Anna barná-ra sütötte a kenyer-et.
Anna brown-SUB baked the bread-ACC
‘Anna baked the bread brown.’
c. Anna unalmas-nak tartja Péter-t.
Anna boring-DAT considers Peter-ACC
‘Anna considers Peter (to be) boring.’
Other verbs are lexically intransitive and take subject complements in oblique cases, or can be transitivized in a
construction type similar to the one seen above.
(202)  a. Anna vidám-má változott.
Anna cheerful-TRA changed
‘Anna has become cheerful.’
b. Anna *(rekedt-re) kiabált-a a hangjá-t.
Anna hoarse-SUB shouted-DEF the her.voice-ACC
‘Anna shouted (until) her voice (turned) hoarse.’
Manner, time, place, etc. adjuncts can be added freely over and above the obligatory arguments illustrated above,
depending on the semantics of the verb or adjective in the predicate.
1.2.1.2.5. Combinations of arguments

Usually the highest number of arguments a verb can take is four: subject, object, indirect object, and an oblique argument. It is also possible for some verbs to have two oblique arguments if they are intransitive.

(203) a. Péter küldött egy könyv-et Anná-nak.
   Peter sent a book-ACC Anna-DAT
   ‘Peter sent a book to Anna.’

b. Anna beszélt Péter-rel a könyv-ről.
   Anna spoke Peter-INS the book-DEL
   ‘Anna spoke with Peter about the book.’

However, in one class of verbs—those denoting transactions, such as elad ‘sell’, vesz ‘buy’, megrendel ‘order’—in addition to the subject, the object, and the indirect object or source, a fourth argument determined by the verb, i.e., one expressing the price of the merchandise, can also occur.

(204) Péter vett egy könyv-et Anná-tól száz forint-ért.
   Peter bought a book-ACC Anna-ABL hundred forint-CAU
   ‘Peter bought a book from Anna for a hundred forints.’

1.2.1.2.6. Order of constituents

In the neutral order, the (definite) subject is followed by the verb and the direct and indirect objects, possibly also in a reversed order, just as in the case of oblique arguments. Since the definiteness of the object can affect the selection of the verb (demanding a choice between prefixed and nonprefixed), minimal pairs involving definite and indefinite objects are often hard to find. (The sentences are ungrammatical only under a neutral, nonfocussed, reading.)

(205) a. neutral
   Péter *(meg)-vette a könyv-et Anná-tól.
   Peter PFX-bought the book-ACC Anna-DEL
   ‘Peter bought the book from Anna.’

b. neutral
   Péter *(el)-küldte Anná-nak a könyv-et.
   Peter PFX-sent Anna-DAT the book-ACC
   ‘Peter sent the book to Anna.’

Objects and other arguments with no article, i.e., “verbal modifiers” or “reduced complements”, are placed in front of the (nonprefixed) verb. They are nonspecific and often form a semantic unit with the verb up to idiomaticity.
(206) a. Péter könyv-et olvas (*el).
Peter book-ACC reads PFX
‘Peter is reading (a) book(s).’=‘Peter is engaged in the activity of
book-reading.’
b. Anna fal-ra akasztotta a kép-et.
Anna wall-SUB hung.DEF the picture-ACC
‘Anna hung the picture on a wall.’
c. Péter rész-t vett az előadás-on.
Peter part-ACC took the lecture-SUP
‘Peter took part in the lecture.’
d. A puska csütörtök-öt mondott.
the gun Thursday-ACC said
‘The gun misfired.’

Note here that É.Kiss (1987, 1994) does not recognize neutral sentences in Hungarian, while others, e.g., Kálmán

1.2.1.3. Adverbials
1.2.1.3.1. Types of adverbials
1.2.1.3.1.1. Adverbs
The following illustrate adverbs of time, place, manner, and frequency.
(207) a. Itt/Most/IDéén Anna olvassa a könyvet.
here/now/this.year Anna reads.DEF the book.ACC
‘Anna is reading the book here/now/this year.’
b. Anna gyors-an/gyakr-an olvassa a könyvet.
Anna quick-ly/frequent-ly reads.DEF the book.ACC
‘Anna reads/is reading the book fast/often.’

There are a few lexical adverbs, some of which have extinct or unanalyzable adverbial case suffixes, as in the (a)
example above, or are more or less obsolete compound time adverbs, such as names of parts of the day—reggel
‘morning’, dél-előtt ‘noon-before, morning’, dél-után ‘noon-after, afternoon’—or end in nap ‘day’, e.g., tegnap
1.2.1.3.1.2. Postpositional phrases
According to one calculation (Marácz 1991), there are fifty-four postpositions in this exclusively postpositional language. The exact number is hard to determine since there are some whose
status is transient; for more on criteria, see 1.2.4.1. Most
define place adverbials, a good many of them are time adverbials, and some are used to express the beneficiary, the instrument, or some other role in the action or predication. They come in two subtypes: one apparently takes an NP in the nominative, but on closer scrutiny these postpositions turn out to behave syntactically like case suffixes, although they are independent words morphologically. This class will be called “case-like” postpositions. The other group assigns some oblique case to the noun phrase, and they will be labeled as “real” postpositions. Both subclasses belong to “core” postpositions, in contrast to “transitional” ones, which are in the process of becoming postpositions.

(208)

a. A könyv az asztal alatt van.
   the book the table under is
   ‘The book is under the table.’

b. Péter az előadás után érkezett.
   Peter the lecture after arrived
   ‘Peter arrived after the lecture.’

c. Anna Péter iránt szeretet érez.
   Anna Peter for affection for feels
   ‘Anna feels an affection for Peter.’

d. Péter Anna helyett beszélt.
   Peter Anna instead-of spoke
   ‘Peter spoke instead of Anna.’

(209)

a. A könyv a szobá-n kívül van.
   the book the room-SUP outside is
   ‘The book is outside the room.’

b. Péter két órán belül érkezett.
   Peter two hour-SUP inside arrived
   ‘Peter arrived in two hours.’

c. Péter Anna-ALL hoz képest magas volt.
   Peter Anna-ALL compared tall was
   ‘Peter was tall compared to Anna.’

1.2.1.3.1.3. Cases

There are some twenty-one oblique case suffixes listed in grammars of Hungarian. Again exact numbers are difficult to determine, not only because of the blurred dividing line between cases and postpositions, but also because the “end” of the list seems to taper off into highly unproductive suffixes such as nyar-anta ‘summer-SFX’, meaning roughly ‘every summer, regularly in summer’, but it can hardly be added even to all expressions denoting periods of time, cf. *órá-nta ‘hour-SFX’, which has the form órá-nként ‘hour-ly’ instead.
With this caveat in mind, let us see examples for productive case suffixes defining adverbs of place and time. First, the characteristic "tridirectional" property of Finno-Ugric suffixes for place adverbials is illustrated: like postpositions of place, most have different forms for expressing the place of the action/event, the direction toward, and the direction from some place. First place adverbials, then adverbials of time, are given.

(210)  
  a. Anna a ház-ban lakik.  
      Anna the house-INE lives  
      'Anna lives in the house.'
  b. Anna a ház-ba lépett.  
      Anna the house-ILL entered  
      'Anna entered into the house.'
  c. Anna a ház-ból érkezett.  
      Anna the house-ELA arrived  
      'Anna came from the house.'

(211)  
  a. Péter holnap-ra el-olvassa a könyvet.  
      Peter tomorrow-SUB PFX-reads.DEF the book.ACC  
      'Peter will read the book by tomorrow.'
  b. Péter március-ban vette a könyvet.  
      Peter March-INE bought.DEF the book.ACC  
      'Peter bought the book in March.'

1.2.1.3.1.4. Adverbial clauses  
The large majority of adverbial clauses are finite, although nonfinite clauses of time, purpose, and manner occur, as was discussed in 1.1.2.4. in detail.

1.2.1.3.2. Positions of adverbials
The possible positions of adverbials are (a) initial, (b) following the first phrase in topic, (c) in a post-topic (or pre-quantifier) position, and (d) final. Since a sentence adverbial can occur in any one of them, one such expression will serve as illustration.

(212)  
  a. Anna szerint Péter tegnap könyvet olvasott a  
      Anna according Peter yesterday book.ACC read the  
      házban.  
      house-INE  
      'According to Anna, Peter was reading a book in the house yesterday.'
Page 77
b. Péter Anna szerint tegnap könyvet olvasott a házban.
   ‘According to Anna, Peter was reading a book in the house yesterday.’
c. Péter tegnap Anna szerint könyvet olvasott a házban.
   ‘According to Anna, Peter was reading a book in the house yesterday.’
d. Péter tegnap könyvet olvasott a házban Anna szerint.
   ‘According to Anna, Peter was reading a book in the house yesterday.’

Time and place adverbs generally have the same choice of occurrence. Postverbal arguments are placed adjacent to the verb and one another, but the order of these adjuncts is relatively free: tegnap and a házban in the example above, for instance, can be interchanged, or both placed in front of the subject Péter, or behind the verb. Manner adverbials are more restricted as regards their positions. They occur either in (a) the pre-focus or (b) the focus position. Manner adverbials that have positive meaning are in (a), those with a negative meaning are in (b). Note that the focus position is optionally available for positive adverbials. For more, see Kiefer (1967), É.Kiss (1987, 1994).

(213) a. Anna kielégítően meg-oldotta/oldotta meg a
   feladat-ot.
   ‘Anna did the assignment satisfactorily.’
   Anna satisfactorily PFX-solved.DEF the
   assignment-ACC
b. Anna elégtelenül oldotta
   feladat-ot.
   ‘Anna did the assignment unsatisfactorily.’
   Anna unsatisfactorily solved.DEF
   meg/*/meg-oldotta a feladat-ot.
   PFX

Clauses have the same choices as simple adverbials, except that they cannot be placed in the focus position.

(214) a. Amikor Anna, olvasott, Péter aludt a szobában
   ‘When Anna was reading, Peter was sleeping in the room.’
   b. Péter, amikor Anna olvasott, aludt a szobában.
   ‘When Anna was reading, Peter was sleeping in the room.’
c. Péter aludt a szobában, amikor Anna olvasott.’
‘When Anna was reading, Peter was sleeping in the room.’

1.2.1.3.3. Obligatory adverbials
Some obligatory adverbials were discussed and illustrated in 1.2.1.2.4 in connection with the argument structure of verbs.

1.2.2. Adjective phrases

1.2.2.1. Operational definition
Adjective phrases occur (a) in predicates containing a copula, (b) in noun phrases, and (c) as (subject or object) complements of one class of verbs.

(215) a. A könyv nagyon érdekes volt,
   the book very interesting was
   ‘The book was very interesting.’

   b. az érdekes könyv
   the interesting book

   c. A könyv érdekes-nek tűnik
   the book interesting-DAT appears
   ‘The book appears interesting.’

   d. Anna érdekes-nek tartott-a a könyv-et.
   Anna interesting-DAT considered-DEF the book-ACC
   ‘Anna considered the book interesting.’

These environments can differentiate between adjectives and attributive expressions whose heads are traditionally considered as derived adjectives, such as (216) active (or present) participles, and (217) -i affixed postpositional phrases.

(216) a. a sétáló fiú
   the walk-APRT boy
   ‘the walking boy’

   b. *A fiú sétáló volt.
   the boy walk-APRT was

(217) a. az Anna előtt-i fiú
   the Anna before-AFX boy
   ‘the boy in front of Anna’
Page 79
b. *A fiú-t Anna előtti-nek látom.
   the-boy-ACC Anna before-AFX see 1SG
   ‘I see the boy as (one) in front of Anna.’
Since, however, nouns without the article can fill the very same positions, as seen in the following examples, and,
moreover, adjectives can be case-marked just like nouns, further criteria have to be found. (Note that the form of
definite article az/a depends on whether the following word begins with a vowel or a consonant.)
(218) a. Péter diákvonalmas volt.
   Peter student/boring was
   ‘Peter was a student/boring.’
b. a(z) diáknonalmas eladó
   the student/boring salesperson
c. Anna diáknonalmasnak tartotta Péter-t.
   Anna student-DAT/boring-DAT considered.DEF Peter-ACC
   ‘Anna considered Peter a student/boring.’
Admittedly, the (b) case is one of compounding if the two nouns are side by side, but that has to be shown by
independent devices, such as the difference between stress patterns, with the compound having a single stress and
the adjective-noun construction separate stresses on each word. But further tests may dispel any doubts concerning
the distinction between adjectives and nouns.
First of all, (a) adjectives take adverbials, such as nagyon Very’, kissé ‘little’, rendkívül ‘extremely’, etc. Then they
have (b) comparative and (c) superlative forms, expressed invariably by affixation in Hungarian. Note that the
superlative is marked by a discontinuous morpheme consisting of the comparative suffix and the superlative prefix,
surrounding the adjective, as it were.
(219) a. Péter nagyon unalmas/diák volt.
   Peter very boring/student was
   ‘Peter was very boring/student.’
b. Péter unalmas-abb/diák-abb volt.
   Peter boring-CMP/student-CMP was
   ‘Peter was more boring/more student.’
c. Péter volt a leg-unalmas-abb/leg-diák-abb.
   Peter was the SPR-boring-CMP/SPR-student-CMP
   ‘Peter was the most boring/ most student.’
It is to be noted here that various derived phrases, usually classified as adjectival, do not pass the tests reviewed
here: thus (a) active participles,
(b) passive participles—unless they are lexicalized, (c) phrases derived by means of the suffix -i from postpositional phrases, and (d) phrases derived by means of the participle való ‘being’ from complements of nominalized predicates. They all occur in attributive functions in noun phrases, but fail each of the other criteria listed.

\[(220)\]
\[\begin{align*}
\text{a. & egy [(könyv-et) olvas-ó] lány} \\
& \quad \text{a book-ACC read-APRT girl} \\
& \quad \text{‘a girl reading (a book)’} \\
\text{b. & a(z) [(sok-szor) olvas-ott] könyv} \\
& \quad \text{the many-times read-PPRT book} \\
& \quad \text{‘the book read (many times)’} \\
\text{c. & egy [az asztal-om alatt-i] könyv} \\
& \quad \text{a the table-POSS.1SG under-SFX book} \\
& \quad \text{‘a book under my table’} \\
\text{d. & az [asztal alatt való] olvas-ás} \\
& \quad \text{the table under being read-NML} \\
& \quad \text{‘the reading under the/a table’}
\end{align*}\]

1.2.2.2. Arguments in adjective phrases

1.2.2.2.1. Adjectives in subjectless sentences
As was mentioned above, a few adjectives occur in sentences that cannot have overt subjects.

\[(221)\]
\[\begin{align*}
\text{a. & Tél-en itt hideg van.} \\
& \quad \text{winter-SUP here cold is} \\
& \quad \text{‘In winter it is cold here.’} \\
\text{b. & A szobá-ban tegnap sötét volt.} \\
& \quad \text{the room-ILL yesterday dark was} \\
& \quad \text{‘It was dark in the room yesterday.’}
\end{align*}\]

It would be futile to try to claim that the words in questions, i.e., hideg and sötét, are adjectives and nouns, and they are predicate nouns here, especially since adjectives can stand in for nouns in elliptical noun phrases. But recall that “bare” nouns in such sentences express “pure” existence and require that the copula be stressed and placed initially or at least in front of them. Here neither is the case, cf. 1.2.1.1.6.2. Moreover, the words in question can be modified by intensifiers, such as nagyon ‘very’, borzasztóan ‘terribly’, etc., which are never used to modify nouns.
Arguments of adjectives

No adjective has a direct object complement, i.e., none governs an accusative noun phrase. No adjective has an indirect object argument either, since the category does not exist in Hungarian. When an adjective has a dative-marked argument, it may express either the beneficiary or the experiencer.

(222) a. colloquial
   Anna sáros volt Péter-nek.
   ‘Anna was owing money to Peter.’

   b. Anna fontos volt Péter-nek
   ‘Anna was important to Peter.’

The dative arguments can occur also if the adjective is within a noun phrase.

(223) a. [Péter-nek fontos] könyv
   ‘the book important to Peter’

A number of adjectives have optional (oblique) case-marked or postpositional noun phrase arguments, or infinitival clauses. The illustrations below are by no means exhaustive as to the variety of cases or the number of adjectives.

(224) a. Péter szerelmes volt Anna-ba.
   ‘Peter was in love with Anna.’

   b. Anna biztos volt a dolog-ban.
   ‘Anna was certain of the matter.’

   c. Péter kedves lesz Anná-hoz.
   ‘Peter will be kind to Anna.’

   d. Anna óvatos Péter-rel szemben.
   ‘Anna is cautious with Peter.’

   e. Péter képtelen volt olvas-ni.
   ‘Peter was unable to read.’

They can preserve their arguments if placed in noun phrases, but, as above, the adjectival head has to be phrase-final.
Some adjectives take finite clauses as arguments, introduced by (sometimes optional) oblique case-marked expletive pronouns. While these expletives can allow finite clauses to be placed outside noun phrases, they are structurally too far from their clauses when inside adjectival phrases that are embedded in noun phrases, so clausal arguments are not possible there. The other alternative, viz., that a finite clause stays inside the adjective or noun phrase, is impossible as a rule in such left-branching constructions.

(226) a. Anna biztos (ab-ban), hogy Péter beteg volt.
   ‘Anna is certain that Peter was sick.’
   b. Péter kíváncsi (ar-ra), hogy ki volt beteg.
   ‘Peter is curious who was sick.’

(227) a. *az [abban, hogy Péter beteg volt, biztos] lány
   the it.ILL that Peter sick was certain girl
   b. *[az [abban ti biztos] lány] [hogy Péter beteg volt]i
   the it.ILL certain girl that Peter sick was
   ‘the girl certain that Peter was sick’

1.2.2.3. Modification of adjectives

In addition to the adverbs or intensifiers illustrated in 1.2.2.1, finite clauses introduced by a lexical or expletive head (and, for a number of speakers, infinitival clauses) can also modify adjectives.
Page 83

(228)  a. Az előadás rendkívül/igen unalmas volt.
     the lecture extremely/very boring was
     'The lecture was extremely/very boring.'

  b. Az előadás eléggé rövid volt ahhoz, hogy figyeljünk.
     the lecture enough short was it-ALL that listen-SUBJ-1PL
     rá.
     SUB.3SG
     'The lecture was short enough for us to listen to it.'

  c. Az előadás olyan unalmas volt, hogy nem figyeljünk.
     the lecture so boring was that not listened-1PL
     rá.
     SUB.3SG
     'The lecture was so boring that we weren't listening to it.'

  d. Az előadás túl unalmas volt ahhoz, hogy figyeljünk.
     the lecture too boring was it-ALL that listen-SUBJ-1PL
     rá.
     SUB.3SG
     'The lecture was too boring for us to listen to it.'

  e. Az előadás túl unalmas volt felvenni.
     the lecture too boring was record-INF
     'The lecture was too boring to record.'

Again, finite clauses cannot occur either in or outside of an adjective phrase within a noun phrase, though simple
adverbial or infinitival modifiers can, since they can be placed to the left of the adjectival head. It is worth
mentioning that infinitival complements are somewhat more acceptable here.

(229)  a. a [rendkívül/igen/nem (nagyon) unalmas] előadás
     the extremely/very/not very boring lecture

  b. *[az [ahhoz eléggé érdekes] előadás] hogy felfelvenyünk
     the it-ALL enough interesting lecture that we.record.it
     'the interesting enough lecture to record (it)'

  c. [%?a [felvenni túl unalmas] előadás]
     the record-INF too boring lecture
     'the too boring lecture to record'

Finally, note that some adjectives can also be used without any adverbial suffixation to serve as modifiers of a
limited set of adjectival phrases, e.g., szép 'nice', jó 'good', etc., + kis 'little', nagy 'big', etc.
Page 84

(230)  

a. jó kis előadás  
   ‘good little lecture’  

b. szép nagy bukás  
   ‘nice big flop’  

1.2.3. Adverbial phrases

1.2.3.1. Operational definition

Adverbial phrases usually have notional definitions, mostly relying on eliciting them by reference and in answer to 
various (adverbial) question-word questions. In view of this functional approach, (case-marked) adverbial and 
postpositional phrases (see section 1.2.4) overlap. Somewhat more formal is the procedure of substitution for 
unanalyzable lexical adverbs, such as those corresponding to English now, tomorrow; here, out-(side); fast, etc. 
Some of these, especially place adverbials, can appear as obligatory arguments of a class of verbs and provide 
another context for demonstration; others, in particular time adverbials, occur only as free adjuncts.

(231) a. Anna kint/a ház-ban lakik.  
    Anna outside/the house-INE lives  
    ‘Anna lives outside/*in the house.’  

b. Anna most/holnap/két év múlva érkezik.  
    Anna now/tomorrow/two year after arrives  
    ‘Anna will arrive now/tomorrow/in two years.’  

c. Péter jól gyors-an/toll nélkül ír.  
    Peter well/quick-ADV/pen without writes  
    ‘Peter writes well/fast/without a pen.’

1.2.3.2–4. Modification of adverbials

The most common structure of modification is adverbial: the general derivative affix (-an/en) producing “manner” 
adverbs from adjectives is used to provide modifiers for place and time adverbial phrases and also intensifiers for 
manner adverbials.

(232) a. Anna messze kint/ *a házban lakik.  
    Anna far out the house-INE lives  
    ‘Anna lives far outside/*in the house.’
Page 85

b. Anna épp-en/pontos-an ide/holnap/két év múlva
   Anna just-ly/exact-ly here/tomorrow/two year after
   érkezik.
   arrives
   ‘Anna will arrive just/exactly here/tomorrow/in two years.’

c. Péter kifejezett-erv/nagy-on jól/gyors-an ír.
   Peter pronounced-ly/great-ly well/quick-ly writes
   ‘Peter writes positively/very well/fast.’

Postpositional manner adverbial phrases cannot be modified by the usual intensifies, except for those affirming the
truthfulness of the statement.

(233) a. *Péter kifejezetten toll nélkül ír.
   Peter positively pen without writes
   ‘Peter writes positively without a pen.’

   b. Péter való-ban/igaz-án/tény-leg toll nélkül ír.
      Peter real-INs/true-ADV/fact-ADV pen without writes
      ‘Peter writes really/indeed/in fact without a pen.’

While való-ban above appears to be a case-marked noun or adjective, it is in fact a lexically derived adverb, like the
others.

In addition to lexical(ly derived) adverbs, finite adverbial clauses mostly of degree can also modify adverbial phrases.
As was illustrated before, these clauses are associated with the “pointer” olyan ‘so’ in the main clause.

(234) a. Anna olyan messze lakik, hogy nem látogat-hat-juk meg.
   Anna so far lives that not visit-POSS-DEF.1PL PFX
   ‘Anna lives so far away that we can’t visit her.’

   b. Anna olyan soká-ig olvasott, hogy el-aludt.
      Anna so long-TER read that PFX-slept.3SG
      ‘Anna was reading for so long that she fell asleep.’

   c. Péter olyan gyors-an ír, hogy fáj a keze.
      Peter so quick-ly writes that hurts the his hand
      ‘Peter writes so fast that his hand begins to hurt.’

As demonstrated in the examples, modifiers are placed in front of the adverbial, just like the anticipatory expressions
introducing finite clauses, which as a rule follow the adverbial, or in fact all other constituents of the main clause
itself.
1.2.4. Postpositional phrases

1.2.4.1. Operational definition

In section 1.2.1.3.1.2 we alluded to the difficulty of defining postpositional phrases. Below we will first differentiate two subtypes: “case-like” post-positions apparently have a noun phrase in nominative case, but in a syntactic sense they are much more like case suffixes, while from the point of view of morphology they are independent words. The other group, which will be called “real” postpositions, takes a noun phrase in an oblique case. Both subclasses belong to “core” postpositions, in contrast to “transitional” ones, which are in the process of changing from syntactic constructions to postpositions. We will now list the criteria relevant to determining them.

First of all postpositions differ from case suffixes in that they are independent words as evidenced by operations such as derivation or coordination. Postpositions, unlike case suffixes, can serve as the basis for the adjectival or attributive derivative affix -i (discussed in more detail in 1.2.5.2.7). In contrast to case suffixes, postpositions can have their NP arguments conjoined, and they can be coordinated themselves.

(235) a. Péter (fölött) és Anna fölött
   Peter above and Anna above
   ‘above Peter and (above) Anna’

   b. Péter-*től) és Anná-tól
   Peter-ABL and Anna-ABL
   ‘from Peter and (from) Anna’

(236) a. Péter fölött és mögött
   Peter above and behind
   ‘above and behind Peter’

   b. *Péter-től és -hez
   Peter-ABL and ALL
   ca. ‘from and to Peter’

“Real” postpositions assign oblique case to the NP they govern.

(237) Anna Péter-rel együtt érkezett
   Anna Peter-INS together arrived
   ‘Anna arrived together with Peter.’

A different set of observations, in turn, supports the view that “real” postpositions are like oblique case suffixes themselves. First, they do not assign any case to their NPs, rather they behave like case suffixes in NPs containing the “full” demonstrative. If they marked their NPs
nominative, as Marácz (1991) claims, they would not have to be repeated on the demonstrative like any case suffix, and indeed the oblique case assigned by the “real” postpositions to their NPs.

(238)

\begin{enumerate}
\item a. az-zal a fiú-val
  \textit{that-INS the boy-INS}
  \textit{‘with that boy’}
\item b. a(z) *(fölött) a fiú fölött
  \textit{that above the boy above}
  \textit{‘above that boy’}
\item c. az *(zal) a fiú-val együtt
  \textit{that-INS the boy-INS together}
  \textit{‘together with that boy’}
\end{enumerate}

When a personal pronoun and a referential NP are coordinated in a postpositional phrase, they again behave the same way as case-marked personal pronouns coordinated with referential NPs.

(239)

\begin{enumerate}
\item a. vel-ed és Péter-rel
  \textit{INS-2SG and Peter-INS}
  \textit{‘with you and Peter’}
\item b. *te és Péter-rel
  \textit{you and Peter-INS}
\end{enumerate}

(240)

\begin{enumerate}
\item a. fölött-ed és Péter fölött
  \textit{above-2SG and Peter above}
  \textit{‘above you and Peter’}
\item b. *te és Péter fölött-(etek)
  \textit{2PL}
\end{enumerate}

The person-marked form of the postposition in the (b) example serves to indicate that the ungrammaticality does not arise from a conflict of agreement; for example, coordinated subjects such as those in (240b) can have predicates marked for second person plural.

Real postpositions can take locative case suffixes, but case-like postpositions, pace Marácz (1991:279), do not admit additional inflectional affixes—at least for a large class of speakers.

(241)

\begin{enumerate}
\item a. a ház-on túl-ról
  \textit{the house-SUB beyond-DEL}
  \textit{‘from beyond the house’}
\item b. *a ház mögött-ról
  \textit{the house behind-DEL}
  \textit{‘from behind the house’}
\end{enumerate}
Page 88

The ungrammatical form in the (b) example is even more unlikely because the simple postposition mögül ‘from behind’ may also lexically block the formation of such complex forms. A further distinction can be made between “core” postpositions and syntactic phrases in a state of transition to become postpositions, which also relies on properties of person-marking. Whereas (a) core postpositions in construction with personal pronouns consist of a root, a locative suffix and a person-marker, which is by and large identical with the one on possessed nominals, (b) transitional postpositions have the latter two in reversed order, just as if they were “true” noun phrases.

(242) a. föl-ött-ed
top-SUP-2SG
‘above you’
  b. szám-od-ra
account-2SG-SUB
‘onto your account’=‘for you’

This again relates these postpositions to (a) cases, some of which happen to have similar pronominal forms, and distances them from (b) “real” postpositions, which cannot combine directly with personal pronouns, since they take case-marked personal pronouns just as they require case-marked NPs.

(243) a. bel-ől-ed
inside-ELA-2SG
‘out of you’
  b. vel-ed együtt/*együtt-ed
INS-2SG together/together-2SG
‘together with you’

1.2.4.2–3. Arguments and modification of postpositional phrases
Although postpositions appear in construction with subordinate clauses, it is safe to say that they always and without exception take noun phrases as their arguments, as has been illustrated throughout. In case they are accompanied by clauses, the postposition takes as its complement either (a) an anticipatory pronoun or (b) what is apparently a relative pronoun, but even in this latter instance the construction is best regarded as idiosyncratic since the literal meaning of the relative pronoun+postposition is not present. Although it is classified as a conjunction, the postpositional phrase is understood as part of (the meaning of) the main clause, since it is within the higher clause that the time relator is interpretable.
(244) a. Az-után, hogy Péter meg-érkezett, Anna el-aludt
   ‘After Peter had arrived, Anna fell asleep.’
   it-after that Peter PFX-arrived Anna PFX-slept
b. Mi-után Péter meg-érkezett, Anna el-aludt
   ‘After Peter had arrived, Anna fell asleep.’
   what-after Peter PFX-arrived Anna PFX-slept

Apart from conjoined phrases, postpositions do not occur with more than one argument, and they cannot be stranded either. The adverbs that can modify postpositional phrases were discussed in the previous subsection.

1.2.4.4. Cases governed by postpositions

As was argued above, case-like postpositions do not govern cases but behave like case affixes themselves. Their list is as follows: által ‘by’; alá ‘(to) under’, alatt ‘under’, alól ‘from under’; elé ‘(to) before’, előtt ‘before’, elől ‘from before’; ellen ‘against’; felé ‘toward’, felől ‘from the direction of’; fölé ‘(to) above’, fölött ‘above’; gyanánt ‘as’; helyett ‘instead of’; hosszat ‘for (a period of time)’; iránt ‘for’; köré ‘(to) around’, körül ‘around; közé ‘(to) between’, között ‘between’, közül ‘from between’; metté ‘(to) beside’, mellett ‘beside’, mellől ‘from beside’; miatt ‘because of; mögé ‘(to) behind’, mögött ‘behind’, mögül ‘from behind’; nélkül ‘without’; óta ‘since’; szerint ‘according to’; után ‘after’; végutt ‘for the sake of’.

“Real” postpositions, on the other hand, appear to select between the following cases: (a) superessive—alul ‘below’, át ‘through, across’, belül ‘inside of’, felül ‘beyond, over’, keresztül ‘through, across’, kívül ‘outside of’, túl ‘beyond’, végig ‘along’; (b) instrumental—együtt ‘together’, szembe(n) ‘opposite to’, szemközt ‘facing’; (c) allative—képest ‘compared to’, közel ‘near’.

(245) a. a ház-on át
   the house-SUP across
   ‘across the house’

b. Anná-val szemben
   Anna-INS opposite
   ‘opposite to Anna’

c. Péter-hez képest
   Peter-ALL compared
   ‘compared to Peter’

Moreover, transitional postpositions may also govern oblique cases.

(246) e perc-től fogva
   this minute-ABL beginning
   ‘from/since this minute’
A number of case-like postpositions (though definitely not all) can take personal pronouns as their arguments, whose most common form is, as was illustrated above, agreement marked on the postposition with the pronoun itself suppressed.

(247) a. fölött-ed
above-2SG
b. *gyanánt-ad
as-2SG

The pronoun can be (a) overt inside the postpositional phrase or (b) it can move out if it assumes a dative case, much as in possessive noun phrases. Note that not all postpositions that can take personal pronouns as arguments allow them to leave the PP and that only personal pronouns are capable of undergoing this operation. It has been argued that when the nominal complement of the postposition is moved out of the PP, it is interpreted as metaphorical.

you-above-2SG nobody not.is
'There is nobody above you.'
'You have no superiors.'

DAT-2SG nobody not.is above-2SG
'You have no superiors.'

(249) a. Te-helyett-ed Anna érkezett.
you-instead-2SG Anna arrived
'Anna arrived instead of you.'

DAT-2SG Anna arrived instead-2SG

In another construction-type the postposition appears as if it were a preverbal prefix.

(250) a. Anna mellé Péter-t állították.
Anna beside Peter-ACC stood.3PL
'They stood Peter next to Anna.'

b. Mellé-állították Péter-t Anná-nak.
beside-stood.3PL Peter-ACC Anna-DAT
'They stood Peter next to Anna.'

c. Anná-nak Péter-t állították mellé *(je)
beside-3SG
'They stood Peter next to Anna.'
It is supposed, at least under some analyses (cf. Marácz 1991, É.Kiss 1994), that the postposition moves out of the postpositional phrase into the preverbal position, leaving the argument in a dative case. Others, e.g., Komlósy (1994), maintain that the two analogous constructions come from parallel, but not identical, sources, as is indicated by the differences in person-marking.

Other, more prefix-like postpositions can freely alternate between a person-marked and a plain form.

(251) a. A sín alá ütött.
    the rail under hit.3SG
    ‘He hit (once) under the rail.’
b. Alá-ütött a sín-nek.
    rail-DAT
    ‘He hit (once) under the rail.’
c. A sín-nek ütött alá(-ja).
    under-3SG
    ‘He hit (once) under the rail.’

Note here that nonpronominal NPs cannot in general be marked by the dative in postpositional phrases and that in the examples above focus was disregarded.

Finally, there are two postpositions that govern alternative cases; one of them has different meanings depending on the cases it assigns, the other can assign an oblique case to its argument only if it is a personal pronoun. The following illustrate.

(252) a. a körülmények-nél fogva
    the circumstances-ADE because
    ‘on account of the circumstances’
b. e perc-től fogva
    this minute-ELA beginning
    ‘from this minute’

(253) a. Péter(*-nél) nélkül
    Peter-ADE without
    ‘without Peter’
b. nál-ad nélkül
    ADE-2SG without
    ‘without you’
c. nélkül-ed
    without-2SG
    ‘without you’
Few verbs or lexical heads in general govern postpositions (e.g., szeretet NP iráni ‘love for NP’), and none of them determines the case the postposition assigns to its argument.

1.2.5. Noun phrases
1.2.5.1. Operational definition
Noun phrases are determined by their syntactic positions: they can be subjects or objects, they can be marked for various oblique cases, and occur as arguments of postpositions. Although the nominal head of the NP, as well as the modifying adjectival phrase and the nominal head, may be omitted and then the plural and case affixes are attached to the remaining rightmost constituent of the NP, the identification of the string as a noun phrase encounters no difficulty.

(254)
(a) Anna [négy alacsony férfi] ellen győzött.
    Anna four small man against won
    ‘Anna has won against four small men.’
(b) Anna [négy alacsony_] ellen győzött.
    ‘Anna has won against four small ones.’
(c) Anna [négy_ _] ellen győzött.
    ‘Anna has won against four ones.’

1.2.5.2. Modification
1.2.5.2.1. Modification by adjective
Adjectives or, more precisely, adjectival phrases, occur to the left of the head noun. They do not agree with the head in number or in case. If there is more than one adjective, they may be conjoined or “stacked”. In the latter case they can be interpreted as either restrictive or nonrestrictive and their order starting from the noun toward the “periphery” is determined on semantic grounds—i.e., the kinds of property they designate—adjectives expressing more central, stable, invariable features are closer to the noun than those conveying characteristics of a more temporary, changeable nature.

(255)
(a) az idős és sikeres író
    the old and successful writer
(b) a sikeres és idős író
    a successful old writer
(c) a sikeres idős író
    ‘the successful old writer’
d. *az idős sikeres író
   'the old successful writer'

The groups of adjectives from "peripheral" to "central" are as follows:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Variable</th>
<th>Age/Size</th>
<th>Color</th>
<th>Source</th>
<th>Noun</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>sikeres</td>
<td>idős</td>
<td>fekete</td>
<td>amerikai</td>
<td>író</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>successful</td>
<td>old</td>
<td>black</td>
<td>American</td>
<td>writer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kedves</td>
<td>hosszú</td>
<td>barna</td>
<td>magyar</td>
<td>vizsla</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kind</td>
<td>tall</td>
<td>brown</td>
<td>Hungarian</td>
<td>hound</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>szép</td>
<td>új</td>
<td>fehér</td>
<td>selyem</td>
<td>ing</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>beautiful</td>
<td>new</td>
<td>white</td>
<td>silken</td>
<td>shirt</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Adjectives of the same group can of course also be stacked under the same conditions and with the same ambiguities between restrictive and nonrestrictive readings.

(257) a. a sikeres okos vizsla
    the successful clever hound

b. *az okos sikeres vizsla

When the adjective has an argument, it has to be positioned to the left of the adjective.

(258) a. a [beszél-ni képtelen] író
    the speak-INF unable writer
    'the writer unable to speak'

b. *a képtelen beszél-ni író

c. *a képtelen író beszél-ni

(259) a. a házá-ra büszke építész
    the his.house-SUB proud architect
    'the architect proud of his house'

b. *a büszke házá-ra építész

The same ordering requirements apply to comparative constructions inside the noun phrase.

(260) a. a lányok-nál kedves-ebb fiúk
    the girls-ADE kind-er boys
    'the boys kinder than the girls'

b. *a kedves-ebb (a) lányok-nál fiúk

Adjective phrases, much like numerals, can appear in apposition to the noun phrase they (ultimately) modify. These appositive modifiers can be placed either before or after the relevant NP and are marked for the same
case as the noun. Their use points to the missing partitive case or construction in Hungarian and is a function of
topic-focus structure, to be discussed in 1.11.

(261) a. Vizslá-t Anna barná-t vett.
    hound-ACC Anna brown-ACC bought
    ‘As for hounds, Anna bought brown ones.’

    b. Négy-et Anna vizslá-t vett.
    four-ACC Anna hound-ACC bought
    ‘As for (buying) four (of something), Anna bought four
    hounds.’

1.2.5.2.2. Relative clause
Finite and nonfinite relative clauses can freely modify nouns in NPs; they were extensively discussed in 1.1.2.3.

1.2.5.2.3. Possessive adjectives
Grammatical tradition regards possessive constructions as “attributive”, though not adjectival, and lumps them
together with adjectival attributes surveyed above. However, they have nothing in common with the wellknown
possessive adjectives of, for example, a number of Slavic languages. The two structures they exhibit differ in the
order of the possessor and the article and the case of the possessor. In Szabolcsi’s (1986/1992, 1994) analysis, the
possessor in (a), the “compact” possessive construction, has nominative and it has a definite article to its left, at
least in some dialects, which do not otherwise allow an article in front of proper names. In (b), the “extended”
construction, the possessor has dative case and the article is to its right. The discussion of the construction is
deferred to section 1.10.
(262) a. a Péter kalap-ja
    the Peter.NOM hat-POSS.3SG
    ‘Peter’s hat’

    b. Péter-nek a kalap-ja
    Peter.DAT the hat-POSS.3SG
    ‘Peter’s hat’

1.2.5.2.4. Articles
The definite article has two forms: a and az, depending on whether the following word starts with a consonant or a
vowel. It is not declined and, except for the “extended” possessive construction, the quantifier mind ‘all’
and demonstratives, it is always the leftmost constituent in the NP. The indefinite article egy is identical with the
numeral ‘one’, and the only difference between them is that of stress and the simple (for the article) vs. geminate
(for the numeral) palatal stop (rendered as gy in orthography).

1.2.5.2.5. Demonstratives

Demonstratives occur in two different positions and versions within the noun phrase: they can be (263) internal and
undeclined for number and case, or (264) external and marked for number and case. In the first case they can be
shown to be preceded by the definite article, e.g., in a possessive construction, while in the latter case they are
followed by it. Both subtypes have a proximate and a nonproximate variety.

(263)    a. az Anna ama/azon kalap-ja
         the Anna that hat-POSS
         ca. ‘that hat of Anna’s’
    b. (*az) azon/ama kalap-(ok-(at))
         the that hat-PL-ACC
    c. (*az) eme/ezen/e kalap-(ok-(at))
         the this hat-PL-ACC

(264)    a. ez-t/az-t a kalap-ot
         this-ACC/that-ACC the hat-ACC
    b. *ez/az a kalap-ot
    c. ez-ek-et/az-ok-at a kalap-ok-at
         this-PL-ACC/that-PL-ACC the hat-PL-ACC

The internal demonstrative can be preceded by the possessor NP (and then also by the article); all other modifiers
follow it. The external demonstrative, in turn, cannot occur inside a possessive construction, as shown by the
constituency test applying focussing. Note that the possessor can be outside the possessive NP, whether before or
after it, making the NP with the external demonstrative acceptable.

         not Anna-DAT that-ACC the hat-POSS-ACC saw-DEF.1SG
    b. Anná-naki nem [ti az-t a kalap-já-t] látt-am.
        ‘It wasn’t that hat of Anna’s that I saw.’

Note, finally, that both the external and the internal demonstratives can occur in “compounds” formed of the
quantifier mind ‘all, every’, or the prefix ugyan- ‘same’.
a. mind-azok a kalap-ok  
   all those the hat-PL  
   ‘all those hats’

b. ugyan-ezek a kalap-ok  
   same these the hat-PL  
   ‘these same hats’

(267) a. Anna mind-azon kalap-ja-i (amely-ek…)  
   Anna all-that hat-POSS-PL which-PL  
   ‘all those hats of Anna’s (which…’)

b. Anna ugyan-azon kalap-ja (amely…)  
   ‘the same hat of Anna’s (which…’)

1.2.5.2.6. Numerals and quantifiers
Cardinal numerals, and by analogy quantifiers, occupy a position between (internal) demonstratives and adjectives. 
As argued by Szabolcsi (1994), while articles do not in general cooccur with quantifiers, they can be shown to be 
present simultaneously if there is some syntactic phrase placed between them. Quantified phrases (including 
universally quantified ones) are syntactically indefinite, since they take the indefinite conjugation, but the (c) 
example below requires definite conjugation if in object position.

(268)a. ama négy fekete toll  
   that four black pen  
   ‘those four black pens’

b. *a minden beszéd  
   the every speech  
   ‘the every speech’

c. a [termen belüli] minden beszéd  
   the room inside every speech  
   ‘every speech inside the room’

Ordinal numerals usually precede cardinal numerals, and always follow quantifiers. 

(269) a. a harmadik négy fiú  
   ‘the third four boys’

b. minden negyedik fiú  
   every fourth boy

Numerals are understood here as comprising optional “classifiers”, i.e., measure words, such as liter ‘liter’, kiló ‘kiló’, 
darab ‘piece’, etc. For an interesting survey, see Beckwith (1992).
1.2.5.2.7. Adverbials

There is no natural place inside the Hungarian noun phrase for adverbials. This conflict is resolved in the following ways.

(i) In nominative and accusative NPs it is possible for a (place or time) adverbial to follow the modified NP. This order is ungrammatical if the NP is in an oblique case.

(270) a. A könyv Ibsen-ről jól sikerült.
    the book Ibsen-DEL well succeeded
    ‘The book about Ibsen was a success.’

    b. A könyv-et a kirakat-ban Anna írta.
    the book-ACC the shop.window-INE Anna wrote.DEF
    ‘Anna wrote the book in the shop window.’

    c. *A könyv-ről a kirakat-ban Anna írt.
    the book-DEL
    ‘Anna wrote about the book in the shop window.’

(ii) Postpositional phrases can be “attributivized” through affixing the postposition by -i, a general adjectival derivative affix. The resulting construction is then placed among the “peripheral” adjectives, to the left of the more central ones, and cannot be used predicatively. Note that only postpositions can undergo this process; the alternative strategy for oblique cases is discussed directly below.

(271) a. a polc mögött-i könyv
    the shelf behind-ATTR book
    ‘the book behind the shelf’

    b. *az Ibsen-ről-i könyv
    Ibsen-ELA-ATTR

(iii) The adjectivalizer affix -i also has extensive use in turning unmarked locative expressions into attributes, or sometimes into straightforward adjectives. Any temporally or locatively interpretable noun, including all placenames, can be lexically converted into an adjective capable of occurring either in the noun phrase or the predicate.

(272) a. a budapest-i lány
    the Budapest-ATTR girl
    ‘the girl from Budapest’

    b. a tegnap-i újság
    the yesterday-ATTR paper
    ‘yesterday’s paper’
c. az asztal-i lámpa
   the table-ATTR lamp
   ‘the table lamp’

d. a hav-i előfizetés
   the month-ATTR subscription
   ‘the monthly subscription’

Note that these are positively not compounds in Hungarian, due to the affixation on the modifier. Moreover, as was alluded to above, most of them can serve as ordinary adjectives, although they are hardly gradable.

(iv) Finally, oblique case-marked NPs can be turned into complex attributes by converting them into formally nonfinite active participial phrases by means of the general “dummy” való ‘being’, or other, semantically more or less bleached verbs like történő ‘happening’, szóló lit. ‘speaking; concerned with’.

(273) a. az Anna-val való/történő találkozás
   the Anna-INS being/happening meeting
   ‘the meeting with Anna’

   b. az Ibsen-ről szóló könyv
   the Ibsen-ELA concerned book
   ‘the book about Ibsen’

1.2.5.2.8. Emphatic words

The paradigm identical with that of the reflexive pronoun is used for emphatic pronouns either in front of or following the noun phrase. When to the right of the head NP, they occasionally may be placed further away, though not beyond the focus (marked by bold type). Note that since focus has a particular syntactic position in Hungarian, the sentences containing emphatic words must have focus in them, though not necessarily on the emphatic word itself. The constructions are reminiscent of appositive constructions in that the case of the NP is reiterated on the emphatic pronoun.

(274) a. Tegnap mag-á-val Anná-val találkoztam.
   yesterday self-3SG-INS Anna-INS met.1SG
   ‘Yesterday I met Anna herself.’

   b. Anna-val magá-vel tegnap találkoztam.
   ‘I met Anna herself yesterday.’

   c. Én Anná-val mindannyiszor maga-m találkoztam.
   I.NOM Anna-INS every-time self-1SG.NOM met.1SG
   ‘I met Anna every time myself.’
Another set of words that can be characterized as emphatic are “focus-inducers”, such as csak ‘only’, kizárólag ‘exclusively’, egyedül ‘solely’, and nem ‘not’, among others. If the NP, or for that matter any other phrase, is adjoined by them, they must move into the designated preverbal focus position and be interpreted accordingly. These focussing items are always placed to the left of the phrase.

(275)  
      Anna the Ibsen.ACC story.ACC read  
      ‘Anna has read only the book about Ibsen.’
  b. Anna [nem az Ibsenről szóló könyvet] olvasta.  
      Anna the Ibsen.ACC story.ACC read  
      ‘What Anna read was not the book about Ibsen.’

1.2.5.2.9. Comparative, superlative, and equative structures

The section on degree clauses (1.1.2.4.2.7) discussed the main types of comparative and equative structures; we now survey their properties in relation to NPs, but see also sections 1.8 and 1.9.

Equative structures are generally introduced by the pro-adverbial olyan ‘such’ and have the complementizer mint ‘as’. When they lack the “pointer” olyan, they can be interpreted as nonrestrictive. The distinction is not very well borne out in the English translation; it hinges on whether or not the (elliptic) clause introduced by mint is a necessary or just an incidental constituent, to be omitted at leisure.

(276)  
  a. az olyan unalmas emberek, mint Anna  
      the such boring people as Anna  
      ‘boring people like Anna’=‘people boring to the extent to which Anna is boring’
  b. az unalmas emberek, mint (például) Anna  
      unalmas people than what (example) Anna  
      ‘boring people, like (for example) Anna’

Comparative structures come in two versions: (a) if the comparison is within the NP, the case-marked standard has to be used; (b) if there is a clause expressing the standard, it has to occur outside the NP.

(277)  
  a. Annánál unalmasabb emberek  
      Anna-ADE more-boring people  
      ‘people more boring than Anna’
  b. unalmasabb emberek, mint (amilyen) Anna  
      unalmas people than what Anna  
      ‘people more boring than Anna’

The same distinction applies to quantitative comparisons.
The superlative construction is invariably introduced by the definite article, with the comparative suffix following and the superlative prefix preceding the quantifier or adjective marked.

1.2.5.2.10. Noun complement clauses

A number of nouns may be lexically specified for clausal complements, i.e., the equivalent of that-clauses in English. Strictly speaking, they are not modifiers, since, unlike in the case of, e.g., an adjectival modifier, the head noun must be lexically specified for the possibility of being complemented by a clause. The noun may also determine whether the clause is (a) indicative, (b) interrogative, or (c) whether its predicate is in the subjunctive/imperative. (See Molnár 1982 for an overview.)

We note here that although infinitives do occur in (a) event nominals, i.e., the type of nominalizations that in Grimshaw’s (1990) sense preserve the argument structure of the verb, other types of nouns (b) do not take infinitival complements, even if they are derived from verbs with infinitival
arguments. In this case the corresponding noun can take an oblique case-marked complement (c).

(281)  
a. Anna olvas-ni akar-ás-a érdekes.
   Anna read-INF want-NML-POSS interesting
   ‘Anna's wish to read is interesting.’

b. Anna (*olvas-ni) vágy-a érdekes.
   Anna read-INF desire-POSS interesting
   ‘Anna's desire (to read) is interesting.’

c. Anna vágy-a az olvas-ás-ra érdekes.
   Anna desire-POSS the read-NML-SUB interesting
   ‘Anna's desire for reading is interesting.’

1.2.5.3–5. Order of modifiers

Below a summary is given of the observations relating to the relative order of various structures of modification within the noun phrase reviewed above. Since the order of adjectives was discussed in 1.2.5.2.1, only the order of the items arranged in the subsection is discussed here.

As has been seen, demonstratives are not in complementary distribution with articles, cf. (a); it is the (nominative or dative) possessor noun phrase that they exclude from their own noun phrase, cf. (b). When, however, the possessor noun phrase is in the dative, it can be placed outside the possessive NP and then the external demonstrative is grammatical, cf. (c). The evidence that the dative possessor is not inside the NP comes from focussed constructions illustrated in 1.2.5.2.5.

(282)  
a. az-t a kalap-ot
   that-ACC the hat-ACC
   ‘that hat’

b. * [Péter (-nek) az-t a kalap-já-t]
   Peter -DAT that-ACC the hat-POSS-ACC

c. Péter-nek..[az-t a kalap-já-t]
   ‘that hat of Péter’s’

It then stands to reason to assume that external demonstratives and possessors occupy the same positions in the noun phrase. The rest of the premodifiers are lined up in the following schematic order.
Obviously, positional versions of the same constituent exclude each other: no external demonstrative can cooccur with an internal one, and no dative possessor NP can be followed by a nominative one—multiple possessive constructions are left-branching structures within a possessor NP.

By “attributes” we understand the adverbial premodifiers discussed 1.2.5.2.7, in particular the postpositional and complex ones, which can be optionally placed to the left of the quantifiers, but they can equally well appear in the position of adjectives.

1.3. COORDINATION

1.3.1. Types of coordination

1.3.1.1. Coordinating devices

Following Dik (1968) and Báráti (1994), we differentiate between n-ary and binary means for coordinating sentences and constituents, depending on whether they take an unlimited number of conjuncts or just two. The three n-ary conjunctions—és, meg ‘and’, as well as vagy ‘or’—resemble each other in that they are all “central”, that is, they occur between the two conjuncts, unlike “right-shifted” ones, which appear to the right of the first topicalized phrase in the second conjoined clause. Finally, coordinators may also differ as to whether or not they have to occur in each conjunct, i.e., whether or not they are correlative.

1.3.1.1.1. And-coordination

The general coordinating conjunction is és and its shorter version s. The coordinator meg is also used in the sense of ‘and’; meg has to be central if interpreted as ‘and’-conjunction; pedig has to be right-shifted in the same reading.

a. Péter olvas és Anna tanul.
   Peter reads and Anna studies
b. Péter olvas, meg Anna tanul.
c. Péter olvas, Anna pedig tanul.
   ‘Peter is reading and Anna is studying.’
1.3.1.1.2. But-coordination
Conjunctions expressing contrast are never n-ary, and a large number of them are optionally or obligatorily right-shifted. The two most frequent ones are de and azonban. The contrast between meg and pedig seen above is preserved here in opposite positions: meg is right-shifted and pedig is central. (For more on pedig, see 1.3.1.1.4.)

(285) a. Péter olvas, de/pedig Anna tanul.
   Peter reads but/in turn Anna studies  
b. Péter olvas, azonban/viszont/ellenben Anna tanul.
   however/in-turn/on-the-other-hand  
c. Péter olvas, Anna azonban/viszont/ellenben tanul.
   d. Péter olvas, Anna meg tanul.
   ‘Peter is reading, but/in turn Anna is studying.’

Contrast with a negative first conjunct also makes use of de or azonban if the entire proposition is involved. For contrasting constituents, which is to be discussed in 1.11, hanem ‘but’ is applied. De and hanem are not interchangeable in these positions.

(286) a. Péter nem olvas, de/azonban Anna tanul.
   ‘Peter is not reading, but Anna is studying.’  
b. Péter nem a szobában olvas, hanem a kertben.
   ‘Peter not the room.INE reads but the garden-INE’
   ‘Peter is reading not in the room, but in the garden.’

1.3.1.1.3. Or-coordination
The most common coordinator is the central vagy ‘or’. Although it is usually understood as expressing alternatives (rather than “logically” allowing for all/both conjuncts to be true simultaneously), when one alternative is meant to exclude (all) the other(s), it ceases to be a central conjunction, since it is repeated at the beginning of each conjunct.

(287) a. Péter olvas vagy Anna tanul.
   ‘Peter is reading or Anna is studying.’  
b. Vagy Péter olvas, vagy Anna tanul.
   ‘Either Peter is reading, or Anna is studying.’

A somewhat different (and more archaic) version of the central conjunction is avagy. Alternatives in a concessive clause are introduced by the correlative coordinator akár…akár ‘whether…or’.
Page 104

(288) Akár Péter olvas, akár Anna tanul, szól a rádió.
   ‘Whether Peter is reading or Anna is studying, the radio is on.’

1.3.1.1.4. Other coordinators
In agreement with Bánréti (1994), two more classes of coordinators are distinguished here. One is used to express
an inference relation between the two conjuncts, the other the speaker’s contradictory expectations as regards the
first conjunct. These shades of meaning are difficult to render in English by means of the single conjunctions of
reason and contrast so and but, respectively.

(289) a. Anna tanul, tehát/ezért nem szól a rádió.
    Anna studies so not speaks the radio
    ‘Anna is studying, so the radio is not on.’
   b. Nem szól a rádió, ugyanis Anna tanul.
    ‘The radio is not on, for Anna is studying.’

(290) a. Anna tanul, holott/pedig szól a rádió.
    Anna studies but/although speaks the radio
    ‘Anna is studying, but the radio is on.’
   b. Szól a rádió, Anna mégis tanul.
    ‘The radio is on, still/even so Anna is studying.’

1.3.1.2. Number of coordinators
Each of the n-ary coordinators és, meg ‘and’, vagy ‘or’ can be placed between the other conjunct clauses in addition
to their obligatory position between the last pair—if and only if they occur between every pair of clauses. That is,
once they are placed between any other than the last pair of clauses, they have to appear between all pairs. While
the insertion of these conjunctions does not lead to ungrammaticality, the sentences are far better if the
coordinators appear between the last two conjuncts only.
By definition the binary conjunctions can (and have to) occur only between the two clauses concerned. All of these
coordinators differ from the correlative conjunctions, which have to appear in each conjunct. One such example
(akár...akár) was discussed in the previous section.
Other correlative coordinators are the affirmative is...is ‘also’, historically related to és ‘and’, or the negative sem...
sem ‘neither...nor’, which may involve negative concord, a frequent phenomenon in Hungarian, often referred to by
the misnomer “multiple negation”.

1.3.1.3–5. Coordination of constituents

In general, though not without exceptions, only the n-ary coordinators és, meg ‘and’, vagy ‘or’ can occur within syntactic constituents, and even if correlative coordinators are also possible, their status as coordinators of constituents (rather than of elliptic clauses) is doubtful, since they cannot form a single constituent out of the conjoined items.

(292) a. Anna (is) olvas, és Péter is (olvas).
   Anna also reads and Peter also reads
   ‘Anna is reading and Peter, too, is reading.’

b. Anna is, Péter is olvas.
   ‘Anna is reading and Peter, too, is reading.’

(293) a. Anna-t nem/sem láttam, és Péter-t sem
   Anna-ACC not saw.DEF.1SG and Peter-ACC nor
   (láttam).
   saw.DEF.1SG
   ‘I didn’t see Anna, nor (did I see) Peter.’

b. Sem Anná-t, sem Péter-t nem láttam.
   ‘I saw neither Anna nor Peter.’

As is well-known, the identity of the syntactic categories of the constituent is a necessary, but not sufficient condition of coordination. The only apparent exception to this generalization is found in question-word questions, but, according to Bánréti (1992), these are undoubtedly instances of elliptical clausal coordination.

(294) a. *Anna és könyv-et olvasott tegnap.
   Anna and book-ACC read yesterday
   ‘Who read yesterday and what (did s/he read)’

b. Ki és mi-t olvasott tegnap?
   who and what-ACC read yesterday
   ‘Who read yesterday and what (did s/he read)?’
The condition of categorial identity is not sufficient because the conjoined constituents not only have to be of the same class or carry the same suffixes, but they also have to assign or have to be assigned identical thematic roles. In fact, for instance in the case of place adverbials, it is the identity of the semantic relationship that matters notwithstanding the affixes proper.

(295)  

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Example</th>
<th>Translation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>a. *Anna bámul és hasonlít Péter-re.</td>
<td>Anna stares and resembles Peter-SUB</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>b. *Anna ismeri és üti Péter-t.</td>
<td>Anna knows and beats Peter-ACC</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>c. *Péter régi-nék és Anná-nak tartja a lámpá-t.</td>
<td>Peter old-DAT and Anna-DAT hold.DEF.3SG the lamp-ACC</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>d. A könyvek az asztalon és a székek mögött vannak.</td>
<td>The books are on the table and behind the chairs.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

With these caveats in mind, identical syntactic categories can be coordinated without difficulty. The accepted constituency test in Hungarian is based on the observation that focussed items must be single constituents. Although the test itself is not illustrated here in each case, its application has supported our claims throughout.

The first set of examples for coordination is drawn from NPs. They show (a) NPs, (b) external demonstratives, (c) dative possessor NPs, (d) nominative possessor NPs, (e) numerals, (f) adjectives, and (g) nouns.

(296)  

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Example</th>
<th>Translation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>a. Tegnap [Anna és Péter] olvasott.</td>
<td>Yesterday Anna and Peter read.3SG</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>b. Anna [ezeket és azokat] a könyveket] olvasta.</td>
<td>Anna these.ACC and those.ACC the books.ACC read.DEF.3SG</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
The coordination of verb phrases per se is either questionable or impossible to illustrate for the following reasons: (a) in finite clauses, what appears to be VP-coordination is based on the absence of the subject, which may be due to the suppression of the subject pronoun; (b) in nonfinite structures, on the other hand, coordination may well operate on the entire infinitival or participial clause, whose subject is missing by definition.

(297) a. Anna [[olvassa a könyvet] és [hallgatja a rádiót]]
    Anna reads.DEF the book.ACC and listens.DEF the radio.ACC
    ‘Anna is reading the book and is listening to the radio.’

b. Anna igyekszik [[olvásni a könyvet] és [hallgatni a rádiót]]
    strives read-INF listen-INF
    ‘Anna strives to read the book and listen to the radio.’

Verbs, however, can be conjoined, provided their thematic structures are identical, as was pointed out above.

(298) a. Anna ismeri és szereti Péter-t.
    Anna knows.DEF and likes.DEF Peter-ACC
    ‘Anna knows and likes Peter.’

b. Mi bízunk és hiszünk bennetek.
    we trust and believe in-you
    ‘We trust and believe in you.’

Various semantic subclasses of adverbials of manner and purpose can also be coordinated, but place and time adverbials must belong to separate...
Page 108

constituents. In general, adverbials that can cooccur without coordination cannot be conjoined. This is illustrated by an illicit conjunction of a sentence adverbial with a manner adverb.

(299) a. Anna megbízhatóan és magas fizetés-ért dolgozott.
   Anna reliably and high salary-CAU worked
   ‘Anna worked reliably and for a high salary.’

   Peter yesterday and London-INE worked

The coordination of adjectives with active and passive participle constructions is illustrated below in (a) and (b), respectively, and that of nouns and (result) nominalizations in (c). Event nominalizations cannot be conjoined with lexical nouns, see (d). For the distinction arising from the difference of the attributive affix -i, which defines result nominals, and való, which determines event nominal, see Szabolcsi (1994).

(300) a. a [[gyorsan olvas-ó] és értelmes] diákok
   the fast read-APRT and smart students
   ‘the fast reading and smart students’

b. a[[tegnap olvas-ott] vagy unalmas] könyvek
   the yesterday read-PPRT or boring books
   ‘the books read yesterday or which are boring’

c. Anna [előadás-a és [ebéd után-i felszólal-ás-a]]
   Anna lecture-POSS and lunch after-ATTR present-NML-POSS
   ‘Anna’s lecture and presentation [result] after lunch’

d. *Anna [előadás-a és [ebéd után való felszólal-ás-a]]
   being
   ‘Anna’s lecture and presentation [event] after lunch’

The last configuration to be mentioned here is the coordination of first constituents of compounds.

(301) a. cipő- és csizma-javítás
   shoe and boot repair

b. három- és négy-láb-ú asztalok
   three- and four-leg-ged tables

Although the means of coordination and the expression of accompaniment are not the same, in one instance they are interchangeable. When the (human) subject is a coordinated NP, there is an alternative device
available, viz., using one of the conjuncts as subject, and the other in a comitative expression marked by the usual comitative suffix (glossed as “COM” below), which is identical with the instrumental case suffix. In case of a pronominal subject, often the plural is used instead of the singular.

(302) a. A fiúk a lányok-kal olvasnak.
    the boys the girls-INS read.3PL
    ‘The boys and the girls are reading.’

b. Anná-val olvas-t-uk a könyvet.
    Anna-COM read-PAST-1PL the book.ACC
    ‘Anna and I have read the book.’

Finally, the exceptional conjunction in the coordination of constituents has to be mentioned here. The n-ary conjunctions can coordinate an unlimited number of items without respect to their semantic relationship. Some binary conjunctions, on the other hand, can indicate contrast, especially between adjectives (or attributes) and adverbials, respectively.

(303) a. az [érdekes, de hosszú] könyvek
    the interesting but long books

b. Anna [megbízhatóan, viszont kis fizetésért] dolgozik
    Anna reliably but small salary.CAU works
    ‘Anna works reliably, but for a small salary.’

1.3.2. Omission of constituents
As Bánréti (1992, 1994) has argued, the omission of constituents is governed by structural properties, in particular, whether the sentence is focussed or neutral. If the parallelism of the two clauses obtains, everything can be deleted following the last focussed (i.e., heavily accented) preverbal operator, which can be either a quantifier or a contrastive focus. (Contrastive focus is indicated by bold type; parallel structures are shown by the vertical arrangement of identical constituents and the omitted constituent by dots in brackets. For more on focus, see 1.11.)

(304) Annaminden könyvet el-olvasott tegnap,
    Anna every book.ACC PFX-read yesterday
    Péter pedig minden levelet […]
    Peter and every letter.ACC
    ‘Anna read every book yesterday, and Peter read every letter yesterday.’
a. Anna a könyvet olvasta tegnap a kertben,
   Péter pedig a levelet […]
   ‘Anna read the book yesterday, and Peter the letter.’

b. Anna tegnap olvasta a könyvet,
   Péter pedig ma […]
   ‘Anna read the book yesterday, and Peter today.’

If the first clause has a negated focussed constituent, then everything apart from the focus may delete from the second clause. In this case no different constituents can appear to the left of the focus, unlike the positive case above.

(306) a. Nem a könyvet olvasta Anna tegnap a kertben,
   hanem a levelet […]
   ‘It's not the book but the letter that Anna read yesterday in the garden.’

b. Anna nem tegnap olvasta a könyvet,
   (*Péter) hanem ma […]
   ‘It's not yesterday that Anna read the book, but today.’

It is in this group of ellipsis that some of the correlative constructions discussed in the previous section belong: is ‘too, also’, and sem ‘neither, nor’ behave like operators and induce the omission of identical constituents. They differ from the construction immediately above in that omission here may extend to the focussed item.

(307) a. Anna tegnap olvasta a könyvet,
   és Péter is […]
   ‘Anna read the book yesterday, and so did Peter.’

b. Tegnap nem a könyvet olvasta Anna,
   és ma sem […]
   ‘Anna didn't read the book yesterday, nor did she read it today.’
The correlative is, like its nonclitic counterpart szintén 'too', which carries heavy accent, especially in elliptic constructions, can also occur in neutral coordination with ellipsis in the second clause.

(308) a. Anna elolvasta a könyvet tegnap, és Péter is/szintén.
   Anna read.DEF the book.ACC yesterday and Peter too
   ‘Anna read the book yesterday, and Peter, too, read it
   yesterday.’

b. Anna elolvasta a könyvet tegnap, és a levelet
   and the letter.ACC
   is/szintén.
   too
   ‘Anna read the book yesterday, and the letter, too.’

Another variety of focussed ellipsis is to omit all the identical postverbal material from the first, rather than from the second conjunct, as has been illustrated so far.

(309) a. Anna **a könyvet [...]**,  
   Anna the book.ACC
   Péter pedig **a levelet** olvasta a kertben.  
   Peter in-turn the letter.ACC read.DEF the garden.INE
   ‘Anna read the book, and Peter the letter, in the garden.’

b. A kertben nem **a könyvet [...]**,  
   the garden.INE not the book.ACC
   hanem **a levelet** olvasta Anna.  
   but the letter.ACC read.DEF Anna
   ‘In the garden Anna read not the book, but the letter.’

As was mentioned in connection with the structure of the NP in 1.2.5.1, numerals and adjectives can appear as elliptic NPs. This property is evidenced in coordinate constructions, as well.

(310) a. Péter **négy könyv-et olvasott**,  
   Peter four book-ACC read
   Anna meg **hat-ot [...]**  
   Anna and six-ACC
   ‘Peter has read four books, and Anna six ones.’

b. Anna az **érdekes könyv-et olvasta**,  
   Anna the interesting book-ACC read.DEF
   Péter pedig az **unalmas-at [...]**  
   Peter in-turn the boring-ACC
   ‘Anna has read the interesting book, and Peter the boring one.’
If, however, the ellipsis is at work in the first clause, the numeral or the adjective must not be case-marked, but the identical constituents are simply omitted.

(311) a. Péter négy [...],
    Anna meg hat könyv-et olvasott.
    ‘Peter has read four books, and Anna six.’

b. Anna az érdekes [...],
    Péter pedig az unalmas könyv-et olvasta.
    ‘Anna has read the interesting book, and Peter the boring one.’

The deletion under identity can only involve immediate constituents of the noun phrase; constituents of constituents cannot be affected.

When the adjective phrases are in the predicate, the different intensifiers may also lead to ellipsis. This is not available for adjectives inside the noun phrase.

(312) A könyv nagyon [...],
    a level viszont csak kisé unalmas volt.
    ‘The book was very boring, but the letter was only a little boring.’

Owing to the structure of ellipsis in Hungarian, even postpositions may be missing from the first conjunct.

(313) Anna a könyv [...],
    Anna the book
    Péter pedig a levél alatt talált egy kulcsot.
    ‘Anna found a key under the book, and Peter, under the letter.’

1.4. NEGATION
1.4.1. Sentence negation
In sentence negation, the negation elements nem, ne must occur in front of the finite or nonfinite verb.

(314) a. Anna nem olvassa a könyv-et.
    Anna not reads.DEF the book-ACC
    ‘Anna is not reading the book.’

b. [a [könyv-et nem olvas-ó] diákok]
    the book-ACC not read-APRT students
    ‘the students not reading books’
Page 113

c. [Ez a könyv-et nem olvas-ni] butaság volt.
\(\text{this.ACC the book-ACC not read-1NF silliness was}\)
\(\text{It was silly not to read this book.}\)

Ne differs from nem in that it is required in imperatives and subjunctives and cannot occur in any other modality.

\(\text{(315) Ne olvas-d a könyvet! not read-2SG the book.ACC}\)
\(\text{‘Don't read the book.’}\)

The preverbal position of the negation word is maintained even in focussed clauses; it is the only item that can occur between a focussed phrase and the finite verb.

\(\text{(316) Anna a könyvet nem olvasta.}\)
\(\text{Anna the book.ACC not read.DEF}\)
\(\text{‘It’s the book that Anna hasn't read.’}\)

When the additive-correlative clitic is is combined with either negation word, they are amalgamated into the single phonological words sem and se, historically derived from is ‘also’+ne(m) ‘not’, appropriately illustrating the meaning of the combined form, too.

\(\text{(317) a. Anna a könyv-et sem olvasta.}\)
\(\text{Anna the book-ACC nor read.}\)
\(\text{‘Anna hasn't read the book either.‘=In addition to other things, the book also belongs to the set of objects Anna hasn’t read.’}\)

\(\text{b. A könyv-et se olvas-d!}\)
\(\text{the book-ACC not read-IMP.DEF.2SG}\)
\(\text{‘Don't read the book either!’}\)

One subcase of sentence negation is negation of the nominal or adjectival predicate in copular sentences without an overt copula (see 1.2.1.1). Since they have no verbs, the negation word must occur before the nominal or adjectival predicate.

\(\text{(318) a. Anna nem (volt) diák.}\)
\(\text{Anna not was student}\)
\(\text{‘Anna is/was not a student.’}\)

\(\text{b. Péter nem (volt) unalmas.}\)
\(\text{Peter not was boring}\)
\(\text{‘Peter is/was not boring.’}\)

When the nominal predicate contains a measure expression, negation can have two versions: (a) if the measure word (in focus) is negated, it means
that there is either more or less of the item quantified by the measure expression; (b) if the copula is negated, the construction means that there is less of the denoted quantity.

(319) a. Péter nem száz kiló volt.
   Peter not hundred kilo was
   ‘Peter wasn’t a hundred kilos (= he was more, or less).’
b. Péter nem volt száz kiló.
   ‘Peter was less than a hundred kilos.’

Wherever the copula has to occur in the third person in present tense, the positive form van(nak) ‘is’ has the suppletive negative counterpart nincs(en) ‘not-is’ and nincsenek ‘not-are’.

(320) a. Péter nincs száz kiló.
   Peter not-is hundred kilo
   ‘Peter isn’t a hundred kilos (= he is less).’
b. A diákok nincsenek az iskolában.
   the students not-are the school-INE
   ‘The students are not in the school.’

1.4.2. Constituent negation

Although it seems to be unproblematic to claim that whenever the negation word is placed in front of any constituent other than the verb, we have to do with constituent negation, this would be a spurious generalization. First of all, if the sentence contains a universal quantifier, it must be negated by the negation word placed in front of the quantifier, rather than preverbally, thus in this case apparent constituent negation amounts to sentence negation.

(321) a. *Mindenki nem olvasta a könyvet.
   everyone not read.DEF the book.ACC
   ‘Everyone didn’t read the book.’
b. Nem mindenki olvasta a könyvet.
   ‘Not everyone has read the book.’

If the negation of the focussed constituent is constituent negation, then pre-focus negation belongs here. In another sense, however, such sentences are the negative counterparts of the corresponding affirmative focussed propositions, thus they do not realize constituent negation proper.
Page 115

(322) a. Anna a kert-ben olvasta a könyvet.
   Anna the garden-INE read.DEF the book.ACC
   ‘It’s in the garden that Anna read the book.’

b. Anna nem a kert-ben olvasta a könyvet.
   ‘It’s not in the garden that Anna read the book.’

On the other hand, if focus negation were sentence negation, then negative polarity items, which are always triggered by sentence negation, could appear in these sentences, too.

(323) a. Anna nem olvasott semmi-t.
   Anna not read nothing-ACC
   ‘Anna didn’t read anything.’

b. *Anna nem a kert-ben olvasott semmi-t.

c. Anna a kert-ben nem olvasott semmi-t.
   ‘It’s in the garden that Anna didn’t read anything.’

d. Anna nem a kert-ben nem olvasott semmi-t.
   ‘It’s not in the garden that Anna didn’t read anything.’

We conclude at this point that, of the two negation elements, the one occurring in front of focus is a realization of constituent negation and the one in front of the verb is an instance of sentence negation.

1.4.3. Negative concord and multiple negation

As was illustrated immediately above, it is possible to have more than one negative element in a single clause and, depending on the items and the arrangements, the sentence may be negative or may ultimately come down as positive.

The latter case obtains in case of focus negation coupled with preverbal negation. The last example in the previous section is compatible with a positive reading, viz., that Anna did read something in the garden, even though it does not assert this proposition. Interaction between focus and negation results in a positive reading in other instances as well. In the following example the universal negative polarity item senki ‘no one’ is followed by a negated focus, and the resulting reading is identical with a universally quantified positive proposition.

(324) Senki sem ezt a könyvet olvasta.
   no one not this the book.ACC read
   ‘No one has read this book.’ ‘Everyone has read a book other than this one.’

Negative concord, which is often mistakenly called “multiple negation”, is a pervasive feature of Hungarian. It extends over two kinds of
structure. In the first one, the additive clitic is ‘also’ occurs in a negative sentence and is changed into its negative counterpart se(m) ‘neither, nor’. If the constituent marked by the clitic is (a) preverbal, preverbal sem serves as the only negation element in the sentence. If it is (b) postverbal, the negation element nem ‘not’ has to occur in its general preverbal position, and the constituent itself is marked by se(m).

(325)  a. Anna sem olvasta a könyvet.
   Anna neither read the book.ACC
   ‘(In addition to others,) Anna, too, didn’t read the book.’
   b. Nem olvasta a könyvet Anna sem.
   ‘(In addition to others,) Anna, too, didn’t read the book.’

If more than one item is additively negated in a single constituent, either (a) a simple coordination with a final clitic sem is used, or (b) each conjunct has its own negative clitic, or (c) sem occurs in front of each conjunct as a correlative additive negation word with obligatory clausemate preverbal negation. If (d) the additively negated phrase is postverbal, preverbal negation is necessary in each alternative, of which only one is illustrated here. As before, except for the simple coordination in (a), the status of the conjoined items as parts of a single constituent is doubtful; for more, see the next section.

(326)  a. Richárd, Anna és Péter sem olvasta a könyvet.
   Richard, Anna and Peter nor read.DEF the book.ACC
   ‘Neither Richard, nor Anna, nor Peter has read the book.’
   (On one reading. The other reading is ‘Richard, Anna, and Peter
   are also among those that haven’t read the book.’)
   b. unambiguous
   Richárd sem, Anna sem, Péter sem olvasta a könyvet.
   ‘Neither Richard, nor Anna, nor Peter has read the book.’
   c. unambiguous
   Sem Richard, sem Anna, sem Péter nem olvasta a könyvet.
   ‘Neither Richard, nor Anna, nor Peter has read the book.’
   d. unambiguous
   Nem olvasta a könyvet sem Richard, sem Anna, sem Péter.
   ‘Neither Richard, nor Anna, nor Peter has read the book.’

The other context for negative concord is provided by universal negative polarity items (UNPIs) like senki ‘nobody’, semmi ‘nothing’, etc. They all require clausemate preverbal negation, and since they optionally combine with the negative counterpart of the additive clitic is, a regularity similar to what was seen above is in force. That is, when the universal negative polarity item is (a) preverbal, either the general negation word
nem ‘not’ or its version incorporating the additive clitic is, i.e., se(m), has to occur. If it is (b) postverbal, nem is the only choice preverbally, and the UNPI can be followed by an optional clitic se(m). Cf. also Toth (forthcoming).

(327)  
a. Anna semmi-t sem/nem olvasott.
    Anna nothing-ACC not read
    ‘Anna hasn’t read anything.’

b. Anna nem olvasott semmit (sem).
    ‘Anna hasn’t read anything.’

Multiple UNPIs observe the same rule: they can be arranged both preverbally and postverbally in a single clause, and if at least one of them occurs preverbally the negation word can take the form sem.

(328)  
a. Senki soha sem/nem olvasott semmi-t.
    No one never not read nothing-ACC
    ‘No one has ever read anything.’

b. Senki sem/nem olvasott soha semmit (sem).
    ‘No one has ever read anything.’

c. Nem olvasott senki soha semmit (sem).
    ‘No one has ever read anything.’

1.4.4. Negation in coordination

As was mentioned in 1.3.1.3–5, correlative negative coordinators do not, beyond all doubt, form a single constituent out of the conjoined phrases. The difficulty encountered in ascertaining the constituency of such conjunctions originates in the prohibition against focussing them, focus being the only position in which constituency can be tested in Hungarian. Since is- or sem-phrases convey a meaning involving addition, the sense of exclusion by identity associated with the focus position prevents them from being placed there. In other words, if identical syntactic constituents are conjoined by the negative correlative sem, we have no means to determine whether they belong to a single constituent or are parts of an elliptic coordinate sentence.

(329)  
a. Sem Richárd, sem Anna, sem Péter nem olvasta a
    könyvet.
    ‘Neither Richard, nor Anna, nor Peter has read the book.’
Page 118

b. Sem Richárd (nem olvasta a könyvet), sem Anna (nem olvasta a könyvet), sem Péter nem olvasta a könyvet.
Neither Richard, nor Anna, nor Peter has read the book.

Indirect evidence can be found in coordinate sentences containing non-identical, thus inomissible, constituents. Since sem acts as a correlative in an identical manner, we have reason to suppose that it is a clausal correlative conjunction whenever it is preposed.

(330) Sem Anna nem olvasott a kertben, sem Péter nem tanult a szobában.
Neither Anna was reading in the garden, nor Peter was studying in the room.

Given the historical evidence that sem is derived from is ‘also’+nem ‘not’, and that is is related to és ‘and’, the status of sem as a conjunction seems to be corroborated.

1.4.5. Negative raising

A small class of verbs expressing mental states show the effects of what has come to be called negative raising. It is in fact a paraphrase relation between a pair of sentences, of which one has negation in the subordinate clause, and the other in the main clause.

(331)

a. Azt hiszem, hogy Anna nem olvas.
   ‘I think Anna isn’t reading.’

b. Nem hiszem, hogy Anna olvas.
   ‘I don’t think Anna’s reading.’

If the subordinate clause contains an UNPI, such as senki ‘no one’, which can occur only in the context of clausemate negation, and the negation word is in the main clause, the UNPI has to change into an existential negative polarity item (ENPI), formed from the existential quantifier valaki ‘someone’ and the clitic is. (Note that the term “existential” refers to this circumstance rather than the meaning of the ENPI in this construction-type.)
a. Azt hiszem, hogy Anna nem olvasott semmi-t.
   it.ACC think.DEF.1SG that Anna not read nothing-ACC (sem).
   nor
   'I think Anna hasn’t read anything.'

b. Nem hiszem, hogy Anna olvasott valami-t is.
   not think.DEF.1SG that Anna read anything-ACC CL
   'I don’t think Anna has read anything.'

In contrast with UNPIs in Hungarian, and NPIs such as anything in English, ENPIs in Hungarian cannot coocur with clausemate negation, although, similarly to NPIs in English, they are licit in questions.

(333) a. *Azt hiszem, Anna nem olvasott valamit is.
   b. Kétlem, hogy Anna olvasott-e valamit is.
   doubt.DEF.1SG that Anna read-Q anything CL
   'I doubt if Anna has read anything.'

Although the negation word does not raise out of the subordinate clause, UNPIs can in fact move into a higher sentence. In this case, the two sentences cease to be paraphrases of each other, since the scope of the moved quantifier is wider than that of the one in the lower clause.

(334) a. Azt hiszem, hogy Anna semmi-t sem olvasott.
   it.ACC think.DEF.1SG that Anna nothing-ACC not read
   'I think that Anna has read nothing.'

b. Semmi-t sem hisz-ek, hogy Anna olvasott.
   nothing-ACC not think-1SG that Anna read
   'For no x do I think that Anna has read x.'

"Negative raising" works only if the negation in the lower clause has wide scope there. If negation is in scope there, no paraphrase is possible along the lines presented. The following pair illustrates this, since the translations show the lack of equivalence.

(335) a. Azt hiszem, hogy Anna sem olvas.
   it.ACC think.DEF.1SG that Anna nor reads
   'I think that Anna, too, is not reading.'

b. Nem hiszem, hogy Anna is olvas.
   not think.DEF.1SG that Anna also reads
   'I don’t think that Anna, too, is reading.'
1.5. ANAPHORA
1.5.1. Means for expressing anaphora

1.5.1.1–2. Deletion

Subject and (singular) object anaphoric pronouns can be dropped. Since (nominative) possessor pronouns in possessive constructions can also be omitted, conditions of deletion may depend on case rather than on function. Zero signs stand for deleted pronouns, though the positions they are in do not necessarily correspond to their actual sites, as will be seen below.

(336) a. Annai megvette a könyvetj, de Øi nem olvassa Øj
   ‘Anna has bought the book but she isn’t reading it.’
   b. A fiúki megvették a könyveketj, de Øi nem olvassák
      öket/*Ø
   ‘The boys have bought the books, but they are not reading them.’
   c. Annai olvassa a Øi könyv-é-t.
      ‘Anna is reading her book.’

Since Hungarian has both subject and (definite) object agreement marked on the verb, and agreement with the possessor is marked on the possessed noun, the deleted pronouns are recoverable.

1.5.1.3. Personal pronouns

As was mentioned above, if the object is plural, the personal pronoun has to be used in back-reference. It is also used for both [+human] subject and object if they are placed in any of the preverbal positions, such as topic, focus, or in the is-phrase. (First clauses are not given here.)

(337) a. ...de ö nem olvas.
    but she not reads
   ‘...but she’s not reading.’
   b. ...de nem ö olvas.
    but not she reads
   ‘...but it isn’t her that’s reading.’
Page 121

C. …de ő sem olvás.
   but she nor reads
   ‘…but she, too, is not reading.’

In the preverbal positions personal pronominal objects can be used in reference to persons only. Thus, postverbal positions are seen as “weak”, allowing appropriate pronouns to be dropped (if in subject or object position), or assume the form of a personal pronoun (in all other cases), while preverbal positions appear to be “strong”, ruling out pronoun deletion or personal pronouns acting as general anaphoric devices.

(338) a. Anna olvasta a könyvet, de nem beszélt ról-á.
   Anna read.DEF the book-ACC but not spoke DEL-3SG
   ‘Anna had read the book, but she didn’t speak about it.’
   b. Anna olvasta a könyveket, de nem beszélt ról-uk.
   Anna read.DEF the book-PL-ACC but not spoke DEL-3PL
   ‘Anna had read the books, but she didn’t speak about them.’

(339) a. …de őket nem látta Anna.
   but them not saw.DEF Anna
   ‘…but Anna didn’t see them [+human].’
   b. …de Anna nem látta őket.
   ‘…but Anna didn’t see them [±human].’

A similar regularity is discussed in relation to personal and demonstrative pronouns directly.

1.5.1.4. Reflexive pronouns

Coreference between constituents of the same clause is realized by means of reflexive pronouns, which can be case-marked as ordinary NPs. There is a slight uncertainty as to the actual form of the reflexive paradigm since there are at least four competing versions available: mag-a ‘self-POSS.3SG’, ön-mag-a ‘one-self-POSS.3SG’, saját-maga ‘own-self-POSS.3SG’, and ő-mag-a ‘s/he-self-POSS.3SG’ (especially in oblique cases), every one of which can be declined in the possessive paradigm in number and person, and that is how person-marking is made possible in reflexive pronouns. Although the glosses given here are by and large adequate, the stem of the reflexive pronoun is not regarded by speakers of Hungarian as having independent meaning, such as ‘self’ assigned to it below.

(340) a. Anna látja mag-át.
   Anna sees.DEF self-POSS.3SG-ACC
   ‘Anna sees herself.’
b. A fiúk látkák mag-uk-at.
The boys see.DEF self-POSS.3PL-ACC
‘The boys see themselves.’

In the possessive construction, the identity of the possessor with one or another constituent of the same clause is usually indicated, not by a reflexive pronoun (although it is not prohibited), but by the attribute saját ‘own’.

(341) a. Anna a saját könyv-é-t olvassa
Anna the own book-POSS-ACC reads.DEF
‘Anna is reading her own book.’
b. Anna ?*önmaga/a maga/sajátmaga könyv-é-t olvassa.
‘Anna is reading her own book.’

This may be due to the fact that the reflexive paradigm is also used for emphatic pronouns, even in (pro-dropped) subject positions—with the possible exception of önmaga, etc.

(342) a. (Péter) (saját)maga olvassa a könyvet.
‘Peter/He is reading the book himself.’
b. ?*Péter önmaga olvassa a könyvet.

1.5.1.5. Demonstrative anaphoric pronouns
The nonproximate demonstrative pronoun provides the “missing link” in preverbal position for reference to nonhuman objects in all syntactic functions.

(343) a. *Anna olvasta a könyv-et, de nem ról-a beszélt
Anna read.DEF the book.ACC but not DEL-3SG spoke
b. Anna olvasta a könyv-et, de nem ar-ról beszélt.
that-DEL
‘Anna had read the book, but she didn’t speak about it.’

The demonstrative is also used postverbally in reference to [-human] subjects and singular objects, since their “weak” version is not the corresponding personal pronoun, but the deleted form, as was seen above. Note that since the postverbal site is, as a rule, a “weak” position, overt pronouns are in general seen as awkward.

(344) a. A könyv le-esett, de Anna fel-emelt-e
the book down-fell but Anna up-picked-DEF.3SG
Ø/?az-t/*ő-t.
Ø/that/he-ACC
‘The book fell down but Anna picked it up.’
Another use of the demonstrative az ‘that’ constitutes a case of “switch reference”, in which the subject of the first clause becomes the object of the second one, and vice versa, provided both are [+human]. Here the preferred distribution of pronominals preserves the personal pronoun for the former subject and renders the former object as a demonstrative in the second clause (Pléh and Radics 1978).

(345) a. Richárdi láttja Pétert, de Ői nem köszönt neki
    ‘Richardi saw Peter, but he didn’t greet him.’
    b. Richárdi láttja Pétert, de azj nem köszönt neki
    ‘Richardi saw Peterj, but hej didn’t greet himi.’

This alternation may be due to the more “highlighted” position of the subject in the second conjunct; in fact, the “switch” may just as well be executed by means of the overt personal pronoun Ő here, which indicates that the default case of pronoun omission is compatible with identical subjects, while overt pronouns, whether personal or demonstrative, signal a change of subjects across clauses.

1.5.1.6. Other means

In place of pronominal cross-reference, various expressions can be used, such as (a) NPs complete with demonstratives and (b) anaphoric epithets.

(346) a. Shaw érdekesebb Wilde-nál, de ezt a szerzőt
    Shaw more interesting Wilde-ADE but this the author.ACC
    a kortársaik jobban szerették mint azt.
    the their.contemporaries better liked.DEF than that.ACC
    ‘Shaw is more interesting than Wilde, but their contemporaries
    preferred this author [Wilde] to that one [Shaw].’
    b. Péter olvasta a könyvet, de a hülye nem emlékszik
    Peter read.DEF the book.ACC but the idiot not remembers
    rá.
    it.SUP
    ‘Peter has read the book but the idiot doesn’t remember it.’
1.5.2. Domains of anaphora

1.5.2.1. Within the clause

If there are coreferential constituents within the same clause, except for the one highest in the hierarchy of syntactic functions (or cases), they must take the form of reflexive pronouns. The hierarchy itself can be seen as having the subject (or nominative) at the top, and the “more” oblique NPs at the bottom (cf. E. Kiss 1987).

(347) a. Anna látja önmagát-t.
   Anna sees.DEF self-ACC
   ‘Anna sees herself.’

b. Annát megmutattam önmagá-nak.
   Anna-ACC showed.DEF.1SG self-DAT
   ‘I showed Anna to herself.’

c. Annának sokat írtam önmagáról.
   Anna-DAT much wrote.1SG self-DEL
   ‘I have written a lot to Anna about herself.’

d. *Annáról sokat írtam önmagának.

If the coreferential NP is in a postpositional phrase, usually reflexives are rejected and personal pronouns are used.

(348) Péter nem beszél Annáról *önmaga mögött/mögött-e.
   Peter not speaks Anna.DEL self behind/behind-3SG
   ‘Peter doesn’t speak of Anna behind herself/her.’

If the coreferential NP is a possessor in a possessive NP, it is almost always omitted. If the pronoun is overt, the preferred reading is disjoint reference with respect to any other constituent in the same clause. In other words, omission of the pronoun is compatible with both clausemate or non-clausemate coreference.

(349) a. Annai olvasta a Øi/j könyv-é-t.
   Anna read.DEF the book-POSS-ACC
   ‘Annai has read heri/j book.’

b. Annai olvasta az őj könyvét.
   she
   ‘Annai has read herj book.’

1.5.2.2. Between coordinate clauses

As was shown in the previous section, there are various means for expressing coreference in coordinate structures, depending on syntactic
functions and positions, and whether the NP has +or—human reference. Naturally, in coordinate structures it is always the first one of the two coreferential NPs that must be in full form. In short, coreferential NPs in the second conjunct observe the following regularities. (For more on coreference relations between different clauses, see Kenesei 1994.)

(350) a. If the NP coreferential with some NP in the first clause is [+human], then it is a personal pronoun, and if postverbal, it can be dropped in subject, and, if singular, also in object positions; if preverbal, the pronouns remain overt.

b. If the NP coreferential with some NP in the first clause is [−human], it has the form of the demonstrative az ‘that’, but if it is postverbal and not a subject or singular object, it can be the corresponding personal pronoun.

c. If there are two pairs of coreferential [+human] NPs, there is a marked preference for a (possibly omitted) personal pronoun in the subject of the second clause to refer back to the subject of the first one, and for a demonstrative to refer back to the nonsubject of the first clause.

Other expressions, such as NPs with demonstratives or anaphoric epithets, are also applicable.

1.5.2.3. Between superordinate and subordinate clauses

In contrast with coordinate structures, the order of the antecedent and anaphoric NP is not fixed in these structures. However, two subcases have to be distinguished.

The first subclass of clauses, which is called here independent subordination, is not embedded into or lexically governed by any constituent in the main clause. If such a clause precedes the main clause, either the antecedent or the anaphoric NP can occur in it, with the other one in the main clause.

(351) a. Bár Annai nem tanul, Øi olvassa a könyvet.
‘Although Anna is not studying, she’s reading the book.’

b. Bár Øi nem tanul, Annai olvassa a könyvet.
‘Although she’s not studying, Anna is reading the book.’

In the reversed order of the clauses the anaphoric NP cannot occur in the main clause.

(352) a. Annai olvassa a könyvet, bár Øi nem tanul.
‘Anna is reading the book, though she’s not studying.’
b. *Ø i olvassa a könyvet, bár Annai nem tanul.
   ‘She is reading the book, though Anna is not studying.’

Note that epithets behave the same way as pronominals—at least for the dialect of Hungarian discussed here. In
another dialect anaphoric NPs in a first clause are unacceptable throughout, and epithets are permissible only in a
second main clause.

The second subclass, dependent subordination, also allows the subordinate clause to be placed before or after the
rest of the main clause. It differs from the previous subclass in two respects: (i) antecedents are forbidden in the
subordinate clause since they would be c-commanded by a coreferential pronoun, and (ii) epithets are disallowed
even in first subordinate clauses, although, as expected, pronominal coreference goes through. (A constituent A c-
commands a constituent B iff every category dominating A also dominates B. For example, a subject c-
commands the object or any constituent in a complement clause, but no object or no constituent in a complement clause can c-
command the (main clause) subject.)

\[(353)\] a. Hogy Ø/*a hülyei elvesztette a kulcsot, Péteri nem
tudta.
   ‘That the idiot lost.DEF the key.ACC Peter not
   knew.DEF’
   b. *Hogy Péteri elvesztette a kulcsot, Øi nem tudta.
   ‘That Peter had lost the key, he didn’t know.’
   c. Péteri nem tudta, hogy Øi elvesztette a kulcsot.
   ‘Peter didn’t know that he’d lost the key.’
   d. *Øi nem tudta, hogy Péteri elvesztette a kulcsot.
   ‘He didn’t know that Peter had lost the key.’

That is, preposed dependent clauses behave as if they were in their “original” positions, and both pronouns and
epithets observe the relevant principle of binding, viz., that referring expressions (antecedents and epithets) cannot
be c-commanded by coreferential items.

Nonfinite clauses differ from finite ones only in that their subjects are necessarily suppressed. Any other anaphoric
NP is pronominalized along the lines discussed so far.

\[(354)\] a. Anna nem szereti [a [ról-a beszélő] lányok-at]
   Anna not likes.DEF the DEL-3SG talk-APRT girls-ACC
   ‘Anna doesn’t like the girls talking about her.’
Page 127

b. Az asztal-t [az-on/rajt-a áll-va]
   the table-ACC that-SUP/SUP-3SG stand-SCVB
   festettem.
   painted.DEF.1SG
   'I painted the table standing on it.'

1.5.2.4. Between different subordinate clauses
What has been said about coreference between main and subordinate clauses obviously carries over to the
relationship of two subordinate clauses if one clause is embedded in another, which is in turn embedded in a third
one.
If some main clause has more than one subordinate clause embedded in it, all combinations are acceptable as long
as the antecedent is not c-commanded by the coreferential pronoun.

(355) a. Bár Øi keveset olvasott, nem tudtam, hogy
    though little read.3SG not knew.DEF.1SG that Anna
    megbukott.
    flunked
    'Although she had read little, I didn't know that Anna had
    flunked.'

b. Bár Anni keveset olvasott, nem tudtam, hogy Øi megbukott.
   'Although Anna had read little, I didn't know that she'd
   flunked.'

(356) a. Azt, hogy Øi megbukott, azért nem értem,
    it.ACC that flunked for.it not understand.DEF.1SG
    mert Annai sokat olvasott.
    because Anna much read
    'I don't understand that she'd flunked because Anna had read a
    lot.'

b. Azt, hogy Annai megbukott, azért nem értem, mert Øi sokat
   olvasott.
   'I don't understand that Anna had flunked because she'd read a
   lot.'

Again, epithets can replace the (empty) pronouns in each example above.
1.5.2.5. Between different sentences

Pronouns, demonstratives, and epithets are used in different sentences according to the regularities observed in coordinate structures, as seen in the following discourses.

(357)  

a. Richárdi látta Péter-tj  
Richard saw Peter-ACC  
‘Richard saw Peter.’

b. Øi köszönt nek-i  
greeted DAT-3SG  
‘Hei greeted himi.’

c. AZj köszönt nek-ii  
‘Hej greeted himi.’

1.6. REFLEXIVES

1.6.1. Means of expressing reflexivity

1.6.1.1. Reflexive pronouns

As was discussed in 1.5.1.4, there are a number of variable nonclitic reflexive pronouns, all based on mag-a ‘self-POSS.3SG’, derived from mag ‘body’ according to the most probable hypothesis. The others are ön-mag-a ‘one-self-POSS.3SG’, ö-mag-a ‘s/he-self-POSS.3SG’, saját-mag-a ‘own-self-POSS.3SG’, and the emphatic reflexives ennen-mag-a ‘one-self-POSS.3SG’ and maga-mag-a ‘self-self-POSS.3SG’. Three of them, i.e., maga, önmaga, and sajátmaga, are widely used with the first and shortest form as the most frequent one. The fourth, ennenmaga is archaic or perhaps even obsolete, but this one just like the other three can be declined in all persons (see 2.1.2.2), unlike the last pronoun, magamaga, whose use is restricted to third person singular.

Although maga is the oldest and most widespread form, since it is homophonous with the distant form of address maga ‘you, Sie, vous’ and also with the emphatic pronoun, the form önmaga serves as the best item to test the distribution of the reflexive.

The reflexive pronoun in object position requires definite object agreement on the verb.

(358)  

A fiúk látják mag-uk-at  
on-mag-uk-at  
ök-et mag-uk-at  
saját-mag-uk-at  
ennen-mag-uk-at  
the boys see.DEF one/own-self-POSS.3PL-ACC  
‘The boys see themselves.’
1.6.1.2. Verbal affix

There is a set of derivative affixes that form reflexive verbs from agentive ones. Although the class is generally characterized as productive, best examples come from activities relating to bodily functions. Analytic reflexive constructions formed by means of the reflexive pronoun are unacceptable or rather clumsy.

(359)

a. Anna fésül-i Péter-t/?mag-á-t.
   Anna combv-DEF.3SG Peter/self-3SG-ACC
   ‘Anna is combing Peter/herself.’

b. Anna fésül-kód-ik.
   Anna combv-REFL-3SG
   ‘Anna is combing herself.’

(360)

a. Ti mos-sá-tok Anná-t/?maga-tok-at.
   you.PL wash-DEF-2PL Anna/self-2PL-ACC
   ‘You are washing Anna/yourselves.’

b. Ti mos-akod-tok.
   you wash-REFL-2PL
   ‘You are washing yourselves.’

1.6.2. The scope of reflexivity

Reflexive pronouns are strictly clausemate. Apparent violations are due to a suppressed identical subject in nonfinite constructions.

(361)

a. Annai olvasta, hogy Péterj látta magá-t/*i
   Anna read.DEF that Peter saw.DEF self-ACC
   ‘Anna likes to read about herself.’

b. Annai szeret olvas-ni magá-róli.
   Anna likes read-INF self-DEL
   ‘Anna likes to read about herself.’

The attributive modifier saját ‘own’ is used in possessive constructions, but since it is not related to either reflexive construction on the one hand, and it can work across clause boundaries (although it always searches for the closest antecedent), we will forgo illustrating it below.

(362)

Anna látta, hogy a sajáti könyv-e is elveszett.
   Anna saw.DEF that the own book-POSS also got-lost
   ‘Anna saw that her own books also got lost.’

1.6.3. Antecedents and functions of the reflexive affix

The reflexivizer affix is restricted to subject antecedents and it operates on direct objects only, as illustrated in the examples above.
1.6.4. Syntactic positions of the reflexive pronoun

Independent of the syntactic functions of constituents in general and reflexive pronouns in particular, various preverbal and postverbal positions are available for the items under discussion. Thus, they can be (a) topic, (b) in an is-quantified phrase, (c) focus, or (d) among the postverbal constituents.

(363) a. Magá-t Anna nagyon szereti.
    self-ACC Anna much likes.DEF
    ‘Anna likes herself very much.’

b. Magá-ról is Péter olvasott a legtöbbet.
    self-DEL also Peter read the most
    ‘Peter has read the most about himself, too.’

c. Anna csak magá-t szereti.
    Anna only self-ACC likes.DEF
    ‘Anna likes only herself.’

d. Péter olvasott magá-ról a legtöbbet.
    ‘Peter has read the most about himself.’

1.6.5. Antecedent-reflexive relations

In the section titles below the first term stands for the antecedent, the second for the reflexive. Functions omitted either do not exist in Hungarian or no reflexive pronoun is possible in those functions.

1.6.5.1. Subject—direct object

(364) Anna látja magá-t.
    ‘Anna sees herself.’

1.6.5.2. Subject—modifier of direct object

Although the attribute saját ‘own’ is used most frequently to identify the possessor with another constituent in the sentence, it is not impossible to use a reflexive pronoun either as a nominative or dative possessor, especially if the topic-focus structure is appropriate.

(365) a. Önmaga/Önmagá-nak a kép-e-i-t csak Péter
    self-NOM/self-DAT the picture-POSS-PL-ACC only Peter
    nézte.DEF
    ‘Only Peter was staring at his own pictures.’

b. Önmaga/Önmagá-nak a kép-e-i-t csak Péter
    self-NOM/self-DAT the picture-POSS-PL-ACC only Peter
    nézte.DEF
    ‘Only Peter was staring at his own pictures.’
Another context in which reflexives are in principle possible is in object, or in general, NP complement functions, studied in some detail by É. Kiss (1987). As was discussed in 1.2.5.2.7, case-marked complement NPs to head nouns are acceptable only if the head noun is in the nominative or accusative; if it is in any other (i.e., oblique) case, the structure is ruled out. Since such NPs form separate domains for coreference relations, reflexive pronouns are grammatical only if they have an antecedent inside the NP, which rules out the subject as immediate antecedent, unless there is an understood "suppressed subject" within the noun phrase, whose antecedent is the subject of the clause.

(366) a. Péter megtalálta [a cikk-ét ról-a/önmagá-ról]  
   Peter found.DEF the article-ACC DEL-3SG/self-DEL  
   ‘Peter has found the article about him/himself.’

   b. Péter megtalálta [a cikk-é-t önmagá-ról/*róla]  
   article-POSS-ACC  
   ‘Peter has found his article about him/himself.’

   c. *Péter tanult [a cikk-é-ből ról-a/önmagá-ról]  
   Peter learned the article-POSS-ELA DEL-3SG/self-DEL  
   ‘Peter has learned from the article about him/himself.’

1.6.5.3–5. Subject—indirect object

Dative- or adposition-marked indirect objects can be reflexive pronouns.

(367) a. Anna magá-nak küldte a könyvet.  
   Anna self-DAT sent.DEF the book.ACC  
   ‘Anna sent the book to herself.’

   b. Anna önmaga részére küldte a könyvet.  
   self for  
   ‘Anna sent the book to herself.’

1.6.5.4–6. Subject—modifier of indirect object

The above remark concerning ordering conditions applies here, too.

(368) a. A maga ellenség-é-nek senki nem küld könyvet.  
   the self enemy-POSS-DAT no one not sends book  
   ‘No one sends books to his/her own enemy.’

   b. Önmaga ellenség-e számára senki nem küld könyvet.  
   self enemy-POSS for  
   ‘No one sends books to his/her own enemy.’
1.6.5.7–8. **Subject—(modifier of) copular complement**
Both the nominal predicate and its possessive modifier can be a reflexive pronoun. Note that, like all copular complement nouns, the reflexive is not used in a referential sense.

(369) a. Péter nem önmaga volt.
   Peter not self was
   ‘Peter wasn’t himself (=his usual self).’

b. Péter önmaga ellenség-e volt.
   Péter self enemy-POSS was ‘Peter was his own enemy.’

1.6.5.9–10. **Subject—(modifier of) subject-complement**

(370) a. Anna önmaga maradt.
   Anna self remained
   ‘Anna remained herself.’

b. Mi önmag-unk ellenség-e-i maradtunk.
   we self-1PL enemy-POSS-PL remained
   ‘We remained our own enemies.’

1.6.5.11–12. **Subject—(modifier of) object-complement**

No reflexive can occur in object-complements or their modifiers.

   the sculptor Peter-ACC self-SUB formed.DEF
   ‘The sculptor formed Peter into himself.’

b. *A szobrász Péter-ti önmagai alak-já-ra
   the sculptor Peter-ACC self shape-POSS-SUB
   formázta.
   formed.DEF
   ‘The sculptor formed Peter into his own shape.’

1.6.5.13–14. **Subject—(modifier of) object of adjective**

(372) a. Anna elégedett volt önmagá-val.
   Anna content was self-INS
   ‘Anna was content with herself.’

b. Önmaga barát-a-i-val senki nem elégedett.
   self friend-POSS-PL-INS no-one not content
   ‘No one is content with his/her own friends.’
1.6.5.17. Subject—case-marked and adpositional phrase

The subject can serve as antecedent for a reflexive in all of the case-marked complement or adverbial phrases, provided there are no independent restrictions against (for example) referential NPs in them, and both subtypes of postpositional NPs contain case-like or real postpositions.

(373) a. Anna magá-ra gondolt.
   Anna self-SUB thought
   ‘Anna thought of herself.’

b. Péter magá-ra öntötte a vizet.
   Péter self-SUB spilled.DEF the water.ACC
   ‘Peter spilled the water on himself.’

c. *Anna maga-ként érkezett.
   Anna self-FOR came
   ‘Anna came in the function of herself.’

(374) a. Anna maga után húzta a kocsit.
   Anna self after pulled.DEF the cart.ACC
   ‘Anna pulled the cart after her (self).’

b. Anna magá-val együtt Péter-t is be-számította.
   Anna self-INS together Peter-ACC CL PFX-counted.DEF
   ‘Anna counted in Peter, too, together with herself.’

1.6.5.18. Subject—modifier of case-marked and adpositional phrase

Reflexive pronouns as possessive modifiers are possible in case-marked NPs, but not in postpositional phrases.

(375) a. A maga ellenség-e-ről senki nem beszél.
   the self enemy-POSS-DEL no one not speaks
   ‘No one speaks of his/her enemy.’

b. *Önmaga barát-a-i-val együtt Anna Pétert is
   self friend-POSS-PL-INS together Anna Peter.ACC also
   beszámította.
   counted-in
   ‘Anna counted in Peter together with self’s friends.’

1.6.5.19–25. Modifier of subject—other constituents

No modifier or complement in the subject can, in general, be the antecedent of a reflexive pronoun in the clause.
(376) a. *Anna kés-e meg-sebezte önmagá-t.
   Anna knife-POSS PFX-wounded.DEF self-ACC
   ‘Anna’s knife hurt herself.’
   b. *A cikk Péter-ről meglepte önmagá-t.
      the article Peter-DEL surprised.DEF self-ACC
      ‘The article about Peter surprised himself.’

1.6.5.26. Modifier of subject—copular complement
There is, however, one structure in which a subject modifier can serve as the antecedent of a reflexive in the clause:
copular sentences in which the subject is a possessive NP, whether nominative or dative, or inside or outside the NP proper.
(377) a. [Péter legnagyobb ellenség-e] önmaga volt.
     Peter greatest enemy-POSS himself was
     ‘Peter’s greatest enemy was himself.’
   b. Péternek önmaga volt a legnagyobb ellensége.
     ‘Peter’s greatest enemy was himself.’

1.6.5.37. Direct object—subject
Again, certain focussed structures allow reflexive pronouns to occur in the subject position, but here and further below the antecedent has to precede the reflexive.
(378) a. *Sajátmaga meg-sebezte Péter-t.
     self PFX-wounded.DEF Peter-ACC
     ‘Himself wounded Peter.’
   b. Péter-t sajátmaga sebezte meg.
      ca. ‘Peter was wounded by (none other but) himself.’

1.6.5.38. Direct object—modifier of subject
The modifier of the subject cannot be a reflexive pronoun if the object is the antecedent, but its complement can—if there is an appropriate antecedent inside the NP, which again prevents the object from being the antecedent proper of the reflexive.
(379) a. *Péter-t önmaga barát-ja sebezte meg.
     self friend-POSS
     ‘Peter was wounded by self’s friend.’
Page 135

b. *Péter-t meg-lepte [a könyv önmagá-ról]
   Péter-ACC PFX-surprised.DEF the book self-DEL
   ‘Peter was surprised by the book about himself.’

c. Péter-t meglepte [a könyv-e önmagá-ról]
   book-POSS
   ‘Peter was surprised by his book about himself.’

1.6.5.39. Direct object—indirect object
Dative-marked indirect objects can be reflexive pronouns with direct objects as antecedents.

(380) Anná-t megmutattam önmagá-nak.
   Anna-ACC showed.DEF.1SG self-DAT
   ‘I showed Anna to herself.’

1.6.5.49. Direct object—object of adjective
This is a possible configuration.

(381) Péter-t [önmagá-ra büszké-nek] tartottam.
   Peter-ACC self-SUB proud-DAT considered.DEF.1SG
   ‘I considered Peter proud of himself.’

1.6.5.55–72. Modifier of direct object—other constituents
No antecedent-reflexive relations are possible in such configurations.

(382) *Péteri barát-já-t megmutattam önmagá-nak
   Peter friend-POSS-ACC showed.DEF.1SG self-ACC
   ‘I showed Peter's friend to himself.’

1.6.5.73–74. Indirect object—(modifier of) subject
This is again possible under proper focussing conditions.

    self sent.DEF Peter-DAT the books-ACC
    ‘Himself sent the books to Peter.’

b. ?Péter-nek önmaga küldte a könyveket.
   Péter-POSS self sent.DEF the books
   ca. ‘The books were sent to Peter by (none other but) HIMSELF.’

It is in this connection that we mention verbs of “passive” mental processes like tetszik ‘please’, látszik ‘appear’, ötletet ad ‘give an idea (to)’ and the like, which take experiencer NPs in the dative and themes in
nominative subjects, thus making it possible for the dative NP to serve as antecedent to the subject reflexive pronoun, though only if the verb or the reflexive is stressed.

(384)  
   a. Péter-nek tetszik önmaga.  
       Peter-DAT pleases self .NOM  
       ‘Peter likes himself.’
   b. Péter-nek önmaga látszik a legnagyobb-nak.  
       Peter-DAT self appears the greatest-DAT  
       ‘It’s himself that appears to Peter to be the greatest.’

Neither a “true” indirect object, i.e., a beneficiary, nor experiencer NPs can be the antecedent of a reflexive inside a subject NP.

(385)  
   a. *Péter-neki a postás önmagai mögött küldte a  
       Peter-DAT the postman self behind sent.DEF the  
       könyveket.  
       books.ACC  
       ‘The postman behind himself sent Peter the books.’
   b. *Péter-nek a kép önmagá-ról adta az ötlet-et.  
       Peter-DAT the picture self-DEL gave.DEF the idea-ACC  
       ‘The picture of himself gave Peter the idea.’

1.6.5.75–76. Indirect object—(modifier of) direct object
This configuration is somewhat less acceptable than the reverse order (see 1.6.5.39), though it is still well within the boundaries of grammaticality: reflexives in modifiers are ruled out.

(386)  
   a. Anná-nak megmutattam önmagá-t.  
       Anna-DAT showed.DEF.1SG self-ACC  
       ‘I showed herself to Anna.’
   b. *Anna-nak megmutattam a kép-et önmagá-ról.  
       Anna-DAT showed.1SG the picture-ACC self-DEL  
       ‘I showed Anna the picture of herself.’

1.6.5.77–78. Indirect object—(modifier of) case-marked or adpositional NP
The indirect object is a possible antecedent of such NPs, but not of their modifiers.

(387)  
       spoke.1SG Anna-DAT self-DEL  
       ‘I spoke to Anna about herself.’
b. **Érveltem Anná-nak önmaga ellen.**
   ‘I argued to Anna against herself.’

   \[(388)\]

   \[\text{a. } *\text{Beszéltém Anná-nak önmaga barátai-ról.} \]
   ‘I spoke to Anna about self’s friends.’

   \[\text{b. } *\text{Érveltem Anná-nak önmaga barátai ellen.} \]
   ‘I argued to Anna against self’s friends.’

1.6.5.89–104. **Modifier of indirect object—other constituents**

No coreference relations between the modifier of an indirect object and any other constituent of the clause are possible.

\[(389)*\text{Annai barát-já-nak megmutattam önmagát.} \]
‘I showed to Anna’s friend herself.’

1.6.5.173. **Case-marked or adpositional phrase—subject**

As before, only focused reflexives are possible, if at all.

\[(390)a. \text{?Péter-ről önmaga beszél a legtöbbet.} \]
‘Peter speaks the most about himself.’

\[\text{b. } ?\text{Péter után csak önmaga vág yako kik.} \]
‘Only Peter yearns for himself.’

1.6.5.175. **Case-marked or adpositional phrase—object**

Same as 1.6.5.173.

\[(391)a. \text{?Péter-ről önmagát kell meghallgatunk.} \]
‘We have to hear about Peter himself.’

\[\text{b. } ?\text{Péter ellen önmagát küldjük.} \]
‘We’ll send against Peter himself.’

1.6.5.177. **Case-marked or adpositional phrase—indirect object**

Same as 1.6.5.173.
1.6.5.191. Case-marked or adpositional phrase—case-marked or adpositional phrase

Coreference relations in two similar phrases are again possible with some restrictions owing to closer or more distant lexical government relations. It appears that at least the antecedent has to be lexically governed. Moreover, if one of the phrases is in no lexical relation, focussing may sometimes circumvent difficulties.

(393) a. Beszéltém Anná-val önmagá-ról.
   spoke.1SG Anna-INS self-DEL
   ‘I spoke with Anna about herself.’

   ‘I spoke about Anna with herself.’

c. ?Anná-ról önmagá-val beszéltém.
   ‘It was with her (self) that I spoke about Anna.’

1.6.5.193–212. Modifier of case-marked or adpositional phrase—other constituents

No coreference relations are possible.

(395) a. ?Annai iránt önmagaimiatt érez Péter szeretet-et.
   Anna for self because feel Peter affection-ACC
   ‘Peter feels an affection for Anna because of herself.’

b. *Annai miatt önmagairánt érez Péter szeretetet.
   ‘Peter feels an affection because of Anna for herself.’

Adpositional phrases are acceptable as antecedents only if there is a clear lexical government relation.
1.6.6. Reflexives in nominalized clauses

Action nominalizations can contain reflexive pronouns, but note the following. In nominalizations of intransitive verbs the subject occupies the possessor’s position and all other arguments retain their cases with or without the attributivizer participle való ‘being’. Since the (antecedent) object, too, has to occupy the possessor’s slot in a nominalization, the (reflexive) agent can only be placed in a postpositional phrase.

(397)

a. Péter törőd-és-e önmagá-val
   Peter care-NML-POSS self-INS
   ‘Peter’s caring for himself’

b. Péter önmagá-val való törőd-és-e
   Peter self-INS being care-NML-POSS
   ‘Peter’s caring for himself’

c. Péter önmaga által való elítél-és-e
   Peter self by being judge-NML-POSS
   ‘Peter’s judgment by himself’

Since possessor NPs are in a c-commanding position, they cannot be reflexive pronouns.

(398) *Önmaga Péter által való elítélése.
   ‘self’s judgment by Peter’

1.6.7. Reflexives in ordinary NPs

Reflexive relations are possible also in NPs formed of result nominals or lexical nouns.

(399)

a. Péter ítélet-e önmaga ellen
   Peter sentence-POSS self against
   ‘Peter’s sentence against himself’

b. [Anna kép-e önmagá-ról] ról sikerült.
   Anna picture-POSS self-DEL well succeeded
   ‘Anna’s picture of herself was a success.’
1.6.8. Reflexive pronouns without overt antecedents
Although E. Kiss (1987) quotes examples of reflexives in so-called picture nominals that have no antecedents, others refuse these constructions without hesitation, and accept only the ones in which the reflexive has a (covert or overt) possessive antecedent.

(400) a. %János-nak tetszett [a történet önmagá-ról]
   John-DAT pleased the story self-DEL
   ‘John liked the story about himself.’

b. János-nak tetszett [a történet-e önmagá-ról]
   story-POSS
   ‘John liked his story about himself.’

(401) a. %János össze-tépte [a vers-et önmagá-hoz]
   John up-tore.DEF the poem-ACC self-ALL
   ‘John tore up the poem to himself.’

b. János összetépte [a vers-é-t önmagá-hoz]
   poem-POSS-ACC
   ‘John tore up his poem to himself.’

Reflexives without overt antecedents in NPs are acceptable only if the NP contains a nonfinite verb-form whose agent can be suppressed and thus can serve as an “invisible” antecedent. In the first example below the suppressed agent of the participle szóló ‘speaking’ is the story, which cannot serve as antecedent to the reflexive, while the suppressed agent of írott ‘written’ can be identified with János and can thus provide an acceptable interpretation for the reflexive pronoun.

(402) a. Jánosnak tetszett [az önmagá-ról ír-ott/*szól-ó
   story
   történet]
   ‘John liked the story written/*speaking about himself.’

b. János összetépte [az önmagá-hoz ír-ott vers-et]
   ‘John tore up the poem written to himself.’

1.6.9. Other uses of reflexives
Since there is no “impersonal” reflexive in Hungarian like English oneself, general reflexive (co)reference is achieved usually by the first person plural form, and less frequently by the second person plural.
1.7. Reciprocity

1.7.1. Means for expressing reciprocity

There is a single word egymás, compounded from words meaning ‘one’ and ‘other’, serving as the reciprocal. Naturally, it needs a plural or conjoined antecedent. The coreference relations of reciprocals have been studied also by É.Kiss (1987).

(404)  a. Anna és Péter látják egymás-t.
         Anna and Peter see.DEF each-other-ACC
     ‘Anna and Peter see each other.’

       b. A fiú-k látják egymás-t.
            The boys see each other.’

Arguably, the same reflexivizer derivative affix that was discussed in 1.6.1.2 can be used to form reciprocal verbs from transitive ones, but there are only a handful of verbs that can undergo the process (cf. Komlósy 1994).

(405)   a. Anna ver-i Péter-t.
         Anna beat-DEF.3SG Peter-ACC
     ‘Anna is beating Peter.’

       b. A gyerek-ek ver-eked-nek (egymás-sal).
            the child-ren beat-REFL-3PL each-other-INS
     ‘The children are fighting (with each other).’

1.7.2. The scope of reciprocity

Like reflexives, the reciprocal is restricted to clausal antecedents.

(406)   A fiúk tudták, hogy a lányokj látják egymás-t*i/j.
         the boys knew.DEF that the girls see.DEF each-other-ACC
     ‘The boys knew that the girls see each other.’
1.7.4. The syntactic positions of the reciprocal
Similarly to the reflexive, the reciprocal can occur in (a) topic, (b) is-phrase, (c) focus, and (d) postverbal positions.

(407)  
   a. Egymás-t a fiúk nem látták.  
        each-other the boys not saw.DEF  
        ‘The boys didn’t see each other.’
   b. A fiúk egymás-t is látták.  
        ‘The boys saw each other, too.’
   c. A fiúk nem egymás-t láttak.  
        ‘The boys didn’t see each other.’
   d. A fiúk látták egymás-t.  
        ‘The boys saw each other.’

1.7.5. Antecedent-reciprocal relations
As in 1.6.5., in the section titles below the first term stands for the antecedent, the second for the reciprocal. Functions omitted either do not exist in Hungarian or no reciprocal is possible in those functions.

It is to be noted that reciprocals are significantly more acceptable in various positions in which reflexives had to be placed in focus to achieve similar results.

1.7.5.1. Subject—direct object
This configuration is possible as illustrated above in 1.7.4, example (407).

1.7.5.2. Subject—modifier of direct object
Possessor reciprocals are possible, but in complement position they are ruled out, just like reflexives.

(408)  
   a. A lányok szeretik egymás barát-a-i-t.  
        the girls like.DEF each-other friend-POSS-PL-ACC  
        ‘The girls like each other’s friends.’
   b. *A lányok szeretik a képek-et egymás-ról.  
        the girls like.DEF the pictures-ACC each-other-DEL  
        ‘The girls like the pictures of each other.’

1.7.5.3. and 1.7.5.5. Subject—indirect object
Dative- or adposition-marked indirect objects can be reciprocals.
Page 143

(409) a. A fiúk küldték a könyveket egymás-nak.
    the boys sent.DEF the books each-other-DAT
    ‘The boys sent books to each other.’

    b. A fiúk küldték a könyveket egymás számára
    the boys sent.DEF the books ACC each-other for
    ‘The boys sent books to each other.’

1.7.5.4. and 1.7.5.6. Subject—modifier of indirect object
Possessor reciprocals are grammatical in indirect objects.

(410) a. A fiúk küldtek könyveket egymás
    the boys sent books.ACC each-other
    barát-a-i-nak.
    friend-POSS-PL-DAT
    ‘The boys sent books to each other’s friends.’

    b. A fiúk küldtek könyveket egymás barát-a-i
    the boys sent books.ACC each-other friend-POSS-PL
    részére
    for
    ‘The boys sent books to each other’s friends.’

1.7.5.7–8. Subject—(modifier of) copular complement
The reciprocal is impossible as a copular complement, although it is perfectly acceptable as a possessive modifier in such positions.

(411) a. *A fiúk egymás voltak.
    ‘The boys were each other.’

    b. A fiúk egymás legjobb barát-a-i voltak.
    the boys each-other best friend-POSS-PL were
    ‘The boy’s were each other’s best friends.’

1.7.5.9–10. Subject—(modifier of) subject-complement
The distribution is similar to what is seen immediately above.

(412) a. *A fiúk egymás maradtak.
    ‘The boys remained each other.’

    b. A fiúk egymás legjobb barátai maradtak.
    ‘The boys remained each other’s best friends.’
1.7.5.11–12. Subject—(modifier of) object-complement
(413) A lányok a fiúk-at egymási vőlegényei-vé the girls the boys-ACC each-other’s fiancés-TRA tették. made.DEF
‘The girls made the boys each other’s fiancés.’

1.7.5.13–14. Subject—(modifier of) object of adjective
These configurations are grammatical.
(414) a. A lányok elégedettek egymás-sal. the girls content each-other-INS ‘The girls are content with each other.’
b. A lányok elégedettek egymás barátaival. the girls content each-other friends.POSS.INS ‘The girls are content with each other’s friends.’

1.7.5.17. Subject—case-marked and adpositional phrase
As in the case of reflexives, the subject can serve as antecedent for a reciprocal in all of the case-marked complement or adverbial phrases, provided there are no independent restrictions against, e.g., referential NPs in them, and in both subtypes of postpositional NPs, whether containing case-like or real postpositions.
(415) a. A fiúk egymás-ra gondoltak the boys each.other-SUB thought ‘The boys thought of each other.’
b. A lányok egymás-ra öntötték a vizet. the girls each-other-SUB spilled the water.ACC ‘The girls spilled the water on each other.’
c. *A fiúk egymás-ként érkeztek. the boys each-other-FOR came ‘The boys came in the function of each other.’
(416) a. A lányok egymás után érkeztek. the girls each.other after came ‘The girls came one after the other.’
b. A fiúk egymás-sal szemben állnak. the boys each.other-INS opposite stand ‘The boys are standing facing each other.’
1.7.5.18. **Subject—modifier of case-marked and adpositional phrase**

(417) a. A fiúk egymás ellenségei-ről beszéltek.
   ‘The boys talked of each other’s enemies.’

b. A fiúk egymás barátai-val együtt érkeztek.
   ‘The boys came together with each other’s friends.’

1.7.5.19–36. **Modifier of subject—other constituents**

No modifier or complement in the subject can be the antecedent of a reciprocal in the clause, even if it is in a position acceptable for reflexive pronouns, such as the copular complement.

(418) a. *A fiúki barát-a-i látták egymás-ti.
   ‘The boys’ friends saw each other.’

b. *A könyvek a fiúk-ról tetszettek egymás-nak.
   ‘The books about the boys pleased each other.’

c. *A fiúk legjobb barát-a-i egymás volt(ak).
   ‘The boys’ best friends were each other.’

1.7.5.37. **Direct object—subject**

No coreference relations are possible between an antecedent in object position and a reciprocal in subject position. In fact, the reciprocal cannot, under any condition, occur in subject position. Even a focussed reciprocal is unacceptable, as shown by the example below.

(419) *A fiúkat egymás mutatta be.
   ‘Each other introduced the boys.’

1.7.5.38. **Direct object—modifier of subject**

In contrast with the prohibition against reciprocals in subject position, their occurrence in the possessive modifier of the subject is quite acceptable, provided the reciprocal follows the antecedent.
(420) a. *Egymás barátai mutatták be a fiúk-at.
   each.other friends.POSS introduced.DEF PFX the boys-ACC
   'The boys were introduced by each other’s friends.’

b. A fiúk-at egymás barátai mutatták be.
   'The boys were introduced by each other’s friends.'

1.7.5.39–40. Direct object—(modifier of) indirect object
Since (apart from the subject) all constituents are lower in the hierarchy than the direct object, antecedents in this
position are compatible with reciprocals in the rest of the syntactic functions.

(421) a. Be-mutattam egymás-nak a fiúk-at.
   PFX-introduced.DEF.1SG each.other-DAT the boys-ACC
   ‘I introduced the boys to each other.’

b. Bemutattam egymás tanár-a-i-nak a fiúk-at.
   teacher-POSS-PL-DAT
   ‘I introduced the boys to each other’s teachers.’

1.7.5.49. Direct object—object of adjective
This is again a possible configuration.

(422) A lányok-at egymás-sal elégedett-nek láttam.
   the girls-ACC each.other-INS content-DAT saw.DEF.1SG
   ‘I regarded the girls as content with each other.’

1.7.5.55–72. Modifier of direct object—other constituents
No coreference is possible.

(423) a. * A lányoki barát-a-i-t bemutattam
   the girls friend-POSS-PL-ACC introduced.DEF.1SG
   egymás-naki.
   each.other-DAT
   ‘I introduced the girls’ friends to each other.’

b. *A könyv-et a lányok-ról kértem
   the book-ACC the girls-DEL requested.DEF.1SG
   egymás-tol.
   each.other-ABL
   ‘I requested the book about the girls from each other.’
1.7.5.73. **Indirect object—subject**
Since the antecedent is lower in the hierarchy than the phrase containing the reciprocal, coreference is not possible.

(424) *A fiúk-nak egymás mutatta be a lányok-at.
   the boys-DAT each.other introduced.DEF PFX the girls-ACC
   ‘Each other introduced the girls to the boys.’

1.7.5.74. **Indirect object—modifier of subject**
This is again a possible configuration if the subject is in focus.

(425) A fiúk-naki egymás barátai mutatták be a
   the boys-DAT each.other’s friends introduced.DEF PFX the
   lányok-at.
   girls-ACC
   ‘Each other’s friends introduced the boys to the girls.’

1.7.5.75–76. **Indirect object—(modifier of) direct object**
E. Kiss (1987) finds the reciprocal in direct object more acceptable than other speakers, and marks it by a question mark. The structure again improves if focussed.

(426) a. ?*A lányok-nak bemutattam.DEF egymás-t.
   the girls-DAT introduced.1SG each.other-ACC
   ‘I introduced each other to the girls.’

b. A lányok-nak egymás-t mutattánk be.
   the girls-DAT each.other-ACC
   ‘I introduced each other to the girls.’

   The reciprocal in the object modifier yields an acceptable structure.

(427) Bemutattam a lányok-nak egymás barátait.
   introduced.DEF.1SG the girls-DAT each.other’s friends-ACC
   ‘I introduced each other’s friends to the girls.’

1.7.5.77–78. **Indirect object—(modifier of) case-marked or adpositional NP**
All configurations included here are possible.

   spoke.1SG the girls-DAT each.other-DEL
   ‘I spoke to the girls about each other.’

b. Érveltük a lányok-nak egymás ellen.
   argued.1SG the girls-DAT each.other against
   ‘I argued to the girls against each other.’
Page 148

(429) a. Beszéltem a lányok-nak egymás barátai-ról.
   spoke.1SG the girls-DAT each.other friends.POSS-DEL
   ‘I spoke to the girls about each other’s friends.’

b. Erteltem a lányok-nak egymás barátai ellen.
   argued.1SG the girls-DAT each.other friends.POSS against
   ‘I argued to the girls against each other’s friends.’

1.7.5.89–104. Modifier of indirect object—other constituents
When the antecedent is the modifier of the indirect object coreference is not possible either “upwards” or “downwards” in the hierarchy of syntactic functions.

(430) a. *A lányok könyvei-nek örült-(ek) egymás.
   the girls’ books-DAT rejoiced-(PL) each.other
   ‘Each other rejoiced over the girls’ books.’

b. *A lányok barátai-nak igértem egymás-t.
   the girls’ friends-DAT promised.DEF.1SG each.other-ACC
   ‘I promised each other to the girls’ friends.’

c. *A lányoki barátai-nak beszéltem egymás-róli
   the girls’ friends-DAT spoke.1SG each.other-DEL
   ‘I spoke to the girls’ friends about each other.’

1.7.5.173–175. Case-marked or adpositional phrase—subject/object
Since the reciprocal is higher in the hierarchy, coreference is not possible even if the reciprocal is in focus.

(431) a. *A lányok-ról egymás beszél a legtöbbet.
   the girls-DEL each.other speaks the most
   ‘Each other speaks the most about the girls.’

b. *A lányok-ról egymás-t kérdeztem.
   the girls-DEL each.other-ACC asked.DEF.1SG
   ‘I asked each other about the girls.’

1.7.5.177. Case-marked or adpositional phrase—indirect object
This is possible even in neutral sentences.

(432) Üzenetek érkeztek a lányok-tól egymás-nak
   messages came the girls-ABL each.other-DAT
   ‘Messages were coming from the girls to each other.’
1.7.5.191. Case-marked or adpositional phrase—case-marked or adpositional phrase

As in the case of reflexives, coreference relations in two similar phrases are possible with some restrictions owing to closer or more distant lexical government relations. It appears that at least the antecedent has to be lexically governed. Moreover, if one of the phrases is not in a lexical relation with the predicate, focussing may sometimes circumvent difficulties.

(433)  a. ?Beszéltém a fiúk-kal egymás-ról.
      spoke.1SG the boys-INS each.other-DEL
      ‘I spoke with the boys about each other.’
  b. ??Beszéltém a fiúk-ról egymás-sal.
      ‘I spoke about the boys with each other.’
  c. ?A fiúk-ról egymás-sal beszéltem.
      ‘It was with each other that I spoke about the boys.’

(434)  a. ?A fiúk-kal egymás miatt beszéltem.
      the boys-INS each. other because spoke.1SG
      ‘I spoke with the boys because of each other.’
  b. *A fiúk miatt egymás-sal beszéltem.
      ‘I spoke because of the boys with each other.’

Postpositional phrases are more acceptable as antecedents if they are in a closer lexical government relation with the verb than the reciprocal.

(435)  a. ??A fiúk iránt egymás miatt érzé Peter szeretet-et.
      the boys for each. other because feel Peter affection-ACC
      ‘Peter feels an affection for the boys because of each other.’
  b. *A fiúk miatt egymás iránt érzé Peter szeretetet.
      ‘Peter feels an affection because of the boys for each other.’

1.7.5.193–212. Modifier of case-marked or adpositional phrase—other constituents

These are not possible coreference relations.

(436)  a. *A fiúk barátai-tól egymás-naki érkeztek üzenetek.
      the boys’ friends-ABL each. other-DAT came messages
      ‘Messages were coming in from the boys’ friends to each other.’
  b. *A fiúk házaí-tól sokat kell menni egymás-ig.
      the boys’ houses-ABL much must walk.INF each.other-TER
      ‘There is a lot to walk from the boys’ houses to each other.’
1.7.6. Reciprocals in nominalized clauses

Reciprocals are also possible in action nominalizations in the same way as reflexives.

(437)  a. a fiúk törőd-és-e egymás-sal
       the boys care-ing-POSS each.other-DAT
       ‘the boys’ caring for each other’

       b. a fiúk egymás-sal való törőd-és-e
       the boys each.other-INS being care-ing-POSS
       ‘the boys’ caring for each other’

       c. a fiúk egymás által való elítél-és-e
       the boys each.other by being judge-ing-POSS
       ‘the boys’ judgment by each other’

Since possessor NPs are in a c-commanding position, they cannot be reciprocals.

(438)  *egymás-(nak) a fiúk által való elítélése
       ‘each other’s judgment by the boys’

1.7.7. Reciprocals in ordinary NPs

Coreference relations between NPs and reciprocals are possible also in NPs formed of result nominals or lexical nouns.

(439)  a. a fiúk ítélet-e-i egymás ellen
       the boys’ sentence-POSS-PL each.other against
       ‘the boys’ sentences against each other’

       the boys’ picture-POSS-PL each.other-DEL well succeeded
       ‘The boys’ pictures of each other were a success.’

1.7.8. Reciprocals without overt antecedents

In this case, reciprocals in so-called picture nominals that have no antecedents are acceptable with some predicates, but in general are not coreferential. The NPs in which the reciprocal has a (covert or overt) possessive antecedent are always grammatical.

(440)  a. A lányok-nak tetszettek [a képek egymás-ról]
       the girls-DAT pleased the pictures each.other-DEL
       ‘The girls liked the pictures of each other.’
Page 151
b. *A lányok a falra akasztották [a képek-et egymás-ról]
   the girls the wall.SUB hung.DEF the pictures-ACC each.other-DEL
   ‘The girls hung the pictures of each other on the wall.’
c. A lányok a falra akasztották [a képek-et egymás-ról]
   ‘The girls hung their pictures of each other on the wall.’

1.8. COMPARISON
1.8.1. Means for expressing comparison
There are two constructions available for the expression of comparison: one of them contains the standard in a
(usually elliptic) clause, the other in a case-marked noun phrase. The comparative of adjectives and adverbs is
formed by means of the suffix -bb, and that of the quantifier or numeral sok ‘many, much’ is the irregular több
‘more’. “Reverse” comparison is expressed by using kevésbé ‘less’ and the parameter (adjective or adverb) of
comparison in construction with the clause containing the standard.
1.8.1.1. Clausal comparative
The full form of the clausal comparative construction is composed of the parameter of comparison (an adjective,
numeral, or adverb) in the comparative form, an appropriate relative pro-form, the conjunction or complementizer
mint ‘as, than’, and the standard of comparison in a clause. Although it is not ungrammatical, the full form is rarely
ever used; for more on this, see below.
(441) a. Anna érdekes-ebb, mint amilyen érdekes Péter volt.
   Anna interesting-CMP than what interesting Peter was
   ‘Anna is more interesting than Peter was.’
   b. Anna érdekesebb, mint Péter.
   ‘Anna is more interesting than Peter.’
(442) a. Anna több könyv-et olvas, mint amennyi könyv-et
   Anna more book-ACC reads than how-many book-ACC
   Péter olvas.
   Peter reads
   ‘Anna reads more books than Peter does.’
Page 152

b. Anna több könyvet olvas, mint Péter.
   ‘Anna reads more books than Peter.’

(443) a. Anna gyors-abb-an olvas, mint amilyen gyorsan Péter
       Anna fast-CMP-ADV reads than how fast-ADV Peter
       reads.
   ‘Anna reads faster than Peter does.’

b. Anna gyorsabban olvas, mint Péter.
   ‘Anna reads faster than Peter.’

It is possible to have different items as apparent parameters in the two clauses, but in this case the actual parameter
is some common measure (e.g., length or number). In the structures in question the relative pro-form cannot be
omitted.

(444) a. A polc hossz-abb, mint *(amilyen) széles a szoba.
        The shelf long-er than what wide the room
   ‘The shelf is longer than the room is wide.’

b. *A polc hossz-abb, mint a szoba széles.

(445) Anna több könyv-et olvasott, mint *(amennyi) cikk-et
       Anna more book-ACC read than how-many article-ACC
       Péter írt.
       Peter wrote
   ‘Anna has read more books than Peter has written articles.’

If two predicates are compared, the subtype of clausal comparative applied is the analytic construction formed by
means of the unanalyzable inkább ‘rather, more’ and the predicates.

(446) a. Anna inkább írja, mint olvassa a könyvek-et.
       Anna rather writes.DEF than reads.DEF the books-ACC
   ‘Anna writes, rather than reads, books.’

b. Péter inkább könyvek-et, mint cikkek-et ír.
   ‘Peter writes books rather than articles.’

   ‘Reverse’ comparatives are also clausal, and occur in analytic constructions.

(447) a. Anna kevésbé érdekes, mint Péter.
       Anna less interesting than Peter
   ‘Anna is less interesting than Peter.’
b. Anna kevésbé gyors-an olvas, mint Péter.
   ‘Anna reads less fast than Peter.’

1.8.1.2. Case-marked comparative
In this construction-type the standard of comparison is marked by the adessive case, otherwise used to express adjacency to some place, rendered commonly as ‘at’ in English.

(448) a. Anna érdekes-ebb volt Péter-nél.
   ‘Anna was more interesting than Peter.’
   Anna interesting-CMP was Peter-ADE
b. Anna gyors-abb-an olvas Péter-nél.
   ‘Anna reads faster than Peter.’
   Anna fast-CMP-ADV reads Peter-ADE
c. Anna több könyv-et olvasott Péter-nél.
   ‘Anna has read more books than Peter.’
   Anna more book-ACC read Peter-ADE

This structure does not allow a change of adjective, even if the standard is nominalized.

(449) *?A polc hossz-abb a szoba széles-ség-é-nél.
   ‘The shelf is longer than the room’s width.’
   the shelf long-CMP the room wide-NML-POSS-ADE

1.8.2-5. Ellipsis in comparative constructions
Identical elements can, but need not, be deleted in the subordinate clause. Even though the full construction appears to be overextended, and therefore awkward, it is perfectly possible to repeat them in the clause, especially if other constituents differ.

(450) a. Anna több könyv-et olvasott, mint amennyi (könyv)-ről
   ‘Anna has read more books than Peter has ever dreamed of.’
   Anna more book-ACC read than how-many book-DEL
   Péter valahas álmodott.
   Peter ever CL dreamed
b. Anna több könyvet olvasott, mint (amennyi könyve)t
   Péter olvasott.
   ‘Anna has read more books than Peter.’

Note that in the last example the verb in the comparative clause can occur only if the relative pro-form (with or
without the rest of its NP) is present, as is signalled by the angled brackets around the verb. If the verb is missing,
the relative pro-form can also be omitted. Thus, in the clausal construction-type the complementizer and the
standard must be present; all other constituents, including the relative pro-form, are optional, though they are
usually deleted. As was indicated above, the case-marked comparative can only contain the standard, thus no
questions of deletion arise.

The differences between the two constructions follow from their fundamental syntactic properties. On the one hand,
the case-marked subtype can only have NPs as standards, in contrast with the clausal type, which allows for various
kinds of other standards as well, as was seen above. On the other hand, the case-marked comparative can be easily
embedded in structures of premodification, which is not possible for the clausal subtype, since right-branching
structures cannot be embedded inside left-branching ones.

(451) a. Péter [Annánál érdekesebb emberek könyveit]
   Péter Anna-ADE interesting-CMP people's books-ACC
   olvasta.
   ‘Peter has read books by people more interesting than Anna.’
   b. *Péter [érdekesebb mint Anna emberek könyveit]
      interesting-CMP than Anna
      olvasta.

1.8.6 Correlative comparison
The paired elements mi-nél…an-nál ‘what-ADE…that-ADE’ are the markers of correlative comparative constructions.
As shown by the glosses, they constitute a relative vs. main clause construction, similar to what was seen in clausal
comparatives.

(452) a. Mi-nél érdekesebb a könyv, an-nál hosszabb.
    what-ADE interesting-CMP the book that-ADE long-CMP
    ‘The more interesting the book is, the longer it is.’
1.9. EQUATIVES

1.9.1. Means for expressing equation
Equatives are solely expressed by means of the clausal construction introduced by the complementizer mint ‘as, than’ and a relative pro-form in the clause, and by various demonstrative items in the main clause. That it is the same type of construction as the clausal comparative is evidenced by the optional presence of identical relative pro-forms. The predicates in angled brackets can be present only if the relative pro-forms in parentheses occur.

(453)  
a. Anna olyan érdekes, mint (amilyen (érdekes)) Péter<volt>  
   Anna as interesting as how interesting Peter was  
   tavaly>.  
   last-year  
   ‘Anna is as interesting as Peter (was last year).’

b. Anna annyi könyv-et olvasott, mint (amennyi  
   Anna as-many book-ACC read as how-many  
   (könyve)-t) Péter <írt>.  
   book-ACC Peter wrote  
   ‘Anna has read as many books as Peter (wrote).

c. Anna olyan gyors-an olvas, mint (amilyen gyors-an/ahogy)  
   Anna so fast-ADV reads as how-fast-ADV/how  
   Péter <ír>.  
   Peter writes  
   ‘Anna reads as fast as Peter (writes).’

1.9.2. Ellipsis in equatives
As was indicated in the above examples, identical constituents can, but need not, be deleted. Different items must, of course, be overt.
Although only the optional omission of the relative pro-forms was indicated in the examples above, in fact it is either the complementizer mint or the relative pro-form that can be deleted in equatives—unlike comparatives, cf.:
1.9.3. Expression of Identity

It is the equative construction that serves to express identity statements formed by means of the prefix ugyan-
‘same’, which can be added to various demonstratives introducing clauses, such as az ‘that’, olyan ‘such, so’, úgy
‘that-way’. Note that the slash in parentheses indicates the occurrence of either or both of the items separated by it.

(454) a. Anna olyan érdekes, amilyen (érdekes) Péter (volt
tavaly).
‘Anna is as interesting as Peter (was last year).’

b. Anna annyi könyv-et olvasott, amennyi (könyve)-t
Péter (ír).
Peter wrote
‘Anna has read as many books as Peter (wrote).’

c. Anna olyan gyors-an olvas, amilyen gyors-an/ahogy Péter
writes
‘Anna reads as fast as Peter (writes).’

1.9.4. Possession

1.10.1. Sentences expressing possession

Of the two structures available for languages of the world, i.e., have- and be-sentences, Hungarian uses the latter
type exclusively to express possession. According to the widely accepted analysis in Szabolcsi (1986/1992,
Page 157

1994), this construction originates in a possessive noun phrase, from which the dative possessor is extracted for reasons of specificity. She argues that the object of possession in sentences expressing possession (or “possessional sentences” for short) must be nonspecific, and if the possessor stays in the possessive NP it can only be specific, as shown by the (in)definite conjugation in this language.

(456) a. Nem olvast-ad/*olvast-ál [Péter vers-é-t]
    not read-2SG.DEF/read-2SG.INDEF Peter poem-POSS-ACC
    ‘You haven’t read Peter’s poem.’

b. Péter-nek nem olvast-ad/olvast-ál [vers-é-t]
    Peter-DAT
    ‘You haven’t read any poem by Peter.’
    ‘You haven’t read Peter’s poem.’ (archaic)

By extracting the possessor in an existential sentence, it is possible to satisfy the “nonspecificity criterion” possessional sentences have to observe.

(457) a. *Van [Péter vers-e]
    is Peter poem-POSS

b. Péter-nek van vers-e.
    Peter-DAT is poem-POSS
    ‘Peter has a poem.’

c. *Van-nak [Péter vers-e-i]
    is-PL Peter poem-POSS-PL

d. Péter-nek van-nak vers-e-i.
    ‘Peter has (some) poems.’

Since the possessive noun phrase shows concord between the possessor and the agreement marker on the possessed noun, the existential predicate van ‘is’ agrees only in number with the possessed head of the noun phrase, which in turn agrees with the possessor in number and person, in addition to its own number expressed by the possessive plural affix -i.

(458) a. Nek-em van vers-e-m.
    DAT-1SG is poem-POSS-1SG
    ‘I have a poem.’

b. Nek-em van-nak vers-e-i-m.
    DAT-1SG is-PL poem-POSS-PL-1SG
    ‘I have poems.’
c. Nek-ed van verse-d.
   DAT-2SG is poem-POSS-2SG
   ‘You have a poem.’

d. Nek-ed van-nak verse-i-d.
   DAT-2SG is-PL poem-POSS-PL-2SG
   ‘You have poems.’

e. Nek-i van verse
   DAT-3SG is poem-POSS.3SG
   ‘S/he has a poem.’

f. Nek-i van-nak verse-i
   DAT-3SG is-PL poem-POSS.3SG-PL
   ‘S/he has poems.’

g. Nekünk van verse-ünk.
   DAT-1PL is poem-POSS.1PL
   ‘We have a poem.’

h. Nekünk van-nak verse-i-ünk.
   DAT-1PL is-PL poem-POSS-PL-1PL
   ‘We have poems.’
i. Nekték van verse-tek.
   DAT-2PL is poem-POSS-2PL
   ‘You have a poem.’

j. Nekték van-nak verse-i-tek.
   DAT-2PL is-PL poem-POSS-PL-2PL
   ‘You have poems.’
k. Nek-ik van verse-ük.
   DAT-3PL is poem-POSS.3PL
   ‘They have a poem.’
l. Nek-ik van-nak verse-i-ük.
   DAT-3PL is-PL poem-POSS-PL-3PL
   ‘They have poems.’

Note that, in accordance with the rules of omission of pronouns in general and in possessive constructions in particular, the pronominal possessors in all of the examples above can be suppressed. Obviously, the possessed object can be modified by an adjectival phrase, a numeral, or by any other means possible for such nominals provided they remain nonspecific. Furthermore, negated possessional sentences are formed with the third person forms of the (suppletive) negative counterpart of the verb of existence, i.e., nincs(en) ‘not is’ and nincsenek ‘not are’, while future and past tenses.
are expressed by lesz(-nek) ‘will-be(-PL)’ and volt(-ak) ‘was/were’, respectively.

(459)  a. (Nek-em) nincs sok vers-e-m.
DAT-1SG not-is many poem-POSS-1SG
‘I don’t have many poems.’

b. (Nek-tek) nem lesznek érdekes vers-e-i-tek.
DAT-2PL not will-be interesting poem-POSS-PL-2PL
‘You won’t have interesting poems.’

Finally, mention must be made of possessional sentences with non-pronominal third person plural possessors, since they have two inflectional versions, of which the plural variety is the same as the one with the pronominal possessor, while the one with the singular suffix follows the inflection used inside the noun phrase, and is labelled as nonstandard, though it is widely used even in educated Hungarian.

(460) a. [A fiúk-nak a vers-e/*vers-ük] érdekes volt.
the boys-DAT the poem-3SG/poem-3PL interesting was
‘The boys’ poem was interesting.’

b. A fiúk-nak volt egy érdekes %vers-e/vers-ük.
‘The boys had an interesting poem.’

1.10.2–5. Restrictions in possessional sentences

There are, in general, no differences in the expression of alienable vs. inalienable, temporary vs. permanent, present vs. past possession, or between the expression of possession of persons, animals, or things. The same be-sentence is used in all types, though minor differences can be discerned.

For example, paired body parts (and paired objects associated with them) are often referred to in the singular, which is related to perceiving every paired organ as a single “whole”. Note here that a one-eyed or one-legged person is usually referred to as “half-eyed” or “half-legged”.

(461) a. Péter-nek jó szem-e van.
Peter-DAT good eye-POSS.3SG is
‘Peter has good eyes.’

b. Anna levette a cipő-jé-t.
Anna took-off the shoe-POSS.3SG-ACC
‘Anna took off her shoes.’

Some relations are so much tied to possessive constructions or possessional sentences that the possessed noun, which expresses the relation
itself, has no “stem-form”, i.e., the possessive suffix has become part of the word-form that underlies all of its inflected forms.

Szabolcsi (1986/1992), following Hadrovics (1969), summarized the relationship between possessive noun phrases and possessional sentences. Compare the following list, in which the relations represented are (a) possession, (b) relation, (c) part-whole, (d) *measure, (e) source, (f) *property, (g) *action nominalization, (h) agent-object, (i) *identity, (j) *ad hoc relation. Starred subtypes are not possible as possessional sentences.

Finally, as regards past vs. present possession, it is possible to use a possessional sentence in the present tense with reference to what is appar-
ently past possession if the sentence is used to predicate some property of the possessed nominal, as Szabolcsi (1986/1992) reports.

(464)  
   Lord Byron-DAT is hat-POSS
   ‘Lord Byron has a hat.’

b. Lord Byron-nak van olyan kalap-ja, amelyet nem
   such which.ACC not
   állítottak ki,
   exhibited 3PL PFX
   ‘Lord Byron has a hat that hasn’t been exhibited.’

1.11. EMPHASIS

1.11.1. Sentence emphasis

Emphasis in Hungarian, whether contrastive or noncontrastive, or whether related to the sentence as a whole or limited to one or more constituents, is associated with the position of the inflected verb and is expressed by means of varying the constituent order and assigning stress to some distinguished element. Emphasis is usually discussed under the term “focus” in current literature and has been extensively studied (among others) by É.Kiss (1987, 1994), Horvath (1986), Brody (1990, 1995) from a syntactic point of view, and by Kálmán and Nádasdy (1994) in an approach based on prosodic phonology. Wherever relevant, emphasis/ focus is marked by bold type, as throughout in this chapter.

1.11.1.1. Noncontradictory emphasis

The neutral Subject-Verb-Object/Complement order of sentences containing definite noun phrases is changed for a verb-initial one in case a presentative or presentational sentence is called for to highlight the current occurrence of the event or the emergence, rise, coming into sight, etc., of the thing/person talked about.

(465)  
a. neutral
   A vendégek meg-érkeztek a szállodába.
   the guests PFX-arrived the hotel.ILL
   ‘The guests have arrived in the hotel.’

b. presentative
   Megérkeztek a vendégek a szállodába.
   ca. ‘Guests have arrived in the hotel.’
Another subtype is called “existential” sentences, since they point at the previous occurrence of the event, that is, they claim that there has already occurred an event characterized by the proposition. They are distinguished by a reversal of the prefix-verb order if the verb has a prefix, and a heavy stress on the verb. Note that the verb need not be initial, though it most often is.

(467) a. neutral
   Péter el-felejtett fontos feladatokat.
   Peter PFX-forgot important assignments.ACC
   ‘Peter forgot/has forgotten important assignments.’

b. existential
   Felejtett el (már) Péter fontos feladatokat.
   already
   ‘(It has occurred before that) Peter has forgotten important assignments.’

c. existential
   Péter felejtett (már) el fontos feladatokat.
   ‘(It has occurred before that) Peter has forgotten important assignments.’

1.11.1.2. Contradictory emphasis
Emphatic sentences expressing contradiction are marked by heavy stress on the verb, but they differ from existential sentences in that they do not reverse the prefix-verb order. A small number of words can be used to enhance the assertion. This is the only context in which almost all verbs, even auxiliaries, can be emphatic in Hungarian. (The only exception is discussed directly in 1.11.2.1.3. Note that auxiliaries have to precede the infinitives they govern, which they otherwise follow.)

(468) Péter (igenis) el-felejtett fontos feladatokat.
   Peter indeed PFX-forgot important assignments
   ‘Peter has/has indeed forgotten important assignments.’ = ‘It is not true that Peter hasn’t forgotten important documents.’
1.11.2. Constituent emphasis

1.11.2.1. Noncontrastive emphasis

Noncontrastive constituent emphasis is almost nonexistent in Hungarian, since all emphatic items must be placed in a preverbal position—unless of course it is the verb itself. However, if for some reason the preverbal position is inaccessible, it is possible to place emphasis on a postverbal element, in which case it is not interpreted contrastively. Such contexts are regularly produced in commands and questions.

(470)

a. Olvasd el a könyvet!
   read.IMP.DEF PFX this the book.ACC
   ‘Read this book (…if you like).’

b. Ki olvasta a könyvet?
   who read.DEF this the book.ACC
   ‘Who has read this book?’

1.11.2.2. Contrastive emphasis

Contrastive constituent emphasis (or contrastive focus) is realized by (a) placing the constituent immediately in front of the (prefixless) inflected verb, (b) placing the constituent in question directly in front of the prefixed verb but removing the prefix from its preverbal position, or (c) if the emphasis falls on the inflected verb itself, by retaining the prefix (if any) in front of the verb, and in all cases stressing the item carrying the emphasis. Note that the relative prosodic prominence is achieved in fact by destressing the constituents following the emphatic item (cf. Vogel and Kenesei 1987, 1990, Kálmán and Nádasdy 1994).

(471)

a. neutral
   Péter olvasta a könyvet.
   Peter read.DEF the book.ACC
   ‘Peter read/ was reading the book.’
Page 164

b. *neutral*
Péter el-olvasta a könyvet.
Peter PFX-read.DEF the book.ACC
‘Peter read/has read the book.’

(472) a. Péter a könyvet olvasta.
‘It’s the book that Peter read.’
b. Péter olvasta el a könyvet.
‘It’s Peter that has read the book.’
c. Péter (el-)olvasta a könyvet.
‘Peter read the book (…rather than burned it).’

Negated emphatic constituents are also placed preverbally and are preceded by the negation word nem ‘not’, as was discussed in connection with constituent negation in 1.4.2.

(473) a. Péter nem a könyvet olvasta el.
‘It’s not the book that Peter has read.’
b. Nem Péter olvasta el a könyvet.
‘It’s not Peter that has read the book.’
c. Péter nem (el-)olvasta a könyvet.
‘Peter has not read the book (…but burned it).’

In case there is no overt verb in the sentence, i.e., in some of the copular sentences, cf. 1.2.1.1, the predicate adjective or the nominal serves as the focussing device that the emphatic constituent must be to the left of and adjacent to.

(474) a. Anna Péter-re büszke.
Anna Peter-SUB proud
‘It’s Peter Anna is proud of.’
b. Anna Péter-re volt büszke.
‘It’s Peter Anna was proud of.’

The position in front of the verb can host a single constituent only, which, however, does not exclude the possibility of multiple emphasis, as will be seen below.

There are two (or three) particles that can be called emphatic; one of them, csak ‘only’, generally occurs in the preverbal focus position, the other(s), is ‘too’ or még…is ‘even’, have more freedom to be preverbal, but nonadjacent, or postverbal. (Csak may occur postverbally, but without the constituent it is associated with.)

(475) a. Péter csak a könyvet olvasta el.
‘Peter has read only the book.’
Page 165

b. Péter a könyvet olvasta csak el.
   ‘Peter has read only the book.’

c. Péter még a könyvet is el-olvasta.
   even CL
   ‘Peter has read even the book.’

d. Péter el-olvasta még a könyvet is.
   ‘Peter has read even the book.’

Although other devices, such as clefting and pseudo-clefting, are in principle possible, they are rarely used as a means of focussing.

1.11.2.2.1. Elements emphasized

In general, any major constituent in the clause can be moved into the designated focus position, and so can constituents of complement clauses, as will be seen in detail below.

1.11.2.2.1.1. Noun phrase

As the examples above illustrate, noun phrases can be emphasized with no difficulty.

1.11.2.2.1.2. Adjective

Predicative adjectives are stressed in situ, since they occupy a preverbal, i.e., pre-copular, position if there is an overt copula in the clause, and a preverbal position if they are predicate complements, i.e., “verbal modifiers”.

(476)  a. A könyv érdekes (volt).
       the book interesting was
       ‘The book was interesting’

   b. Anna simá-ra dörzsölte az asztal-t.
       Anna smooth-SUB rubbed.DEF the table-ACC
       ‘Anna rubbed the table smooth.’

Attributive adjectives are embedded in noun phrases, and whenever they are emphatic the entire noun phrase has to move into the focus position.

(477) Péter [az érdekes könyv-et] olvasta el.
       Peter the interesting book.ACC read.DEF PFX
       ‘It’s the interesting book that Peter has read.’

1.11.2.2.1.3. Verb

Most verbs, but no auxiliaries, can be contrastively focussed with their prefixes (if any) preceding them, as was discussed above.

As Komlósy (1994) observed, a class of Hungarian verbs cannot occur
Page 166

in neutral sentences, i.e., either they are emphasized themselves or some other constituent is placed in the focus position in front of them. This group includes mostly verbs of emotion, e.g., szeret ‘like’, utál ‘hate’, imád ‘adore’, sajnál ‘pity’, aggaszt ‘worry’; and predicates expressing possibility or ability, e.g., tud ‘know’, beszél ‘speak’, ír ‘write’ (in a language); and emlékszik ‘remember’, tilos ‘is forbidden’, lehet ‘is possible’.

(478) a. neutral
   *Anna szereti Péter-t.
   Anna likes.DEF Peter-ACC
b. Anna szereti Pétert.
   ‘Anna likes Peter.’
c. Anna szereti Pétert.
   ‘It’s Anna that likes Peter.’
d. Anna Pétert szereti.
   ‘It’s Peter that Anna likes.’

Another class is unemphasized because they express the emergence, formation, or coming-/bringing-into-being, sight, possession, etc., of some person or object in the neutral case, where these items have to be interpreted as nonspecific; consequently these noun phrases must be indefinite, as was first observed by Szabolcsi (1986/1992). If the NP is definite, the only way the sentence can be made acceptable is by focussing some constituent in it. (If the verb is emphatic, it is never contrasted, but carries contradictory sentential emphasis, cf. above.) Examples are érkezik ‘arrive’, kap ‘receive (=come into possession)’, kerül ‘surface (=come into sight)’, talál ‘find’, rajzol ‘draw (something)’.

(479) a. neutral
   Tegnap vendégek érkeztek a szállodá-ba.
   yesterday guests arrived the hotel-ILL
   ‘Guests arrived in the hotel yesterday.’
b. A vendégek tegnap érkeztek a szállodá-ba.
   ‘It’s yesterday that the guests arrived in the hotel.’

Finally, another group of verbs that cannot be contrasted expresses location or qualification in a complex construction, e.g., marad ‘remain’, fekszik ‘is situated’, képez ‘constitute’, tart ‘consider’. This is the exceptional verb-class mentioned above, which cannot bear stress if the sentence is in contradictory emphasis; instead, the complement of the verb is stressed and is therefore ambiguous between a sentential emphasis and a constituent constrast.
Page 167

(480) a. **neutral**
   A könyv fejezetek-ből áll.
   The book consists of chapters.
   'The book consists of chapters.'
   b. **A könyv** all fejezetek-ből.
   'It's the book that consists of chapters.'

(481) a. *A könyv (igenis) áll fejezetek-ből.
   The book (indeed) consists of chapters.
   b. A könyv (igenis) fejezetek-ből áll.
   'The book (indeed) consists of chapters.'

1.11.2.1.4. **Adverbial** One class of adverbials (of frequency, manner, or degree) must be contrastively focussed; they all have negative semantic content (cf. 1.2.1.3.2 and the references cited there).

(482) a. Péter **ritkán** olvasta el/*el-olvasta a könyvet.
   Peter seldom read.DEF the book.ACC
   'Peter seldom read the book.'
   b. Anna **hiányos-án** írta meg/*meg-írta a feladatot.
   Anna defective-ly wrote.DEF the assignment
   'Anna wrote the assignment with deficiencies.'

Another class qualifies verb phrases and has no contrasting alternatives, which is why they cannot be focussed.

(483) a. Péter téljes-en el-olvasta/*olvasta el a könyvet.
   Peter complete-ly PFX-read.DEF the book.ACC
   'Peter read the book completely.'
   b. Anna kereken meg-mondta/*mondta meg az igazat.
   Anna forthright.PFX-said.DEF the truth.ACC
   'Anna told the truth forthrightly.'

The rest of the adverbials can be freely focussed.

(484) a. Péter tegnap el-olvasta a könyvet.
   Peter yesterday PFX-read.DEF the book.ACC
   'Peter read the book yesterday.'
   b. Péter **tegnap** olvasta el a könyvet.
   'It's yesterday that Peter read the book.'

(485) a. Anna otthon meg-írta a feladatot.
   Anna at-home PFX-wrote.DEF the assignment.
   'Anna wrote the assignment at home.'
b. Anna otthon írta meg a feladatot.
   'It's at home that Anna wrote the assignment.'

1.11.2.2.2.1. Constituents of the main clause
Any constituent of the main clause can be focussed, with the exception of the items listed above, such as auxiliaries, a small set of finite verbs, and certain adverbials. Focussable constituents include even finite clauses, provided they are headless (or free) relative clauses, which count as noun or adpositional phrases; in other words, they are not focussed as clauses.

(486) a. Csak [aki tud angolul] olvasta a könyvet.
   only who speaks English read.DEF the book.ACC
   'Only those who speak English have read the book.'

   Peter not when arrived.3SG slept PFX
   'Peter didn't fall asleep when he arrived (he fell asleep at some other time).'</n
Evidence for the claim that headless relatives are not focussed as clauses comes from the impossibility of focussing any other type of clause, whether a that-clause or a relative clause.

   Anna that Peter sick was read.DEF
   'What Anna read was that Peter had been sick.’

b. *Csak [az a fiú, aki tud angolul] olvasta a könyvet.
   only that boy who speaks English read.DEF the book.ACC
   'Only the boy that speaks English has read the book.'

As regards nonfinite complement clauses, infinitival clauses cannot be focussed as such, although their constituents can become focussed in the main clause, as exemplified directly below. Adjunct participial (converb) clauses can sometimes be emphatic.

(488) Péter [a székben ülve] aludt el.
   Peter the chair-INE sit-SCVB slept PFX
   'It's (while) sitting in the chair that Peter fell asleep.’

1.11.2.2.2.2. Constituents of the subordinate clause
Constituents of finite adjunct clauses can be emphatic without further ado, provided they are placed into the preverbal focus position inside their own clause.

(489) a. Mivel Péter meg-érkezett, Anna nem olvasott tovább.
   since Peter PFX-arrived Anna not read further
   'Since Peter had arrived, Anna didn't continue reading.’
b. Mivel Péter érkezett meg, Anna nem olvasott tovább.
   ‘Since it was Peter that arrived, Anna didn’t continue reading.’

If some constituent of the finite complement clause of the verbal predicate of the main clause is emphatic, the clause itself must also be focussed, as indicated by the position its pronominal expletive marker occupies, or it is possible to move the emphatic constituent into the main clause.

(490) a. Anna az-t akarta, hogy Péter a könyvet
   Anna it-ACC wanted.DEF that Peter the book.ACC olvassa.
   read.SUBJ.DEF.3SG
   ‘It’s the book that Anna wanted Peter to read.’

b. Anna a könyvet akarta, hogy Péter olvassa.
   ‘It’s the book that Anna wanted Peter to read.’

If some constituent of the finite complement clause of the verbal predicate of the main clause is emphatic, the clause itself must also be focussed, as indicated by the position its pronominal expletive marker occupies, or it is possible to move the emphatic constituent into the main clause.

(491) a. Anna az-t akarta, hogy Péter olvassa a könyvet.
    Anna it-ACC wanted.DEF that Peter read.SUBJ.DEF.3SG the book.ACC.
    ‘It’s Peter that Anna wanted to read the book.’

b. Anna a könyvet akarta, hogy olvassa a könyvet.
    Anna it-ACC wanted.DEF that read.SUBJ.DEF.3SG the book.ACC.
    ‘It’s Peter that Anna wanted to read the book.’

If the subject of the clause is extracted from an object clause, it receives accusative case in the main clause. (Note that some speakers accept extraction from subjunctive clauses better than from indicative ones; others do not accept extraction from clauses at all.)

(492) a. Anna azzal írta meg a levelet, amit Péter adott
    Anna it.PFX wrote the letter.ACC which.ACC Peter gave
    to.her
    ‘Anna wrote the letter with what Peter had given her.’

b. Anna arra volt büszke, hogy Péter a könyvet olvassa.
    Anna it.SUB was proud that Peter the book.ACC reads.DEF
    ‘Anna was proud of the fact that it was the book that Peter was
    reading.’

Focussed items can move into a focus position inside their own infinitival clause or they can move out from infinitival complement clauses.
Page 170

(493) a. Fontos volt Péter-nek a könyvet olvas-ni.
   ‘It was important for Peter to read the book.’

   b. A könyvet volt fontos Péter-nek olvas-ni.
   ‘It’s the book that it was important for Peter to read.’

1.11.2.2.2.3. Noun phrase Generally, if any constituent of a noun phrase is emphatic, the whole noun phrase has to move into the focus position of its clause, as has been illustrated above for adjectives or nonfinite participial clauses. The case is the same with demonstratives or numerals.

If, however, either the possessor NP or the possessed nominal is emphasized, either one or the other can be independently focussed, since possessor NPs can be extracted from their noun phrases.

(496) a. Anna [Péter-nek a könyv-é-t] olvasta el.
   ‘It’s Peter’s book that Anna has read.’

   b. Anna Péter-nek olvasta el [a könyv-é-t]
   ‘It’s Peter’s book that Anna has read.’

(497) a. Anna [Péter-nek a könyv-é-t]
   ‘It’s Peter’s book that Anna has read.’

   b. Anna [a könyv-é-t] olvasta el Péter-nek.
   ‘It’s Peter’s book that Anna has read.’

Constituents of noun phrases can also be emphasized and extracted in appositive constructions, which bear multiple case-marking.
Page 171

(498) a. Anna könyv-et olvasott négy-et.
   Anna book-ACC read four-ACC
   ‘It’s books that Anna has read four of.’

b. Könyv-et Anna négy-et olvasott.
   ‘As for books, Anna has read four of them.’

1.11.2.2.2.4. Coordinate construction
While any coordinate constructions can be focussed, no constituent can be moved out of the construction, though it is possible for one to receive emphasis independently of the others.

(499) a. Anna és Péter olvasta el a könyvet.
   Anna and Peter read.DEF PFX the book.ACC
   ‘It’s Anna and Peter that have read the book.’

b. *Anna olvasta el (és Péter) a könyvet.

c. Nem [Anna és Péter] olvasta el a könyvet (hanem
   not Anna and Peter read.DEF PFX the book.ACC but
   Anna és Pál).
   Anna and Paul
   ‘It’s not Anna and Peter (but Anna and Paul) that have read the
   book.’

1.11.2.2.2.5. Multiple emphasis
If more than one item bears focus, one of them must move into the preverbal focus position, and the other(s) is/ are placed behind the inflected verb.

(500) Anna olvasta el a könyvet (Péter pedig a
   Anna read.DEF PFX thé book.ACC Peter in-turn the
   cikket).
   article.ACC
   ‘Anna has read the book (and Peter_the article).’

In principle any independently focussable constituent can participate in a multiply emphasized construction, but actually only phrasal (and no clausal) constituents can occupy the preverbal position.

1.11.2.3. Properties of movement
As was seen in the examples cited, the movement of a constituent into the preverbal focus position leaves behind no visible trace in any of the cases studied.
1.12. TOPIC

Hungarian is often claimed to be a “topic-prominent” language (cf., e.g., É.Kiss 1987, 1994), which is to be understood as claiming that, in contrast to English-type languages, in which the primary predication relation is between the subject and the predicate, in Hungarian it holds between the topic and the predicate. Below we will discuss the movement of nonfocussed or nonquantified elements into initial positions, and will show whether or not the phrases affected qualify for topichood. Note that, partly in order to ascertain what is in topic position and partly to correctly represent topic-focus structure, foci will be marked in the examples (by bold type as usual).

1.12.1. Means to indicate the topic

1.12.1.1. Movement to topic position

A nonquantified and nonfocussed pre verbal item is a/the topic in the Hungarian sentence. As was seen above in 1.11, the position directly in front of the inflected verb (stem) is reserved for focus (or emphasis). There is also a “quantifier-field” in front of the focus slot: (phrases containing) universal quantifiers (=UQ) are placed to the left of the optional focus, while there is a further position to the left of the optional quantifiers for *is*—even, also* phrases (cf. Kenesei 1986, Brody 1990). Thus the full array of major constituents in a Hungarian sentence is as follows.

(501)   Topic(s) Is-phrase UQ-Phrases Focus
   Anna még a könyvet is mindig Péternek
   Anna even the book.ACC CL always Peter-DAT
   olvasta fel először.
   read out first
   ‘Anna always read out even the book to Peter first.’

There can be more than one topicalized phrase, and the only further condition topics have to observe is that they must in general be specific: nonspecific items can be foci or can be placed postverbally, but they usually cannot occur in the initial topic position.

        a book-ACC Anna read PFX
        ‘As for a book, Anna has read it.’
   b. A könyvet Anna olvasta el.
       ‘As for the book, it’s Anna that’s read it.’
Topics

Focus

(503) Anna a könyvet tegnap a szobában egyedül
Anna the book.ACC yesterday the room.ILL alone
olvasta.
read.DEF
‘Yesterday in the room Anna was reading the book alone.’

1.12.1.2. Left-dislocation
The only other means by which leftward movement can be carried out is called left-dislocation. It differs from topic-fronting in that it leaves behind a coreferential pronominal or, less frequently, adverbial, which carries the same case as the left-dislocated item.

(504) a. Anna, az olvasta a könyvét.
Anna it read.DEF.3SG the book-ACC
‘As for Anna, she’s read the book.’
b. A könyvét, az-t Anna olvasta.
the book-ACC it-ACC Anna read.DEF
‘As for the book, Anna has read it.’
c. Péter-nek, an-nak Anna olvasta fel a könyvét.
Peter-DAT it-DAT Anna read.DEF.3SG out the book.ACC
‘As for Peter, it was Anna that read out the book to him.’
d. A szobá-ban, ott Anna olvas.
the room-ILL there Anna reads
‘As for the room, Anna is reading there.’

Note that for some dialects it is possible to refer back to left-dislocated zitems denoting human beings by means of personal pronouns. Thus in examples (a) and (c) above it is possible to use ű ‘s/he’ and neki ‘to him/her’ for az and an-nak, respectively.

While there can be several items moved into initial position through simple topic movement, no more than one can be left-dislocated, and, moreover, an item apparently left-dislocated can be preceded by another one that was not, indicating that the term “left-dislocation” may very well be a misnomer.

(505) a. *Anna a könyvet, ű/az azt a szobá-ban olvasta.
Anna the book.ACC she it.ACC the room-ILL read
b. Anna a könyvet, az-t a szobá-ban olvasta.
The book, Anna read it in the room

Left-dislocation is frequently interpreted as expressing some kind of contrast between the element involved and some other item, explicit or
Page 174

implicit. Thus the last example above can be construed also as follows: ‘As for the book, Anna read it in the room, but there is/may be some other item that she read at some place other than the room.’ Nevertheless, it cannot be claimed either that nonspecific items are always left-dislocated and therefore contrasted, or that nonfocussed but contrasted items must be left-dislocated, since they can be placed to the right of specific NPs, which are unquestionable topics.

(506) Anna könyv-et nem olvas (de novellá-t igen).
     Anna book-ACC not reads but short-story-ACC yes
     ‘Anna doesn't read books.’
     ‘Anna doesn't read books, but she does read short stories.’

It is often the case that the constituent to be interpreted as contrasted carries a specific rising pitch and is followed by a short pause. In this case the coreferential pronominal does not occur.

1.12.2. Elements topocalized

1.12.2.1.1. Noun phrase

As was illustrated above, specific noun phrases can be topicalized with ease, but nonspecific items can also be placed into positions available for topics.

1.12.2.1.2. Adjective

Both predicative adjectives and adjectives in subject or object complement position can be topicalized by the following devices. Both types can be placed in the usual initial position, but the former can also be left-dislocated (and marked by the dative case) and reduplicated inside the clause. Note that all of these are best illustrated in focussed sentences, and that the sense translations are incapable of providing the topicalized readings for the adjectives.

(507) a. Érdekes a könyv volt.
     interesting the book was
     ‘It's the book that was interesting.’

(508) a. Érdekes-nek Anna tartotta a könyv-et.
     interesting-DAT Anna considered.DEF the book-ACC
     ‘It's Anna that considered the book interesting.’
Unprefixed verbs can be topicalized by left-dislocating them in an infinitival form and retaining their inflected forms inside the clause. Prefixed verbs are topicalized in two ways: in the case of prefixes used in their literal (locative, etc.) meanings the prefix can occur left of the inflected verb and separated from it, while in the case of prefixed verbs in general, the entire complex verb can undergo the operation—an option for verbs with prefixes in literal meanings, but an obligation for those whose prefixes are not used in the literal sense.

\[(509)\]  
\[\begin{align}  
\text{a. Olvas-ni } & \text{Anna olvasta a könyvet.} \\
& \text{read-INF Anna read-PAST-DEF.3SG the book.ACC} \\
& \text{‘As for reading (it), it’s Anna that’s read the book.’} \\
\text{b. Fel } & \text{Anna ment a lépcső-n.} \\
& \text{up Anna went the stairs-SUP} \\
& \text{ca. ‘Up Anna went the stairs.’} \\
\text{c. Fel-men-ni } & \text{Anna ment fel a lépcső-n.} \\
& \text{up-go-INF} \\
& \text{ca. ‘Up Anna went the stairs.’} 
\end{align}\]

\[(510)\]  
\[\begin{align}  
\text{a. *Fel } & \text{Anna olvasta a könyvet.} \\
& \text{up Anna read.DEF the book.ACC} \\
\text{b. Fel-olvas-ni } & \text{Anna olvasta fel a könyvet.} \\
& \text{up-read-INF Anna read.DEF.3SG PFX the book.ACC} \\
& \text{‘As for reading (it) out, it’s Anna that’s read the book out.’} 
\end{align}\]

Reduced complements (or verbal modifiers) of verbs can also be topicalized and interpreted as topicalizing the entire complex verb.

\[(511)\]  
\[\begin{align}  
\text{a. Tegnap könyvet } & \text{Anna olvasott a szobában.} \\
& \text{yesterday book.ACC Anna read the room.ILL} \\
& \text{ca. ‘As for book-reading, it’s Anna that did so in the room yesterday.’} \\
\text{b. Fal-ra } & \text{Péter akasztotta a képet.} \\
& \text{wall-SUB Peter hung.DEF the picture.ACC} \\
& \text{ca. ‘As for onto-wall-hanging, it’s Peter that hung the picture on some wall.’} 
\end{align}\]
1.12.2.1.4. Adverbial
Time and place adverbials that make specific reference are fully acceptable as topics.

(512)   a. 1986-ban Anna sok könyvet olvasott.
        1986-INE Anna many book.ACC read
        'In 1986, Anna read many books.'
   b. A szobá-ban Anna sok könyvet olvasott.
        the room-INE Anna many book.ACC read
        'In the room, Anna read many books.'

Adverbials of frequency, manner, etc., are nonspecific and can occur in initial positions only if they carry a sense of contrast. This is shown by the fact that nonfocussable (i.e., noncontrastable) adverbials cannot be preposed.

(513)   a. Gyors-an Anna olvasta el a könyvet.
        fast-ADV Anna read.DEF PFX the book.ACC
        'Anna was the one that read the book fast (…but there may
        have been someone else who read it slowly).'
   b. *Kereken Anna mondta meg az igazat.
        forthright Anna said.DEF PFX the truth.ACC

1.12.2.2.1. Constituents of the main clause
In addition to the elements discussed so far, complement clauses can also be topicalized, whether by simple movement or left-dislocation. In the former case (a) the clause moves together with its pronominal expletive, while in the latter there is always a coreferential—viz., (b) personal or (c) nonpersonal—pronominal in the main clause.

(514)   a. Ar-ról, hogy Péter beteg volt, Anna nem olvasott.
        it-DEL that Peter sick was Anna not read
        'Anna didn't read about Peter's having been sick.'
   b. Hogy Péter beteg volt, Anna nem olvasott ról-a.
        ca. 'That Peter had been sick, Anna didn't read about it.'
   c. Hogy Péter beteg volt, ar-ról Anna nem olvasott.
        ca. 'That Peter had been sick, Anna didn't read about it.'

Finite adjunct clauses can also be interpreted as topicalized if the pronominal expletive in construction with them occupies a topic position in the main clause, whether or not the clause itself is adjacent to it.
(515)  a. Az-után, hogy Péter megérkezett, Anna nem olvasott.
   ‘Anna wasn’t reading after Peter had arrived.’
   b. Az-után Anna nem olvasott, hogy Péter megérkezett.
   ‘Anna wasn’t reading after Peter had arrived.’

The question of topicalization probably does not arise in the case of adjunct clauses that do not have a pronominal expletive in the main clause, since they can be placed only in the “periphery” of the main clause, that is, in initial (whether first or second) or final positions.

(516)  a. Mivel Péter megérkezett, Anna nem olvasott tovább.
   ‘Since Peter had arrived, Anna didn’t continue reading.’
   b. Anna, mivel Péter megérkezett, nem olvasott tovább.
   ‘Since Peter had arrived, Anna didn’t continue reading.’
   c. Anna nem olvasott tovább, mivel Péter megérkezett.
   ‘Since Peter had arrived, Anna didn’t continue reading.’

It is difficult to say whether nonfinite complement clauses can be topicalized. First, the constituents of infinitival clauses often do not hold together, that is, they undergo some kind of clause union with the main clause (cf. 1.1.2.2.6.8), and even if they do it is questionable whether they function as topic(s). Second, even though the constituents of simple converb (adverbial participial) clauses can be moved together into initial positions, it is equally dubious whether they serve as topics.

   ‘For Peter to read the book was important.’
   ‘Sitting in the chair, Peter fell asleep.’

It is thus necessary to distinguish initial positions from topics: more types of constituents can occur in initial positions than can be said to function as topics.

1.12.2.2. Constituents of the subordinate clause

Both simple topicalization and left-dislocation are possible in complement clauses, but left-dislocation is not acceptable inside adjunct (relative, adverbial, etc.) clauses.
The issue of topicalization within nonfinite clauses does not arise because, apart from infinitival clauses, all subtypes are verb-final, which makes the distinction between topics and (nonemphatic) nontopics impossible. However, constituents of subordinate clauses can be extracted and topicalized in the main clause. Due to the clause union phenomenon observed in infinitival complement clauses, discounting the infinitive itself, any appropriate element can undergo such a process.

Constituents of finite complement subordinate clauses can be moved out into main clause topic positions with or without retaining the pronominal expletive marking the syntactic position of the clause. Observe that, somewhat similarly to focus raising, if the subject is moved into main clause topic position, its nominative can change into accusative; in fact the sentence with the accusative marked subject is significantly better than the one with the nominative marked subject, though for a number of speakers subject raising into a higher topic as such is unacceptable.
Page 179

(521) a. Péter Anna mondta, hogy majd fel-olvassa a könyv-et.
   ‘(As for) Peter, Anna said he would then read out the book.’

b. Peter-t Anna mondta, hogy majd fel-olvassa a könyv-et.
   ‘(As for) Peter, Anna said he would then read out the book.’

Topic movement is not possible out of adjunct clauses, whether finite or not.

1.12.2.2.3. Constituents of noun phrases

In general, entire noun phrases are topicalized, whether by simple topicalization or left-dislocation. However, possessive NPs can be broken up in ways illustrated above, and either the possessor NP or the possessed nominal, or both, can become topics.

(522) a. Péter tegnap olvasta [Anná-nak a könyv-é-t]
   Peter yesterday read Anna-DAT the book-POSS-ACC
   ‘Peter read Anna’s book yesterday.’

b. [Anná-nak a könyv-é-t] Péter tegnap olvasta
   ‘As for Anna’s book, Peter read it yesterday.’

c. [Anná-nak] Péter tegnap olvasta [a könyv-é-t]
   ‘As for Anna, Peter read her book yesterday.’

d. [A könyv-é-t] Péter tegnap olvasta [Anná-nak],
   ‘As for Anna’s book, Peter read it yesterday.’

e. [Anná-nak] Péter [a könyv-é-t] tegnap olvasta,
   ‘As for Anna’s book, Peter read it yesterday.’

Note that the last example differs in that it indicates a sense of contrast between Anna’s book and some other work by her.

As was illustrated in the section on emphasis, if one element in an appositive construction is focussed, the other can be topicalized, cf. 1.11.2.2.2.3.

1.12.2.2.4. Constituents of coordinate construction

No individual constituent of a coordinate construction can be topicalized independently of the other(s); in other words, extraction from coordinate constructions is not possible.
1.12.2.2.5. More than one constituent

The process of simple topicalization can be used to move more than one constituent into initial position, and if they are all specific they can be interpreted as topics (cf. 1.12.1.1). That includes even finite subordinate clauses with or without their demonstrative/expletive.

(523) Anna (az-t), hogy Péter beteg volt, nem olvasta.
   Anna it-ACC that Peter sick was not read.DEF
   ‘(The fact) that Peter was sick, Anna hasn’t read.’

In other than nominative and accusative case the pronominal cannot be dropped, but can be placed postverbally even if the clause is in the preverbal topic position.

(524) a. Anna ar-röl, hogy Péter beteg volt, nem olvasott.
   Anna it-DEL that Peter sick was not read
   ca. ‘That Peter was sick, Anna hasn’t read about it.’

b. Anna, hogy Péter beteg volt, ar-röl nem olvasott.
   ca. ‘That Peter was sick, Anna hasn’t read about it.’

c. Hogy Péter beteg volt, Anna nem olvasott ar-röl.
   ca. ‘That Peter was sick, Anna hasn’t read about it.’

1.12.2.3. Properties of movement

As was outlined above, the two basic versions of topicalization, simple movement and left-dislocation, differ in that the latter, but not the former, affects a single constituent only and leaves a coreferential pronominal inside the clause. While simple topicalization can move essentially any constituent, left-dislocation is inapplicable to adverbials, with the exception of place adverbials, and, in a more limited manner, time adverbials.

This distribution of topicalization processes is, however, cross-classified by the type of contrastive interpretation mentioned repeatedly above, since nonfocussed contrasted phrases are also called left-dislocated in the literature (cf. E.Kiss 1987, 1994). First of all, such a reading arises only if the sentence carries some kind of emphasis, whether contradictory or contrastive. (Putative topics are in italics.)

(525) a. neutral
   Péter tegnap olvasta a könyv-et.
   Peter yesterday read the book-ACC
   ‘Yesterday Peter was reading the book.’
Page 181

b. emphatic

*Péter tegnap nem olvasta a könyv-ét.

‘Yesterday Peter was not reading the book.’

While the first sentence has only one reading, the second has at least three: (i) the one given above, with no contrast understood; (ii) ‘he wasn't reading the book yesterday, but someone else was’; (iii) ‘yesterday he wasn't reading the book, but at some other time he was.’ The contrast readings can be made more prominent by assigning rising pitch to the element in question, with a pause separating it from the rest of the sentence, which has falling intonation.

The contrast reading is associated with left-dislocation also because it occurs only in emphatic contexts, and left-dislocation is mostly possible under such a condition, too.

(526)  

a. neutral

*?A könyv-ét, az-t Péter olvasta a

the book-ACC it-ACC Peter yesterday read.DEF

szobá-ban.

the room-INE

b. emphatic

A könyv-ét, az-t Péter olvasta a szobá-ban.

‘As for the book, it was Peter that was reading it in the room

(...but there is/may be some other item that someone else was reading).’

Thus, whereas left-dislocated phrases are usually interpreted as contrasted, not all (nonfocussed) contrasted phrases are left-dislocated. Moreover, as was also mentioned above, so-called left-dislocated phrases do not necessarily occur in an absolute initial position.

In sum, both simple movement and, though to a lesser extent, left-dislocation are processes of topic formation. For further analyses of movement, see 1.14.

1.12.3. The optionality/obligatoriness of topicalization

Topicalization is an optional process: there are no constituents that are unacceptable if not topicalized.
1.13. HEAVY SHIFT
1.13.1. Elements affected by Heavy Shift
Since the order of constituents in the sentence is not fixed according to grammatical functions, it is not in these terms that Heavy Shift can be studied. Heavy Shift affects two types of constituents: finite subordinate clauses and adverbial phrases in NPs, which move obligatorily out of the focus position and optionally out of any other position.

1.13.2. Structures subject to Heavy Shift
1.13.2.1. Finite subordinate clauses
The preverbal focus position can host a single constituent, but it cannot accommodate a finite subordinate clause (with the exception of headless or free relative clauses). Since it is possible for the head of the clause to be a pronominal expletive or to contain one, when the clause is removed its focus function remains recoverable.

   Anna it-ACC that Peter sick was read.DEF yesterday
   ca. 'What Anna read yesterday was that Peter had been sick.'

   b. Anna az-t olvasta tegnap, hogy Péter beteg volt.
   Anna it-ACC read.DEF yesterday, that Peter sick was
   ca. 'Anna read yesterday, that Peter had been sick.'

   Péter that-DEL the boy-DEL who sick was read
   ca. 'It's the boy who'd been sick that Peter read about.'

   b. Péter ar-ról a fiú-ról olvasott, aki beteg volt.
   Péter that-DEL the boy-DEL who sick was read
   ca. 'It's the boy who'd been sick that Peter read about.'

Movement out of other syntactic positions is basically optional. Even clauses are not forced to move away from their heads in topic positions, though when placed postverbally the structure is most acceptable if the clause occupies a final position.

(529) a. Az-t, hogy Péter beteg volt, Anna olvasta tegnap.
   'The fact) that Peter had been sick, Anna read yesterday.'

   b. Azt Anna olvasta tegnap, hogy Péter beteg volt.
   'The fact that Peter had been sick, Anna read yesterday.'

(530) a. ?Anna olvasta azt, hogy Péter beteg volt, tegnap.
   'Anna read yesterday that Peter had been sick.'

   b. Anna olvasta azt tegnap, hogy Péter beteg volt.
   'Anna read yesterday that Peter had been sick.'
1.13.2.2. Adverbials in NPs

As was shown in 1.2.5.2.7, subject and object NPs can contain postnominal adverbial phrases constructed of case-marked or postpositional NPs. They, too, are disallowed in focus positions; thus they have to move out.

(a) Két könyv-et Ibsen-ről Anna érdekes-nek talált.
   two book-ACC Ibsen-DEL Anna interesting-DAT found
   ‘Anna found two books about Ibsen interesting.’
(b) *[Két könyv-et Ibsen-ről]* talált Anna érdekes-nek.
(c) [Két könyv-et] talált Ibsen-ről Anna érdekes-nek.
   ‘It’s two books about Ibsen that Anna found interesting.’

As regards other positions, movement of the adverbial phrase is in principle optional, though since the shifted phrase is not heavy the resulting structure is more awkward than the one with an adjacent adverbial. Below, topic is illustrated.

(531) Ibsen-ről Anna két könyv-et talált érdekesnek.
   ‘Anna found two books about Ibsen interesting.’

1.13.3. The target position of Heavy Shift

As illustrated, Heavy Shift moves finite clauses to the right edge of the clause in question, but adverbials may end up in nonfinal postverbal positions.

1.13.4. More than one phrase moved

Since only movement out of focus is obligatory, it is not necessary for two clauses to undergo Heavy Shift within the same sentence. However, it is possible to move two finite subordinate clauses within the same main clause. Below we will index the heads and the clauses belonging to them to help identify them. The first pair of sentences illustrates the ordering variations with clauses inside their original constituents.

(a) [Az a férfi, aki az asztal-nál áll] 1 tudja [azt, hogy ki érkezett] 2
    that man who the table-ADE stands knows it.ACC that who came
    ‘The man standing by the table knows who had come.’
(b) [Az, hogy ki érkezett] 2 tudja [az a férfi, aki az asztal-nál áll] 1
    ‘The man standing by the table knows who had come.’
Not all orders are acceptable if the clauses are shifted to final positions. Whether or not there is focus in the sentence, two ordering possibilities are unacceptable. (The meanings are essentially the same as above. Coindexing associates heads and clauses.)

(534)

a. *[Az a férfi]1 azt2 tudja [hogy ki érkezett]2 [aki az asztalnál áll]1
b. * [Az a férfi]1 azt2 tudja [aki az asztalnál áll]1 [hogy ki érkezett]2

c. Azt2[az a férfi]1 tudja [hogy ki érkezett]2 [aki az asztalnál áll]1

d. Azt2[az a férfi]1 tudja [aki az asztalnál áll]1 [hogy ki érkezett]2

‘It’s the man standing by the table that knows who had come.’
(535)

ca. ‘What the man standing by the table knows is who had come.’

It is thus immaterial which clause is in which final position; what matters is that in the competition between the two heads for the single focus position, the head of the relative clause wins out. But note that the head of the object complement clause is not excluded from the focus position; for that to be possible, the relative clause must not be shifted but has to stay adjacent to its head.

(536)  [Az a férfi, aki az asztalnál áll]1 azt2 tudja [hogy ki érkezett]2

c. ‘What the man standing by the table knows is who had come.’

1.13.5. Heavy Shift with elements next to complementizers
As illustrated above, Heavy Shift is possible from preverbal positions, including the one next to the complementizer (which, incidentally, is not necessarily a subject position in Hungarian).

1.14. OTHER MOVEMENT PROCESSES
1.14.1. Scrambling
As has been claimed throughout, constituent order is fairly free in Hungarian. This is a result of optional focussing and topicalization, and furthermore, of the high degree of freedom of constituents within a nonneutral sentence. Once some element is focussed, the relatively rigid order of the neutral sentence is “liberated” and items can move around with no difficulty.

(536)  a. neutral

Anna tegnap olvasta a könyvet a szobában.

Anna yesterday read.DEF the book.ACC the room.INE

‘Anna was reading the book in the room yesterday.’
Page 185
b. Anna tegnap a szobában olvasta a könyvet.
   ‘It’s in the room that Anna was reading the book yesterday.’
c. A szobában olvasta a könyvet Anna tegnap.
   ‘It’s in the room that Anna was reading the book yesterday.’
d. A szobában olvasta Anna a könyvet tegnap.
   ‘It’s in the room that Anna was reading the book yesterday.’
e. A szobában olvasta tegnap a könyvet Anna.
   ‘It’s in the room that Anna was reading the book yesterday.’

In other words, in addition to optional topicalization, there is also an optional process of “scrambling” to the right of the inflected verb.

1.14.2. Short verb and verbal prefix movement
In addition to topic and focus (or in general, quantifier) movement, there is a curious type of movement, which affects either simple infinitives or prefixes and reduced complements of complex infinitives that are complements to a class of main verbs, called “prefix-raising” in 1.1.2.2.6.8. They require in neutral sentences that the lower prefix—or, in its absence, the verb itself—be placed in front of them.

(537)  a. Anna le fog szalad-ni Péter-hez.
    Anna down will run-INF Peter.ALL
    ‘Anna will run down to Peter.’
  b. Péter könyv-et akar olvas-ni.
    Peter book-ACC wants read-INF
    ‘Peter wants to read books.’
  c. Anna úsz-ni akar.
    Anna swim-INF wants
    ‘Anna wants to swim.’

Moreover, these elements can move further onto a higher clause if its predicate is also “prefix-raising”. In case either the higher or the lower main verb is not “prefix-raising”, the prefix (or the reduced complement) must stay in its original clause. Below igyekszik ‘strive’ is not a “prefix-raising” verb.

(538)  a. Anna igyekszik el-olvas-ni a könyv-et.
    Anna strives PFX-read-INF the book-ACC
    ‘Anna strives to read the book.’
  b. *Anna el igyekszik olvas-ni a könyv-et.
Page 186
(539)  a. Anna igyekez-ni fog el-olvasni a könyv-et.
Anna strive-INF will PFX-read-INF the book-ACC
‘Anna will strive to read the book.’

b. *Anna el fog-ja igyekez-ni olvas-ni a könyv-et.

For more analysis, see Farkas and Sadock (1989) and Szabolsci (1996).

1.14.3. Focus left-dislocation
Another movement not discussed so far is a version of left-dislocation in which the anaphoric element associated with the left-dislocated item is in focus, rather than in topic, as was shown in 1.12. In this case too, both the left-dislocated phrase and the pronominal in focus bear the same case and, moreover, they have an identical, falling, pitch-accent in indicative clauses. Just as topic left-dislocation, this subtype does not have to occur in absolute initial position.

(540)  a. A könyv-et, Anna az-t olvasta a szobában
the book-ACC Anna it-ACC read.DEF the room-INE
techn. yesterday
‘It’s the book that Anna was reading in the room yesterday.’

b. Tegnap a könyv-et, azt olvasta Anna a szobában.
‘It’s the book that Anna was reading in the room yesterday.’

1.15. Minor sentence types
Sentences with no finite predicate are possible under certain conditions. In one type the initial locative predicate can do without the otherwise obligatory copula, cf. 1.2.1.1.3.

(541)  a. Előtt-e az élet.
before-3SG the life
‘Life is before him/her.’

b. Az élet előtt-e *(van).
is
Another type is a short command comprising a directional place adverbial, the equivalent of which is found in a number of other languages.
One more type of these noncopular sentences is questions. (543)

a. Mi-nek a sok kiabálás?
   what-DAT the much yelling
   ‘What's all the yelling for?’

b. Merre a kijárat?
   whither the exit
   ‘Where's the exit?’

Note that the respective answers must contain the copula, unless they fall under the option illustrated in (541).

1.16. OPERATIONAL DEFINITIONS FOR WORDCLASSES
Since Hungarian is a highly agglutinative language, major wordclasses can in principle be distinguished by the affixal morphemes they can cooccur with.

1.16.1. Noun
Nouns are inflected for case and number; that is not, however, sufficient to distinguish them from adjectives and numerals, which, for reasons touched upon in 1.2.5.1, can be the rightmost constituents in a noun phrase, thus inflected in identical ways to nouns. (544)

a. Anna négy alacsony férfi-t győzött le.
   Anna four short man-ACC beat PFX
   ‘Anna beat four short men.’

b. Anna négy alacsony-at győzött le.
   Anna beat four short ones.’

c. Anna négy-et győzött le.
   ‘Anna beat four ones.’

However, neither numerals nor adjectives can occur in the position of the possessed nominal in possessive noun phrases.
Other criteria are negative, as it were: adjectives and/or numerals can take various inflectional endings which are impossible for nouns. These will be illustrated below.

1.16.2. Pronoun

All pronouns substitute for entire noun phrases; further properties are given in the subsections below.

1.16.2.1. Personal pronouns

If the personal pronoun is in subject position, the finite predicate has to agree with it. First person singular verb-forms show agreement with second person objects, as well.

(546) a. en lát-ok b. en lát-lak téged/titeket
   I see-1SG I see-1SG.2OB you.SG/PL.ACC

Personal pronouns are inflected by being affixed to case affixes as bases.

(547) a. könyv-vel b. vel-e c. vel-em
   book-INS INS-3SG INS-1SG
   ‘with book’ ‘with him/her’ ‘with me’

d. Péter-nek e. nek-i f. nek-em
   Peter-DAT DAT-3SG DAT-1SG
   ‘to Peter’ ‘to him’ ‘to me’

1.16.2.2. Reflexive pronouns

The apparent root mag- is inflected for number and person, and the resulting form for case. Reflexive pronouns do not occur in subject position (see 1.5.1.4).

1.16.2.3. Demonstrative pronouns

They occur in place of noun phrases as well as in an initial position in them, preceding the obligatory definite article. In both instances they can be inflected for number and must be case-marked.
Page 189

(548) a. Ez-zel írta Anna a könyvet.
   this-INS wrote.DEF Anna the book.ACC
   ‘Anna wrote the book with this.’

b. Ez-zel a tol-lal írta Anna a könyvet.
   this-INS the pen-INS
   ‘Anna wrote the book with this pen.’

1.16.2.4. Possessive pronouns
They always follow the definite article and are constructed from a base of a personal pronoun, the possessive marker, and are inflected for number and person, and possibly for case as well, since they can stand in for full NPs.

(549) a. a ti könyv-e-tek
    the you book-POSS-2PL
    ‘your (PL) book’

b. a ti-é-tek
    the you-POSS-2PL
    ‘yours (PL)’

1.16.2.5. Relative pronouns
They are formed from a (sometimes optional) prefix a- and a base that is identical with the corresponding question-word. They are invariably placed initially in their clause, unless preceded by mint ‘as, than’ (cf. 1.8 and 1.9). They can be inflected for number and case.

1.16.3. Verb
Verbs are uniquely determined by the inflectional affixes for number and person they take, and in the case of nonauxiliaries by affixes for nonfinite forms, such as infinitive, or active, passive, adverbial, etc. participle.

1.16.4. Adjective
Adjectives, unlike nouns or numerals, can undergo gradation, and they can be modified by various adverbials, such as intensifiers.

1.16.5. Postposition
As was discussed in 1.2.4.1, it is the distinction between postpositions and case suffixes that has to be justified. Postpositions can take the -i attributivizer, they can be coordinated themselves, and their arguments can also be conjoined, unlike case suffixes. In addition some postpositions assign oblique cases to their arguments.
1.16.6. Numeral and quantifier
Numerals and quantifiers can take the “multiplier” affix -szor/ször/szer ‘times’ and, if in subject position and referring to human beings, they are suffixed by -en/an (and are taken to be plural).

(550)
a. Négy férfi érkezett.
   four man arrived
   ‘Four men arrived.’
b. Négy érkezett.
   ‘Four (things) arrived.’
c. Négy-en érkeztek.
   ‘Four (people) arrived.’
Chapter 2
Morphology

2.1. INFLECTION

2.1.1. Noun inflection

2.1.1.1. Means of expressing the functions of noun phrases

The syntactic and semantic functions of noun phrases are expressed primarily by suffixes (the most important of which are case endings) and by postpositions in Hungarian.

2.1.1.1.1. Bound affixes

Bound affixes play an important role in expressing the semantic and syntactic function of words in Hungarian. In Hungarian, nouns, pronouns, adjectives, and numerals are marked for case: nouns are case-marked everywhere, while pronouns, adjectives, and numerals are case-marked in attributive pro-form positions. All morphological cases in Hungarian involve suffixing.

The actual number of the cases is a subject of disagreement. The number accepted by various authors ranges from 17 to 27—cf. 17 cases in Abondolo (1988:26); 24 each in Lotz (1939:66), Rácz (1968:197–199), and Olsson (1992:101); 25 cases in Vago (1980:100); 26 cases in Tompa (1968:206–209); and 27 cases in Tompa (1961:557). Some of the suffixes are treated as derivational rather than inflectional by various authors, e.g., -n/an/en is considered the modal-essive case (MOE) and -lag/leg the modal case (MOD) by Tompa (1961, 1968), but not the other authors. Without wanting to take a stand over whether the suffixes considered derivational rather than inflectional by some of the authors are indeed case suffixes or not, I will treat all suffixes accepted at least by some of the authors as inflectional.

Although most of the cases can occur with nouns, pronouns, adjectives, and numerals alike, some of them have restricted use only: for instance,
The locative (LOC) is used only with a few city names, the temporal (TEM) only with nominals referring to time, and the multiplicative (MUL) only with numerals, etc. The cases are illustrated below by the forms of the nouns város ‘city’ and szék ‘chair’ for all cases that occur with all nouns, and by forms of other nouns for cases with restricted distribution. Other lexical items used in the table below are Pécs and Győr, both names of Hungarian cities, Húsvét ‘Easter’, öt ‘five’, nap ‘day’, hét ‘week’, hat ‘six’, távirat ‘telegram’, békítő ‘pacifying’, hal ‘quiet’, and kilenc ‘nine’.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Case</th>
<th>Suffix</th>
<th>Examples</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Nominative</td>
<td>-o</td>
<td>város, szék</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Accusative</td>
<td>-t/ot/et/öt</td>
<td>várost, székét</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dative</td>
<td>-nak/nek</td>
<td>városnak, széknek</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Locative</td>
<td>-t/ott/ett/ött</td>
<td>Pécssett, Győrott</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Inessive</td>
<td>-ban/ben</td>
<td>városban, székben</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Illative</td>
<td>-ból/ből</td>
<td>városból, székóból</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Adessive</td>
<td>-nál/nél</td>
<td>városnál, széknél</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Allative</td>
<td>-tól/tól</td>
<td>várostól, székétól</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Superessive</td>
<td>-hoz/hez/höz</td>
<td>városhoz, székhez</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Delative</td>
<td>-rölnél</td>
<td>városról, székkról</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sublative</td>
<td>-ra/re</td>
<td>városra, székre</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Terminative</td>
<td>-ig</td>
<td>városig, székit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temporal</td>
<td>-kor</td>
<td>Húsvétkor, ötkor</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Iterative</td>
<td>-nta/nte/onta/ente/önte</td>
<td>naponta, hetente</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Causal-final</td>
<td>-ért</td>
<td>városért, székért</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Instrumental</td>
<td>-val/vel</td>
<td>vároossal, székkel</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Translative</td>
<td>-vá/vé</td>
<td>várossza, székké</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Comitative</td>
<td>-stul/stül/östul/-estül/östül</td>
<td>városostul, székestül</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Essive</td>
<td>-ul/ül</td>
<td>városul, székül</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Multiplicative</td>
<td>-szor/szer/ször</td>
<td>hatszor, hétszer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Modal</td>
<td>-lag/leg</td>
<td>táviratlag, békítőleg</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Modal-essive</td>
<td>-n/án/en</td>
<td>halkan, kilencen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Formal</td>
<td>-képp(en)</td>
<td>városképpen, székékpen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Essive-formal</td>
<td>-ként</td>
<td>városként, széként</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Distributive</td>
<td>-enként/onként/-enként/önként</td>
<td>városonként, székonként</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The plural marker is -k/ok/ak/ek/ök everywhere except in possessive forms, e.g., rádiók ‘radios’, városok ‘cities’, falak ‘walls’, székek ‘chairs’, körök ‘circles’.
‘circles’. In an inflected form of a plural noun the plural suffix appears inside the case suffix, e.g., városokban ‘in cities’, székekben ‘in chairs’.

In possessive forms the plural marker is -i, as in the nominal possessive form városéi ‘city’s’ (as in Ezek az épületek a városéi ‘These buildings are the city’s (buildings)’, where the plural on városéi denotes the plurality of the possession) and in forms expressing plurality of the possession (as in székeim ‘my chairs’). Case suffixes occur outside possessive suffixes, e.g., a városomban ‘in my city’ and a székeimben ‘in my chairs’.

2.1.1.1.4. Postpositions

Occasionally the meaning normally expressed by a case suffix can be indicated by a postposition instead. The dative -nak/nek and the postpositions részére and számára correspond in meaning in denoting the indirect object. (These postpositions can only occur instead of the dative.) They occur when the indirect object is animate, and mostly in formal contexts only.

(1) Hoz-t-am egy level-et Péter-nek.
   bring-PAST-DEF.1SG a letter-ACC Peter-DAT
   ‘I brought a letter for Peter.’

(2) Hoz-t-am egy level-et Péter részére.
   bring-PAST-DEF.1SG a letter-ACC Peter for
   ‘I brought a letter for Peter.’

(3) Hoz-t-am egy level-et Péter számára.
   bring-PAST-DEF.1SG a letter-ACC Peter for
   ‘I brought a letter for Peter.’

2.1.1.1.8. Combination of different ways

Noun stems undergo the following morphophonemic alternations when certain suffixes are attached to them. In nouns ending in a or e the final vowel is á and é, respectively, when any suffix except for the temporal, the essive-formal, or the formal is attached. The forms of óra ‘hour, clock’ and körte ‘pear’ are given as illustrations below.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Nominative</th>
<th>Accusative</th>
<th>Plural</th>
<th>Essive-Formal</th>
<th>Temporal</th>
<th>Formal</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>óra</td>
<td>órát</td>
<td>órák</td>
<td>óraként</td>
<td>órakor</td>
<td>óraképpen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>körte</td>
<td>körtét</td>
<td>körték</td>
<td>körteként</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>körteképpen</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Several nouns ending in ó, Ő, ű, u, ú and ű alternate with a stem ending in v in some or all of the following forms—the accusative, plural,
superessive, and possessed. The forms of the nouns ló ‘horse’, kő ‘rock’, falu ‘village’, odú ‘hollow’, and fű ‘grass’ are
given as illustrations below.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Nominative</th>
<th>Accusative</th>
<th>Plural</th>
<th>Superessive</th>
<th>Possessed, 1SG</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ló</td>
<td>lovat</td>
<td>lovak</td>
<td>lovon</td>
<td>lovam</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kő</td>
<td>követ</td>
<td>kövek</td>
<td>kövon</td>
<td>kövem</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>falu</td>
<td>falut</td>
<td>falvak</td>
<td>falum</td>
<td>falum</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>odú</td>
<td>odút</td>
<td>odůk,</td>
<td>odůn</td>
<td>odům, odvam</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fű</td>
<td>fűvet</td>
<td>fűvek</td>
<td>fűvon</td>
<td>fűvem</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The noun lélek ‘soul’ and several nouns whose last vowel is é or á alternate with stems in e and a, respectively, in
the accusative, plural, and possessed forms. They are illustrated below by the forms of the nouns lélek ‘soul’, kéz

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Nominative</th>
<th>Accusative</th>
<th>Plural</th>
<th>Possessed, 1SG</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>lélek</td>
<td>lelket</td>
<td>lelkek</td>
<td>lelkem</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kéz</td>
<td>kezet</td>
<td>kezek</td>
<td>kezem</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tehén</td>
<td>tehenek</td>
<td>tehenek</td>
<td>tehenem</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nyár</td>
<td>nyarat</td>
<td>nyarak</td>
<td>nyaram</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pohár</td>
<td>poharat</td>
<td>poharak</td>
<td>poharam</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Some bisyllabic nouns and nouns ending in -elényalom delete the last vowel of the stem in the accusative, plural,
superessive, comitative, and possessed forms. These are illustrated below by the nominative, accusative, plural,
and first person singular possessed forms of the nouns torony ‘tower’, öböl ‘bay’, iker ‘twin’, hatalom ‘power’, and
szerelem ‘love’.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Nominative</th>
<th>Accusative</th>
<th>Plural</th>
<th>Possessed, 1SG</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>torony</td>
<td>tomoyt</td>
<td>tomyok</td>
<td>tomyom</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>öböl</td>
<td>öblöt</td>
<td>öblök</td>
<td>öblöm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>iker</td>
<td>ikret</td>
<td>ikrek</td>
<td>ikrem</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hatalom</td>
<td>hatalmat</td>
<td>hatalmak</td>
<td>hatalmam</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>szerelem</td>
<td>szerelmek</td>
<td>szerelmek</td>
<td>szerelmem</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Three noun stems, kehely ‘chalice’, teher ‘load’, and pehely ‘flake’, undergo metathesis in the accusative, plural,
superessive, comitative, and possessed forms.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Nominative</th>
<th>Accusative</th>
<th>Plural</th>
<th>Superessive</th>
<th>Possessed, 1SG</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>kehely</td>
<td>kelyhet</td>
<td>kelyhek</td>
<td>kelyhen</td>
<td>kelyhem</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>teher</td>
<td>terhet</td>
<td>terhek</td>
<td>terhen</td>
<td>terhem</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pehely</td>
<td>pelyhet</td>
<td>pelyhek</td>
<td>pelyhen</td>
<td>pelyhem</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
2.1.1.2. Marking syntactic functions
2.1.1.2.1. Subject of intransitive verb
The subject of an intransitive verb is in the nominative, which has no overt suffix.

(4) A lány áll.
    the girl stand.INDEF.3SG
    ‘The girl is standing.’

(5) A virág-ok el-hervad-t-ak.
    the flower-PL PFX-wilt-PAST-INDEF.3PL
    ‘The flowers wilted.’

(6) Az ajtó nyikoróg.
    the door squeak.INDEF.3SG
    ‘The door squeaks.’

2.1.1.2.2. Subject of transitive verb
The subject of a transitive verb is in the nominative in the case of all verbs.

(7) A lány ír-ja a level-et.
    the girl write-DEF.3SG the letter-ACC
    ‘The girl is writing the letter.’

(8) Egy férfi tud-ja a válasz-t.
    a man know-DEF.3SG the answer-ACC
    ‘A man knows the answer.’

(9) A nap el-olvast-ott-a a hav-at.
    the sun PFX-melt-PAST-DEF.3SG the snow-ACC
    ‘The sun melted the snow.’

2.1.1.2.3. Subject of copular construction
The subject of copular constructions involving van ‘be’ is in the nominative. The verb van ‘be’ is used in the existential (10)–(12), predicate locative (13)–(15), and the have-construction (16)–(18).

The copula is not expressed overtly in third person present tense forms in equative constructions, as in (11), but it is expressed overtly everywhere else.

(10) Én Sándor vagy-ok.
    I Alexander be-1SG
    ‘I am Alexander.’
Page 196

(11) Péter orvos ø.
Peter doctor be.3SG
‘Péter is a doctor.’

(12) Ók jégtáncos-ok vol-t-ak.
they figure.skater-PL be-PAST-3PL
‘They were figure skaters.’

(13) A hajó-k a nyílt tenger-en van-nak
the ship-PL the open sea-SUP be-3PL
‘The ships are out in the open sea.’

(14) Iván a szoba-ban van.
Ivan the room-INE be.3SG
‘Ivan is in the room.’

(15) A kiállítás-on vol-t-unk.
the exhibition-SUP be-PAST-1PL
‘We were at the exhibition.’

In the case of the have-construction, the possessor is in the dative, the thing possessed in the nominative, and the verb agrees with the latter in person and number. The thing possessed is obligatorily marked with the personal possessive suffix that agrees with the possessor in person and number (see section 2.1.1.4.7). The only exception to the marking of the thing possessed with the possessive suffix is in the rare case when a first or second person is possessed, as in (18).

Daniel-DAT old book-POSS.3SG-PL be-3PL
‘Daniel has old books.’

(17) Nek-ünk vol-t egy fekete macská-nk.
DAT-1PL be-PAST.3SG a black cat-POSS.1PL
‘We had a black cat.’

(18) Csak mi vagy-unk nek-i.
only we be-1PL DAT-3SG
‘S/he has only us.’

The subject of the copular verb válik ‘become’ is in the nominative.

(19) Péter jó író-vá vál-t.
Peter good writer-TRA become-PAST.INDEF.3SG
‘Peter became a good writer.’

The subject of the copular verb lesz ‘become’ is in the nominative, as in (20). This verb can also be used in a slightly different construction involving the elative, which is similar in meaning to English ‘make’ in a sentence like ‘make a good wife/husband’; cf. (21)–(22).
Page 197

(20) Péter jó író le-tt.
Peter good writer become-PAST.3SG
‘Peter became a good writer.’

(21) Péter-ből jó író le-tt.
Peter-ELA good writer become-pt.3SG
‘Peter became a good writer.’=‘Peter made a good writer.’

(22) Mi lesz belől-ed?
what become.3SG ELA-2SG
‘What will become of you?’

The subject of the copular verbs látszik ‘look’ and tűnik ‘appear’ is in the nominative.

(23) Iván boldog-nak látsz-ik.
Ivan happy-DAT look-INDEF.3SG
‘Ivan looks happy.’

(24) Barbara ma szomorú-nak tűn-t.
Barbara today sad-DAT appear-PAST.INDEF.3SG
‘Barbara appeared sad today.’

2.1.1.2.4. Direct object
The direct object is usually expressed by the accusative case. The marking of the direct object does not differ according to whether the subject is expressed overtly, as in (25) and (26), or covertly through person-marking on the verb, as in (27).

(25) Mária szeret-i András-t.
Mary like-DEF.3SG Andrew-ACC
‘Mary likes Andrew.’

(26) Ő vág-ja a kenyer-et.
s/he cut-DEF.3SG the bread-ACC
‘S/he cuts the bread.’

(27) Tud-om a válasz-t.
know-DEF.1SG the answer-ACC.
‘I know the answer.’

2.1.1.2.5. Indirect object
The indirect object is expressed predominantly with the dative (and occasionally with the postpositions részére and számára, see section 2.1.1.4 above).
(28) Adam egy csomag-ot küld Edit-nek.
   ‘Adam sends a package to Edith.’

(29) Tamás viz-ét ad a kutyá-k-nak.
   ‘Thomas gives water to the dogs.’

2.1.1.2.6. Object of comparison
The object of comparison can be expressed in two ways: with the adessive case, as in (30) below, or with a construction involving the comparative/equative conjunction mint, as in (31) below, in which case the object of comparison is in the nominative.

(30) A zongora nagy-obb a gitár-nál.
   the piano big-CMP the guitar-ADE
   ‘The piano is bigger than the guitar.’

(31) A zongora nagy-obb, mint a gitár.
   the piano big-CMP than the guitar
   ‘The piano is bigger than the guitar.’

(In some dialects of Hungarian the adessive case (gitár-tól) is also acceptable in sentences like (30) above.)

2.1.1.2.7. Object of equation
The object of equation is expressed with the construction involving the comparative/equative conjunction mint, where the object of comparison is in the nominative.

(32) A toll olyan nagy, mint a ceruza.
   the pen such big as the pencil
   ‘The pen is as big as the pencil.’

2.1.1.2.8. Other objects governed by verbs
A number of verbs govern objects which are expressed with cases other than the accusative. Objects in the dative are governed, for instance, by the verbs örül ‘be glad/happy about’, and telefonál ‘telephone, call’.

(33) Nagyon örül-ök az ajándék-nak.
   very be.happy-INDEF.1SG the gift-DAT
   ‘I am very happy about the gift.’
(34) Telefonáltál János-nak?
   ‘Have you called John?’

Inessive is governed, e.g., by bízik ‘trust’, illative by beleszeret ‘fall in love with’ and kerül ‘cost’, elative by kiszzeret ‘fall out of love with’.

(35) Csak a feleség-emben bízom.
   ‘I trust only my wife.’

(36) Péter bele-szeretett Andrea-ba.
   ‘Peter fell in love with Andrea.’

(37) Ez a könyv tíz dollár-BA kerül.
   ‘This book costs ten dollars.’

(38) Az az autó túl sok-BA került.
   ‘That car cost too much.’

The ablative is governed by verbs such as függ ‘depend on’ and fél ‘fear, be afraid of, and the allative by hasonlít ‘resemble’ and tartozik ‘belong to’.

(40) A siker csak Júliától függ.
   ‘Success depends on Julia alone.’

(41) Mi-től fél-sz?
   ‘What are you afraid of?’

(42) Ferenc nem hasonlít az ap-já-hoz.
   ‘Frank doesn’t resemble his father.’

The superessive is governed by verbs such as töpreng ‘brood over’ and csodálkozik ‘be suprised at’, the delative by gondoskodik ‘take care of and lemond ‘renounce, give up’, and the sublative by emlékszik ‘remember’, vár ‘wait for’, and figyel ‘listen, pay attention to’.

(43) Ez az épület is az egyetem-hez tartozik.
   ‘This building belongs to the university also.’
Page 200

(44) | Attila a jövő-jé-n töpreng.
   | Attila the future-POSS.1SG-SUP brood.over.INDENT.3SG
   | ‘Attila is brooding over his future.’

(45) | Nem csodálkoz-ol ez-en a kérdés-en?
   | not be.surprised-INDEF.2SG this-SUP the question-SUP
   | ‘Aren’t you surprised at this question?’

(46) | Adám maga gondoskod-ik az idős
   | Adam himself take.care-INDEF.3SG the elderly
   | any-já-ról.
   | mother-POSS.3SG-DEL
   | ‘Adam takes care of his elderly mother himself.’

(47) | Attila le-mond-ott az új autó-ról.
   | Attila down-say-PAST.1SG the new car-DEL
   | ‘Attila gave up the new car.’

(48) | Emléksz-el ar-ra az okos diák-ra?
   | remember-INDEF.2SG that-SUB the smart student-SUB
   | ‘Do you remember that smart student?’

(49) | A gyerek-ek nem figyel-t-ek a
   | the child-PL not pay.attention-PAST-INDEF.3PL the
   | tanár-ra.
   | teacher-SUB
   | ‘The children didn’t pay attention to the teacher.’

Other cases that appear on objects of verbs are the causal-final (e.g., felel ‘answer, be responsible for’ and aggódik
‘worry about/for’) and the instrumental (e.g., találkozik ‘meet, see’, tartozik ‘owe’, and ellenkezik ‘contradict’).

(50) | Gábor felel az autó-ért.
   | Gabriel be.responsible.INDEF.3SG the car-CAU
   | ‘Gabriel is responsible for the car.’

(51) | András aggód-ik Mária-ért.
   | Andrew worry-INDEF.3SG Mária-CAU
   | ‘Andrew worries about Maria.’

(52) | Ma nem találkoz-t-am Edit-tel.
   | today not meet-PAST-INDEF.1SG Edith-INS
   | ‘I didn’t meet Edith today.’

(53) | Péter húsz dollár-ral tartoz-ik nek-em.
   | Peter twenty dollar-INS owe-INDEF.3SG DAT-1SG
   | ‘Peter owes me twenty dollars.’
Ne ellenkez-z vel-em!
not contradict-IMP.INDEF.2SG INS-1SG
‘Don't contradict me!’

2.1.1.2.9. Complement of copular construction

2.1.1.2.9.1–3. Copular constructions involving ‘be’ Complements of copular constructions expressing definition, identity, and role are indicated with the nominative.
(55) Te férfi vagy.
you.SG man be.2SG
‘You are a man.’
(56) Én Adám vagy-ok.
I Adam be-1SG
‘I am Adam.’
(57) Mi bánýász-ok vagy-unk.
we miner-PL be-1PL
‘We are miners.’

2.1.1.2.9.4. Other copular verbs The copular verb lesz ‘become’ takes a nominative complement.
(58) Attila orvos le-tt.
Attila doctor become-PAST.3SG
‘Attila became a doctor.’
(59) A béka királyfi-vá vál-t.
the frog prince-TRA turn.into-PAST.INDEF.3SG
‘The frog turned into a prince.’

2.1.1.2.10. Subject-complement

The subject-complement of the verbs látszik ‘look’ and tűnik ‘appear’ is in the dative.
(60) A lány szomorú-nak látsz-ik.
the girl sad-DAT look-INDEF.3SG
‘The girl looks sad.’
A diákok elégedettnek tűnnek.

The students appear satisfied.

There is no construction in Hungarian that would correspond to the English ‘I was made king’. Its closest Hungarian equivalent is expressed with an object-complement construction, with the complement in the translative and the verb in an unspecified third person plural form.

Engem király-lyá te-tt-ék.

‘I was made king.’

Engem boldog-gá te-tt-ék.

‘I was made happy.’

Object-complements are most frequently assigned the dative and the translative cases.

Verbs of appointing such as (ki)kiált ‘proclaim’, (ki)nevez ‘appoint’, (meg)koronáz ‘crown’, (meg)tesz ‘make’, (fel)szentel ‘ordain’, and (meg)-választ ‘elect’ take both dative and translative object-complements. Without their perfective prefixes, ki-, meg-, and fel-, they usually take a translative object-complement, and either a translative or a dative one when they occur with the prefix.

István-t tegnap pap-pá szentel-t-ék.

‘Stephen was ordained priest yesterday.’

Csaba-t tegnap fel-szentel-t-ék

‘Csaba was ordained priest yesterday.’

Anita-t meg-választ-ott-ák

‘Anita was elected president.’

Verbs of characterization, dubbing and declaring which take object-complements, such as (el)fogad ‘accept’, gondol ‘think’, (el)képzel ‘imagine’,

(67) Máriá-t mindenki butá-nak tart-ja.
   Maria-ACC everybody stupid-DAT consider-DEF.3SG
   ‘Everyone considers Maria to be stupid.’
(68) Mi-nek nevez-z-em a kutyá-m-at?
   what-DAT name-IMP-DEF.1SG the dog-POSS.1SG-ACC
   ‘What shall I name my dog?’
(69) A fi-unk-at Miklós-nak keresztel-jük.
   The son-POSS.1PL-ACC Nicholas-DAT baptize-DEF.1PL
   ‘We’ll baptize our son Nicholas.’
(70) A katoná-t mindenki halott-nak hi-tt-e.
   the soldier-ACC everyone dead-DAT believe-PAST-DEF.3SG
   ‘Everyone believed the soldier to be dead.’

2.1.1.2.12. Objects governed by adjectives
A small number of Hungarian adjectives govern objects. These include jó ‘good’ (governing sublative in the meaning ‘good for’ and elative in the meaning ‘good at’), büszke ‘proud’ (governing sublative), független ‘independent’ (governing ablative), érdekelt ‘having a stake/interest in’ (governing inessive), as well as bűnös and vétkes, both meaning ‘guilty’ (both governing inessive).

(71) Márton nagyon jó fiziká-ból.
   Martin very good physics-ELA
   ‘Martin is very good at physics.’
(72) Pál büszke vol-t az angol-já-ra.
   Paul proud be-PAST.3SG the English-POSS.3SG-SUB
   ‘Paul was proud of his English.’
(73) Ti nem vagy-tok vétkes-ek a lopás-ban.
   you.PL not be-2PL guilty-PL the theft-INE
   ‘You (PL) are not guilty of the theft.’

2.1.1.2.13. Agent in passive/impersonal constructions
The passive is a marginal construction whose status as a real passive is debated in Hungarian (see section 2.1.3.1.1).
In impersonal constructions the agent is expressed with an unspecified third person plural verb-form.
2.1.1.2.14. Topic
There is no special case-marking for topic in Hungarian, but see section 1.11 for a discussion of emphasis and 1.12 for details on topic and focus.

2.1.1.3. Expressing functions with nonfinites and nominalized verbs
2.1.1.3.1. Absolute construction
In this construction the subject is not expressed overtly, but it is understood to be identical with the subject of the finite clause.

(76) Tanul-t ember lé-vén Dénes tud-t-a a
learn-PPRT man be-PCVB Dennis know-PAST-DEF.3SG the
válasz-t.
answer-ACC
‘Being a learned man, Dennis knew the answer.’
The direct object is expressed with the accusative in this construction also.

(77) A tigris-t lát-va a vadász-ok
the tiger-ACC see-SCVB the hunter-PL
meg-ijed-t-ek.
PFX-get.scared-PAST-INDEF.3PL
‘Seeing the tiger, the hunters got scared.’

2.1.1.3.2. Infinitive
The subject of the infinitive is not expressed overtly, and it is always understood to be identical with the subject or the object of the main clause.
Page 205

(78) Iván el-men-t kosárlabdáz-ni.
'Ivan has gone to play basketball.'

(79) Mark el-küld-t-e Iván-t kosárlabdáz-ni.
'Mark sent Ivan off to play basketball.'

When the infinitival clause is the subject of the main clause, the agent of the infinitive is in the dative.

(80) Péter-nek nehéz franciá-ul olvas-ni.
'For Peter to read in French is hard.'

(81) Nek-em nagyon nehéz újra diák-nak le-nn-em.
'For me to be a student again is very hard.'

If the subject of an infinitival subject clause is not expressed, the clause indicates generic reference.

(82) Diák-nak le-nni jó.
'It’s good to be a student.'

If the subject-complement of a verb is expressed with the translative in a finite clause, it is expressed with the translative in an infinitival clause also.

(83) A béká-nak nem vol-t könnyű királyfi-vá vál-ni-a.
'For the frog to become a prince was not easy.'

The case of the object-complement is the same in an infinitival clause as it is in the finite clause.

(84) Károly-t király-nak koronáz-ni nem lesz könnyű.
'To crown Charles king will not be easy.'
In the case of adjectives governing objects in infinitival clauses, both the subject of the clause and the adjective are in the dative, while the object of the adjective remains in the same case as it is in a finite clause.

For Martin to be good at physics is very easy.

All lexical verbs (but none of the auxiliaries) can have a nominalized form in Hungarian. Nominalized forms employ deverbal nominals derived with -ás/és, and the possessive construction, with the possessor’s slot being occupied by the subject in the case of intransitive verbs and obligatorily by the object in the case of transitive verbs.

The subject of a nominalized transitive verb is optionally included in an attributive adjectival phrase involving the adjectival általi form of the postposition által ‘by’, or involving the postposition által and the active participial form való of the verb van ‘be’.

Other arguments of the verb retain their case-marking. Nominalized
constructions involving verbs assigning inherent cases always contain the participle való.

(91) Gyöngyi repülő-vel val-ó meg-érkez-és-e
    Pearl plane-INS be-APRT PFX-arrive-NML-POSS.3SG
    ‘Pearl’s arrival by plane’

(92) Dénes-nek Mártá-ba val-ó bele-szeret-és-e
    Dennis-DAT Martha-ILL be-APRT into-love-NML-POSS.3SG
    ‘Dennis’s falling in love with Martha’

Nominalized constructions involving verbs that assign only noninherent cases in addition to an accusative object do not have to contain való.

(93) akapu piros-ra fest-és-e
    the gate red-SUB paint-NML-POSS.3SG
    ‘painting the gate red’

Phrases containing nominalizations can serve as subjects, as arguments governed by verbs, and as adverbial phrases.

(94) A kapu kék-re fest-és-e egy órá-ig
    the gate blue-SUB paint-NML-POSS.3SG one hour-TER
    tart.
    take.INDEF.3SG
    ‘Painting the gate blue takes one hour.’

(95) János a kincs el-rejt-és-é-t
    John the treasure PFX-hide-NML-POSS.3SG-ACC
    javasol-t-a.
    suggest-PAST-DEF.3SG
    ‘John suggested hiding the treasure.’

(96) Örül-ök Pál váratlan
    be.happy-INDEF.1SG Paul unexpected
    meg-érkez-és-é-nek.
    PFX-arrive-NML-POSS.3SG-DAT
    ‘I am happy about Paul’s unexpected arrival.’

(97) A váza el-tör-és-e-kor Éva a szobá-ban
    the vase PFX-break-NML-POSS.3SG-TEM Eve the room-INE
    vol-t.
    be-PAST.3SG
    ‘Eve was in the room when the vase was broken.’
2.1.1.4. Expressing nonlocal semantic functions

2.1.1.4.1. Benefactive

The benefactive is most commonly expressed by the dative in Hungarian. The benefactive cannot be expressed by the copular expression (the equivalent of English ‘This is for Bill’) in Hungarian. As an attributive element in the noun phrase, the benefactive can be expressed with a passive participial construction.

(98) Dénes virág-ot ad-ott Júliá-nak.
    ‘Dennis gave flowers to Julia.’

(99) a Dénes-nek köt-ött pulóver
    ‘the sweater knitted for Dennis’

The meaning ‘for the sake of’ is expressed by the causal-final -ért.

(100) Márta mindez-t János-ért te-tt-e.
    ‘Martha did all of this for John’s sake.’

The postpositions számára and részére, both meaning ‘for’, also indicate the benefactive and are used as alternative to dative case-marking. They are used with animate benefactors and mostly only in formal contexts.

(101) Jó- tt egy levél az igazgató
    ‘A letter came for the director.’

(102) az igazgató részére jö- tt levél
    ‘the letter which came for the director’

The postposition javára ‘for the good/benefit/favor’ also indicates the benefactive. It is also used in sports, to announce results and positive points in games.

(103) Mark le-mond-ott a ház-ról Béla
    ‘Mark renounced the house in Béla’s favor.’
Page 209

(104) Egyelőre 3:1 a Fradi javára.
so.far 3 1 the Fradi for.benefit
‘It’s 3 to 1 Fradi so far.’

(105) Szabadrúgás az Újpest javára.
free.kick the Újpest for.benefit
‘a free kick for Újpest’

(106) az Újpest javára ítél-t szabadrúgás
the Újpest for.benefit rule-PPRT free.kick
‘the free kick ruled for Újpest’

2.1.1.4.2. Source
Source is most commonly expressed with the elative and the ablative, and occasionally with the delative, the three
cases which in local functions denote ‘motion from’. The selection of the case is determined by the verb: kap valamit
valakitől ‘receive something from someone’ (ablative); nyer valamit valamiből ‘obtain something from something’,
fakad valamiből ‘spring/ stem from something’, ered valamiből ‘be derived/originate from something’ (all elative); egy
tőről fakad ‘stem from one source (idiomatic)’ (delative); származik valakitől/valahonnan ‘originate/come from
somebody/ somewhere’ (ablative with human source, and any of the ‘motion from’ cases with nonhumans and
places, as required by the noun—see section 2.1.1.5).

(107) Ez-t a level-et Györgyi-től
this-ACC the letter-ACC Georgina-ABL
kap-t-am.
receive-PAST-DEF.1SG
‘I received this letter from Georgina.’

(108) A DNS-t a vér-ből nyer-ik.
the DNA-ACC the blood-ELA obtain-DEF.3PL
‘DNA is obtained from blood.’

(109) Pál hibá-ja tudatlanság-ból
Paul mistake-POSS.3SG ignorance-ELA
fakad-t.
stem-PAST.INDEF.3SG
‘Paul’s mistake stemmed from his ignorance.’

(110) Éva Szentes-ről származ-ik, munkáscsalád-ból.
Eve Szentes-DEL originate-INDEF.3SG worker.family-ELA
‘Eve comes from Szentes, from a working-class family.’
The elative is also used to denote a partitive meaning.

\[(111)\]  
\[\text{Eb-ből a tortá-ból kér-ek.}\]  
\[\text{this-ELA the cake-ELA want-INDEF.1SG}\]  
\[\text{‘I want a slice from this cake.’}\]  

The postposition közül ‘from between/among’, used as an alternative to the case suffixes, also indicates source.

\[(112)\]  
\[\text{Ez-ek közül a könyv-ek közül}\]  
\[\text{this-PL from.among the book-PL from.among}\]  
\[\text{válasz-sz-ál.}\]  
\[\text{choose-IMP-INDEF.2SG}\]  
\[\text{‘Choose from among these books.’}\]  

In copular constructions the same case or postposition is used as in adverbial constructions denoting source.

\[(113)\]  
\[\text{Ez a levél Györgyi-től van.}\]  
\[\text{this the letter Georgina-ABL be.3SG}\]  
\[\text{‘This letter is from Georgina.’}\]  

In attributive phrases the passive participle form of the verb is used together with the case it normally requires.

\[(114)\]  
\[\text{a Györgyi-től kap-ott levél}\]  
\[\text{the Georgina-ABL receive-PPRT letter}\]  
\[\text{‘the letter received from Georgina’}\]  

\[(115)\]  
\[\text{a vér-ből nyer-t DNS}\]  
\[\text{the blood-ELA obtain-PPRT DNA}\]  
\[\text{‘the DNA obtained from blood’}\]  

2.1.1.4.3. Instrumental

The instrumental semantic function is most commonly expressed by the instrumental case in Hungarian.

\[(116)\]  
\[\text{A kilincs-et kalapács-csal tör-t-em}\]  
\[\text{the door.handle-ACC hammer-INS break-PAST-DEF.1SG}\]  
\[\text{le.}\]  
\[\text{down}\]  
\[\text{‘I broke off the door handle with a hammer.’}\]  

\[(117)\]  
\[\text{János a level-et írógép-pel ír-t-a.}\]  
\[\text{John the letter-ACC typewriter-INS write-PAST-DEF.3SG}\]  
\[\text{‘John wrote the letter with a typewriter.’}\]
Erika got home with John's help.

Are you traveling to Prague by train or by plane?

The instrumental is also expressed with the postpositions által 'by, through', keresztül 'through', révén 'through', and útján 'through, by way of, replacing the appropriate case.

The sultan sent a message to them through an envoy.

They were informed of the news through a letter.

The negative instrumental is expressed with the postposition nélkül 'without'.

I broke off the door handle without a hammer.

Since the instrumental function always requires a lexical verb in Hungarian, it is not possible to express it with a copular expression.

In an attributive construction, the verb is in the passive participle form and its object is in the case required by the verb. Verbs not taking an accusative object (e.g., utazik 'travel' or értesül 'be informed') cannot be used in an attributive construction.

The hammer-INS down-break-PPRT door.handle
'the door handle broken off with the hammer'
The comitative semantic function is most commonly expressed with the instrumental case in both copular and adverbial constructions.

(125) Erzsébet Lajos-sal van.
Elizabeth Louis-INS be.3SG
‘Elizabeth is with Louis.’

(126) Nem szeret-ek Karczi-val táncol-ni.
not like-INDEF.1SG Charlie-INS dance-INF
‘I don't like to dance with Charlie.’

The comitative construction involving the instrumental is also used to express a coordinated phrase involving the speaker, the hearer, or some other person(s).

(127) Ma a gyerek-ek-kel a park-ban játsz-ott-unk.
today the child-PL-INS the park-INE play-PAST-INDEF.1PL
‘The children and I/we played in the park today.’

(128) A diák-ok-kal a múzeum-ba men-t-etek?
the student-PL-INS the museum-ILL go-PAST-INDEF.2PL
‘Did you (SG/PL) and the students go to the museum?’

(129) A kiállítás-t nem néz-t-ék meg a
vendég-ek-kel.
the exhibition-ACC not see-PAST-DEF.3PL PFX the guest-PL-INS
‘S/he/They and the guests didn’t see the exhibition.’

The comitative function is also expressed by the comitative case, but usually when the activity is carrying something or somebody rather than being accompanied by it. The comitative case suffix cannot attach to plural nouns (cf. (132)), and it is ambiguous with respect to number marking in its stem (cf. (131) and (133)).

(130) Ruhá-stul és cipő-stül feküd-t-em az
clothes-COM and shoe-COM lie-PAST-INDEF.1SG the
ágy-ban.
bed-INE
‘I was lying in bed with my clothes and shoes on.’
Page 213

(131) Gyerek-estül men-t-ek nyaral-ni.
child-COM go-PAST-INDF.3PL vacation-INF
‘They went on vacation with their child/children.’

(132) *Kutyá-k-ostul men-t-ek vadász-ni.
dog-PL-COM go-PAST-INDF.3PL hunt-INF
‘They went hunting with dogs.’

(133) a gyerek-estül nyaral-ó házaspár
the child-COM vacation-APRT married.couple
‘the married couple vacationing with their child/children’

The negative comitative function is expressed with the postposition nélkül ‘without’.

(134) A vadász-ök kutyá-k nélkül men-t-ek
the hunter-PL dog-PL without go-PAST-INDF.3PL
vadász-ni.
hunt-INF
‘The hunters went hunting without dogs.’

(135) A rendőr fegyver nélkül van.
the policeman gun without be.3SG
‘The policeman is without a gun.’

The comitative can be expressed in an attributive phrase if the phrase contains a lexical verb. The verb is in the active participial form, and its argument is in the case normally required by the verb.

(136) a farkas-ok-ra vadász-ó férfi
the wolf-PL-SUB hunt-APRT man
‘the man hunting wolves’

(137) a kutyá-k nélkül vadász-ó ember-ek
the dog-PL without hunt-APRT person-PL
‘the people hunting without dogs’

2.1.1.4.5. Circumstance

Constructions expressing circumstance in Hungarian can only be indicated with attributive phrases or as complements of the copular construction. They usually employ denominal adjectives.

(138) a piszkos kez-ű férfi
the dirty hand-ADJDER man
‘the dirty-handed man’
The man dirty hand-ADJ DER
‘The man is dirty-handed.’

The girl with the black skirt-ADJ DER girl
‘the girl with the black skirt’ (lit. ‘the black-skirted girl’)

Negative circumstance is expressed with denominal adjectives derived with the privative suffix.

The cat with no tail’=‘the tailless cat’

The jobless teacher

Negative circumstance can also be expressed with the postposition nélkül ‘without’ in a copular expression, or by an adjectival phrase involving the adjective nélküli, which is derived from this postposition.

The teacher job without be.3SG
‘The teacher is without a job.’

The teacher without-ADJ DER teacher
‘the teacher without a job’

The possessive relationship is expressed with personal possessive suffixes (see next section) attached to the thing possessed.

The possessor is either in the nominative or dative case. If it is not specifically emphasized, it is in the nominative (145)-(146), appearing overtly only if it is not a pronominal possessor (145).

The boy book-POSS.3SG
‘the boy’s book’

A könyv-em
‘my book’
A pronominal possessor is expressed overtly only if it is emphasized.

(147) Ez az én könyv-em, nem a tiéd.
    this the I book-POSS.1SG not the yours
    ‘This is my book, not yours.’

When the possessive phrase is focussed, the possessor can occur in either the nominative or the dative.

(148) Az én könyv-em nem vesz-ett el.
    the I book-POSS.1SG not get.lost-PAST.INDEF.3SG PFX
    ‘As for my book, it didn't get lost.’

(149) Nek-em a könyv-em nem vesz-ett
    DAT-1SG the book-POSS.1SG not get.lost-PAST.INDEF.3SG el.
    PFX
    ‘As for my book, it didn’t get lost.’

(150) János könyv-e nem vesz-ett el.
    John book-POSS.3SG not get.lost-PAST.INDEF.3SG PFX
    ‘As for John’s book, it didn’t get lost.’

(151) János-nak a könyv-e nem vesz-ett
    PFX
    ‘As for John’s book, it didn’t get lost.’

When the possessor but not the possessed nominal is focussed, dative is obligatory in the possessor phrase, and the possessor is moved out of the possessive noun phrase.

(152) Nek-em nem vesz-ett el a könyv-em.
    DAT-1SG not get.lost-PAST.INDEF.3SG PFX the book-POSS.1SG
    ‘As for me, my book didn’t get lost.’

(153) János-nak nem vesz-ett el a könyv-e.
    John-DAT not get.lost-PAST.INDEF.3SG PFX the book-POSS.3SG
    ‘As for John, his book didn’t get lost.’

In the possessive have-construction the possessor is expressed with the dative (with the pronominal possessor appearing overtly only when emphasized), the verb is the verb van ‘be’ (agreeing with the thing
possessed in person and number), and the thing possessed is marked with the personal possessive suffix corresponding to the possessor in person and number.

(154)  Rita-nak szép gyerek-ei van-nak.
       Rita-DAT beautiful child-POSS.3SG.PL be-3PL
       ‘Rita has beautiful children.’

(155)  Hosszú haj-am van.
       long hair-POSS.1SG be.3SG
       ‘I have long hair.’

(156)  Nek-em hosszú haj-am van.
       DAT-1SG long hair-POSS.1SG be.3SG
       ‘As for me, I have long hair.’

There is no difference in Hungarian between alienable and inalienable possession. When the possessor is referred to as a nominal rather than attributively (e.g., as in ‘mine’ rather than as in ‘my (book)’), the lexical noun phrase indicating the possessor receives the nominal possessor suffix -é (marked by a following -i if the possession is plural) and a pronominal phrase is expressed with the nominal possessive pronoun (see section 2.1.2.3.4).

(157)  Ez-ek a virág-ok Évá-é-i, nem Irén-é-i.
       this-PL the flower-PL Eve-POS-PL not Irene-POS-PL
       ‘These flowers are Eve’s, not Irene’s.’

(158)  Az a macska az én gyerek-ei-m-é.
       that the cat the I child-POSS.1SG.PL-POS
       ‘That cat is my children’s.’

(159)  Az a kabát az enyém.
       that the coat the mine
       ‘That coat is mine.’

2.1.1.4.7. Possessed
The thing possessed is marked with the personal possessive suffix in Hungarian.

The possessive suffixes are the following:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Person</th>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
<td>-m/om/ém/öm</td>
<td>-nk/unk/ünk</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>-d/od/ed/od</td>
<td>-(o)tok/(e)tek/(ö)tök</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>-(j)a/(j)e</td>
<td>-(j)uk/(j)ük</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

In the first and second person, nouns ending in vowels receive consonant initial suffixes, while nouns ending in consonants take vowel initial.
suffixes. In the third person, nouns ending in vowels always take j-initial suffixes, while for nouns ending in consonants it is not possible to propose a rule that could adequately predict whether a noun will take a j-initial suffix or a j-less one.

The paradigms for autó ‘car’, kabát ‘coat’, and szék ‘chair’ are as follows:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Person</th>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
<td>autóm, kabátom, székem</td>
<td>autónk, kabátunk, székünk</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>autód, kabátod, széked</td>
<td>autótok, kabátotok, széketer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>autója, kabátja, széke</td>
<td>autójuk, kabátjuk, székük</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Plurality of the thing possessed is marked with the plural possessive suffix -i:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Person</th>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
<td>-(j)aim/(j)eim</td>
<td>-ink/(j)aink/(j)eink</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>-(j)aid/(j)eid</td>
<td>-itok/(j)aitok/(j)eitek</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>-(j)ai/(j)ei</td>
<td>-ik/(j)aik/(j)eik</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Nouns ending in vowels receive i-initial suffixes, while for nouns ending in consonants it is impossible to predict morphophonemically whether a noun will take j-initial suffixes or j-less ones.

The paradigms for körte ‘pear’, kalap ‘hat’, and könyv ‘book’ are the following:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Person</th>
<th>Singular</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
<td>körtéim, kalapjaim, könyveim</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>körtéid, kalapjaid, könyveid</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>körtéi, kalapjai, könyvei</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Person</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
<td>körtéink, kalapjaink, könyveink</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>körtéitek, kalapjaitok, könyveitek</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>körtéik, kalapjaik, könyveik</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The third person plural possessive suffix occurs on the thing possessed only if the possessor is expressed, overtly or covertly, with a pronoun (cf. (160)–162) and (164)–(165)). If the possessor is expressed with a nominal, the possessed noun is marked with third person singular suffix (cf. (163) and (166)). Note also that the third person plural pronoun is ő instead of the usual űk ‘they’ when it indicates a possessor (cf. (161)). When, as in (162), the possessor is marked with the dative, the possessor and the thing possessed cannot be in a single NP (*a nekik kutyájuk ‘their dog’).

(160) A kutyá-juk ugat.
the dog-POSS.3PL bark.INDEF.3SG
‘Their dog is barking.’
Az ő kutyá-juk ugat.
the they dog-POSS.3PL bark.INDEF.3SG
‘It’s their dog that is barking.’

Nek-ik a kutyá-juk ugat.
DAT-3PL the dog-POSS.3PL bark.INDEF.3SG
‘It’s their dog that is barking.’

A gyerek-ek kutyá-ja ugat.
the child-PL dog-POSS.3SG bark.INDEF.3SG
‘The children’s dog is barking.’

Van egy kutyá-juk.
be.3SG a dog-POSS.3PL
‘They have a dog.’

Nek-ik van egy kutyá-juk.
DAT-3PL be.3SG a dog-POSS.3PL
‘They have a dog.’

A gyerek-ek-nek van egy kutyá-ja.
the child-PL-DAT be.3SG a dog-POSS.3SG
‘The children have a dog.’

Also see section 1.10 on the possessive.
In the case of plural possessors, a possession marked for the plural is ambiguous between each possessor having one and more than one possession (167), while a singular possession unambiguously indicates each possessor as having only one possession (168).

Az apá-k fi-ai-k-kal együtt
the father-PL son-PL-POSS.3PL-INS together
jö-tt-ek.
come-PAST-INDEF.3PL
The fathers came together with their sons=each father came with his son(s).’

A diplomatá-k feleség-ük-kel együtt
the diplomat-PL wife-POSS.3PL-INS together
jö-tt-ek.
come-PAST-INDEF.3PL
‘The diplomats came together with their wives=each diplomat came with his wife.’

2.1.1.4.8. Quality
Quality is expressed only with attributive phrases, in a way that parallels the expression of circumstance (see 2.1.1.4.5).
Negative quality is usually also expressed with adjectival phrases involving adjectives derived with the privative suffix -tlan/tlen/talan/telen/atlan/etlen.

Reference quality is expressed by means of a possessive phrase.

Reference quantity is expressed with adjectival phrases involving uninflected measurement words.

2.1.1.4.9. Quantity
Quantity is expressed with adjectival phrases involving denominal adjectives derived with -s/os/es/ös or -ú/ű, in either copular expressions or attributive phrases.

Reference quantity is expressed with adjectival phrases involving uninflected measurement words.
2.1.1.4.10. Material
Material can be expressed in two alternative ways: by compound nouns formed with adjectival phrases involving underived adjectives, or by attributive phrases containing the passive participle.

(179) Ez egy téglaház.
this a brick.house
‘This is a brick house.’

(180) Ez egy téglá-ból épül-t ház.
this a brick-ELA build-PPRT house
‘This is a house built of bricks.’

Negative material is expressed by attributive phrases containing the passive participle and the postposition nélkül ‘without’.

(181) Ez egy szög-ek nélkül fel-épít-ett fatemplom.
this a nail-PL without PFX-build-PPRT wood.church
‘This is a wooden church built without nails.’

2.1.1.4.11. Manner
Manner is expressed with adverbial elements or attributive phrases, employing several cases. The modal-essive, the essive, and the modal are attached to adjectives to express manner.

The essive is used with names of languages to express ‘speak/ understand/write/read, etc. in language x’. It is also used with several qualitative adjectives, especially with those denoting negative qualities (182).

(182) Halk-an beszélget-t-ünk.
quiet-MOE talk-PAST-INDEF.1PL
‘We were talking quietly.’

(183) Az a férfi magyar-ul beszél vagy
that the man Hungarian-ESS speak.INDEF.3SG or finn-ül?
Finnish-ESS
‘Is that man speaking Hungarian or Finnish?’
Of the cases that can express manner on nouns, the instrumental and the inessive are most common.

Of the cases that can express manner on nouns, the instrumental and the inessive are most common.

The elative also sometimes expresses manner.

The postpositions módra and módjára, both meaning ‘in the mode/ manner of’, also express manner.
The dog howled like a wolf.

Manner is often expressed with the adverbial participle.

The woman ran out of the house screaming.

The little girl hopped down the steps.

There are numerous adverbs that express manner as well, among them egyedül ‘alone’, együtt ‘together’, külön ‘separately’, hirtelen ‘suddenly’, and gyalog ‘on foot’.

They always travel separately.

Negative manner can be expressed by the postposition nélkül ‘without’ or by adjectives derived with the privative suffix and inflected for essive.

Dennis embraced Martha without passion.
The man embracing Martha without passion

Attila left the room without a word.

Attila word-PRIV-ESS go-PAST.INDEF.3SG out the room-ELA

The cases that most commonly express cause are the elative and the ablative.

Julia almost collapsed with exhaustion.

Julia almost PFX-fall-PAST.INDEF.3SG the exhaustion-ABL

Eve didn't go on the roller coaster out of cowardice.

ea roller.coaster-SUB cowardice-ELA up not sit-APRT girl

Paul's grandmother died of cancer.

Paul grandmother-POSS.3SG cancer-INE die-PAST.INDEF.3SG meg.

Paul's aunt who died of cancer

Paul-DAT the cancer-INE PFX-die-PPRT aunt-POSS.3SG
The causal is used to express ‘in exchange’ type of cause.

(207) Csaba minden hibá-ért meg-büntet-i a
Csaba every mistake-CAU PFX-punish-DEF.3SG the
fi-á-t.
son-POSS.3SG-ACC
‘Csaba punishes his son for every mistake.’

The most commonly used postposition expressing cause is miatt ‘because of’. Other causal postpositions are fogva and folytán, both meaning ‘as a result of’, nyomán ‘on the basis of’, and következtében ‘as a consequence of’.

(208) A bolt betegség miatt van zár-va.
the shop illness because.of be.3SG close-SCVB
‘The shop is closed because of illness.’

(209) a betegség miatt be-zár-t bolt
the illness because.of in-close-PPRT shop
‘the shop closed because of illness’

(210) Rita a baleset-e következtében
Rita the accident-POSS.3SG as.consequence.of
sántít.
limp.INDEF.3SG
‘Rita is limping as a consequence of her accident.’

Adverbial participles can also sometimes express cause.

(211) Meg-ijed-vén a kutyá-tól, a fiú
PFX-frighten-PCVB the dog-ABL the boy
el-szalad-t.
away-run-PAST.INDEF.3SG
‘Frightened by the dog, the boy ran away.’

2.1.1.4.13. Purpose

Purpose is expressed with various cases, postpositional phrases, infinitival clauses, and imperative-subjunctive clauses in Hungarian. The relevant constructions comprise adverbial and attributive phrases as well as copular constructions.

The cases that are most commonly used to express purpose are the causal-final, the sublative, and the allative.
(212) Miklós el-men-t a könyvtár-ba egy 
Nicholas away-go-PAST.1NDEF.3SG the library-ILL a 
könyv-ért. 
book-CAU

‘Nicholas went to the library for a book.’

(213) Hány forint-ot kap-ok egy dollár-ért? 
how.many forint-ACC get-INDEF.1SG one dollar-CAU

‘How many forints do I get for a dollar?’

(214) Éva az új kalap-já-t ve-tt-e fel az 
Eve the new hat-POSS.3SG-ACC take-PAST-DEF.3SG up the
ünnepség-re. 
ceremony-SUB

‘Eve wore her new hat for the ceremony.’

(215) Ma hal lesz vacsorá-ra. 
today fish be.FUT.3SG dinner-SUB

‘There will be fish for dinner today.’

(216) Az orvos be-mosakod-ott a műtét-hez. 
the doctor in-wash-PAST.INDEF.3SG the operation-ALL

‘The doctor scrubbed in for the operation.’

(217) Ez a gép a műtét-hez van. 
this the machine the operation-ALL be.3SG

‘This machine is for the operation.’

(218) a műtét-hez be-mosakod-t orvos 
the operation-ALL into-wash-PPRT doctor

‘the doctor scrubbed in for the operation’

The postposition végett ‘with the purpose/aim of also expresses purpose.

(219) Hévíz-re utaz-om gyógykezelés végett. 
Hévíz-SUB travel-INDEF.1SG medical.treatment with.purpose

‘I’m going to Hévíz for medical treatment.’

Infinitival clauses are a common means of expressing purpose.

(220) Mártá étterem-be men-t vacsoráz-ni. 
Martha restaurant-ILL go-PAST.INDEF.3SG dine-INF

‘Martha went to the restaurant to dine.’
Clauses involving the imperative-subjunctive are also used to express purpose in Hungarian.

(222) Az-ért men-t haza, hogy
dolgoz-za-on.
work-IMP-INDEF.3SG
‘S/he went home to work.’

(223) A baba az-ért sír-t, hogy rá
figyel-j-ünk.
‘The baby was crying in order that we pay attention to him/her.’

2.1.1.4.14. Function
Function is indicated by the dative case in adverbial and attributive phrases.

(224) Az-t a pulóver-t használ-t-am párná-nak.
the.pillow-DAT use-PPRT sweater
‘I used that sweater as a pillow.’

(225) András a vágódeszká-t használ-t-a tálca-nak.
Andrew the cutting.board-ACC use-PAST-DEF.3SG tray-DAT
‘Andrew used the cutting board as a tray.’

2.1.1.4.15. Reference
Reference is expressed by the delative case when verbs of communication such as szól ‘be about, mention’, beszél ‘speak’, ír ‘write’, gondolkodik ‘think’ are used. Several other verbs of communication, e.g., (el)mond and
Page 227

(El)mesél, both meaning ‘relate’, (el)magyaráz ‘explain’, and (meg)említ ‘mention’, take the accusative to express reference. The copular construction cannot be used to express reference in Hungarian.

(227) Szól-t-am Dénes-nek az új munká-ról.
mention-PAST-INDEF.1SG Dennis-DAT the new job-DEL
‘I told Dennis about the new job.’

(228) Ez a film a vadnyugat-ról szól.
this the movie the Wild.West-DEL be.about.INDEF.3SG
‘This movie is about the Wild West.’

(229) a vadnyugat-ról szól-ó könyv
the Wild.West-DEL be.about-APRT book
‘the book about the Wild West’

(230) El-mesél-t-ük nek-i a baleset-et.
PFX-relate-PAST-DEF.1PL DAT-3SG the accident-ACC
‘We related the accident to him/her.’

(231) El-magyaráz-t-am nek-ik a
PFX-explain-PAST-DEF.1SG DAT-3PL the
past-POSS.1SG-ACC
‘I explained (about) my past to them.’

2.1.1.4.16. Essive
The essive semantic function is expressed with the formal and essive-formal cases through adverbial and attributive phrases.

(232) Azelőtt tolmács-ként dolgoz-t-am az
that.before interpreter-ESF work-PAST-INDEF.1SG the
ENSZ-ben.
UN-INE
‘I worked as an interpreter at the UN before then.’

(233) a tolmács-ként dolgoz-ó nő
the interpreter-ESF work-APRT woman
‘the woman working as an interpreter’

(234) Ez-t példa-képpen említ-em.
this-ACC example-FOR mention-DEF.1SG
‘I mention this as an example.’
Page 228

2.1.1.4.17. Translative
The translative function is expressed with the dative and the translative cases. Verbs such as (ki)kiált ‘proclaim’, (ki)nevez ‘appoint’, (meg)koronáz ‘crown’, (meg)tesz ‘make’, (fel)szentel ‘ordain’, and (meg)választ ‘elect’ take both dative and translative: without their perfective prefixes, ki-, meg-, and fel-, they usually take a translative object-complement; together with the prefix they can take either the dative or the translative. Translative phrases can be either adverbial or attributive.

(235) Gábor-t ki-nevez-t-ük
   Gabriel-ACC PFX-appoint-PAST-DEF.1PL
department.head-DAT
   ‘We appointed Gabriel head of the department.’

(236) Gábor-t ki-nevez-t-ék
   Gabriel-ACC PFX-appoint-PAST-DEF.3PL
tanszékvezető-vé.
department.head-TRA
   ‘Gabriel was appointed head of the department.’

(237) a tanszékvezető-vé ki-nevez-ett
   the department.head-TRA PFX-appoint-PPRT
   férfi
   man
   ‘the man appointed department head’

(238) Gábor-t tanszékvezető-nek választ-ott-ák.
   Gabriel-ACC department.head-DAT elect-PAST-DEF.3PL
   ‘Gabriel was elected head of the department.’

2.1.1.4.18. Part-whole
Part-whole relations are expressed with the possessive construction in Hungarian.

(239) a macska fül-e
   the cat ear-POSS.3SG
   ‘the cat’s ear’

(240) a fa tete-je
   the tree top-POSS.3SG
   ‘the top of the tree’
Partitive numerals are expressed with the postposition közül ‘from among’ with
the numeral in the modal-essive case if it refers to humans, and the numeral in the nominative if it refers to
nonhumans. Partitive numerals can only be used as adverbial phrases.

(241)  A fiú-k közül kett-en szőké-k.
      the boy-PL from.among two-MOE blond-PL
      ‘Two of the boys are blond.’
(242)  A könyv-ek közül három
      the book-PL from.among three
      el-tün-t.
      PFX-disappear-PAST.1NDEF.3PL
      ‘Three of the books disappeared.’

Nonpartitive numerals are expressed with numerals used attributively, and
the noun they modify in the singular.

(243)  három fiú
      three boy
      ‘three boys’
(244)  nyolc polc
      eight shelf
      ‘eight shelves’

Partitive quantifiers are expressed in two ways in Hungarian.
When the partitive quantifiers sok ‘many’, néhány ‘some’, and kevés ‘few’ are used, similarly to partitive numerals,
they are accompanied by the postposition közül ‘from among’, with the quantifier phrase in the modal-essive if it
refers to humans and in the nominative if it refers to non-humans. Partitive quantifier phrases are always adverbial.
Noncount nouns cannot be used with partitive quantifiers.

(245)  a gyerek-ek közül néhány-an/sok-an/kevés-en
        the child-PL from.among some-MOE/many-MOE/few-MOE
        ‘some/many/few of the children’
(246)  a kutyá-k közül néhány/sok/kevés
        the dog-PL from.among some/many/few
        ‘some/many/few of the dogs’

When the quantifiers mindegyik ‘each’ and fél ‘half’ are used, they receive third person singular possessive suffixes.
2.1.1.4.19.4. Nonpartitive quantifier  Nonpartitive quantifiers are used attributively in Hungarian, with the noun in the singular.

(250) néhány diákk
some student
‘some students’

(251) sok naptárr
many calendar
‘lots of calendars’

Nonpartitive quantifiers can also be used with noncount nouns.

(252) sok tej
much milk
‘a lot of milk’

(253) kevés vízz
little water
‘little water’

(254) egy kis sajtt
a little cheese
‘a little cheese’

2.1.1.4.19.5. Partitive negative quantifier  Partitive negative quantifiers are expressed with the postposition közül ‘from among’ and the negative quantifier phrase egyik sem ‘none’ (lit. ‘one neither’), in adverbial phrases only.

(255) a fiú-k közül egyik sem
the boy-PL from among one neither
‘none of the boys’

(256) az asztal-ok közül egyik sem
the table-PL from among one neither
‘none of the tables’
2.1.1.4.19.6. Nonpartitive negative quantifier

If the negated noun is a count noun, negation in the nonpartitive construction is expressed with the numeral egy ‘one’ and the negative element sem, or with the negation of the verb.

(257) Egy fiú sem jö-tt.
   one boy neg come-PAST-INDEF.3SG
   ‘Not one boy came.’ = ‘No boy came.’

(258) Fiú-k nem jö-tt-ek.
   boy-PL not come-PAST-INDEF.3PL
   ‘Boys didn’t come.’ = ‘No boys came.’

If the negated noun is noncount, negation in the nonpartitive construction can be expressed only with the negation of the verb.

(259) Sajt-ot nem ve-tt-em.
    cheese-ACC not buy-PAST-INDEF.1SG
    ‘I didn’t buy cheese.’ = ‘I bought no cheese.’

2.1.1.4.20. Price

Price is expressed in Hungarian with the causal-final case in an adverbial or an attributive phrase.

(260) A kompjúter-em-et ezer dollár-ért
    the computer-POSS.1SG-ACC thousand dollar-CAU
    ve-tt-em.
    buy-PAST-DEF.1SG
    ‘I bought my computer for a thousand dollars.’

(261) az ezer dollár-ért ve-tt kompjúter
    the thousand dollar-CAU buy-PPRT computer
    ‘the computer bought for a thousand dollars’

2.1.1.4.21. Value

Value is expressed with attributive phrases or as the accusative object of the verb ér ‘be worth’ in Hungarian. The attributive phrase can involve a denominal adjective derived with -s/os/es/ös, the participle éró ‘worth’, or the denominal adjectival phrase értékű ‘of value’.

(262) Ez az óra tíz dollár-t ér.
    this the watch ten dollar-ACC be.worth.INDEF.3SG
    ‘This watch is worth ten dollars.’

(263) Ez egy tíz dollár-os óra.
    this a ten dollar-ADJDER watch
    ‘This is a ten-dollar watch.’
Ez egy tíz dollár érő óra.
This is a ten dollar worth watch
'This is a watch worth ten dollars.'

Ez egy tíz dollár értékű óra.
this a ten dollar value watch
'This is a watch of ten-dollar value.'

2.1.1.4.22. Distance
Distance is expressed in various ways in Hungarian.
The sublative case is used to express relative distance between points.

Az ágy két centiméterre van a fal-tól.
The bed two centimeter be.3SG the wall-ABL
'The bed is two centimeters from the wall.'

A polc-ot öt centi-re el-tol-tuk.
the shelf ACC five centimeter SUB away push PAST-DEF.1PL
'We moved the shelf five centimeters.'

Verbs of motion take the accusative to express distance.

A csiga egy méternyi-t men-t egy óra
the snail a meter ACC go PAST.INDEF.3SG an hour
under
'The snail moved a meter in an hour.'
With other verbs, distance is referred to with the postpositions keresztül and át, both meaning ‘through, across’.

(274) Az autó tíz méter-en át tol-t-a a
the car ten meter-SUP across push-PAST-DEF.3SG the
szeker-et.
cart-ACC
‘The car pushed the cart for ten meters.’

2.1.1.4.23. Extent
Extent is expressed with attributive phrases or copular expressions.

(275) Ez az asztal három méter hosszú.
this the table three meter long
‘This table is three meters long.’

(276) egy három méter hosszú asztal
a three meter long table
‘a table three meters long’

(277) a negyvenkét emelet magas épület
the forty-two story high building
‘the forty-two-story building’

(278) a két méter mély medence
the two meter deep pool
‘the two-meter-deep pool’

If the adjectives hosszú, magas, etc. are omitted in the adjectival phrase, the denominal measurement phrases derived with -s/os/es/ös are used.

(279) Ez az asztal három méter-es.
this the table three meter-ADJ DER
‘This table is three meters long.’

(280) egy három méter-es asztal
a three meter-ADJ DER table
‘a table three meters long’

(281) a negyvenkét emelet-es épület
the forty-two story-ADJ DER building
‘the forty-two-story building’

(282) a két méter-es medence
the two meter-ADJ DER pool
‘the two-meter-deep pool’
2.1.1.4.24. Concessive
The concessive relationship is expressed with the postpositions ellenére and dacára, both meaning ‘despite’, used as adverbial phrases.

(283) Az eső ellenére mindenki itt vol-t.
the rain despite everyone here be-PAST.3SG
‘Everyone was here despite the rain.’

2.1.1.4.25. Inclusion
Inclusion is expressed with the adverbial participle beleértve ‘including’ and the postposition együtt ‘together’ forming adverbial phrases.

(284) Mindenki itt van, János-t is beleértve.
everyone here be.SG John-ACC too including
‘Everyone is here including John.’

(285) Péter-rel együtt mindenki itt van.
Peter-INS together everyone here be.3SG
‘Everyone is here, including Peter.’

2.1.1.4.26. Exclusion
Exclusion is expressed with the postpositions kivéve and kivételével, both meaning ‘except, excluding’, and the participial phrase nem számítva ‘not counting’.

(286) Mindenki itt van, Máriát kivéve.
every here be.3SG Maria-ACC except
‘Everyone is here except Maria.’

(287) Máriát kivételével mindenki itt van.
Maria except everyone here be.3SG
‘Everyone is here except Maria.’

(288) Máriát nem számít-va mindenki itt van.
Maria-ACC not count-SCVB everyone here be.3SG
‘Everyone is here, not counting Maria.’

2.1.1.4.27. Addition
Addition is expressed with the postposition kívül ‘besides’ used in an adverbial phrase.

(289) János-on kívül három ember van itt.
John-SUP besides three person be.3SG here
‘Three people are here besides John.’
2.1.1.4.28. Vocative
The vocative particle is ó, but its use is optional in vocative sentences. The addressee is expressed with the
nominative case.
(290) O, Attila, ez-t miért csinált-t-ad?
    oh Attila this-ACC why do-PAST-DEF.2SG
    ‘Oh, Attila, why did you do this?’
(291) Imád-lak, Tímea!
    adore-1SG.2OBJ Tímea
    ‘I adore you, Tímea!’

2.1.1.4.29–30. Citation and label forms
In Hungarian the nominative is used for citation and label forms.

2.1.1.5. Local semantic functions
Local semantic functions are expressed with several cases, postpositions, adverbs, and universal and partitive
pronouns. Hungarian differentiates very strictly between expressing ‘at rest’, ‘motion to’, and ‘motion from’. The
‘motion past’semantic functions are normally identical with the expression of ‘at rest’. In Hungarian there is no
difference between motion past a long object in the direction of its length and in the direction at right angles to its
length.
The locative case has a very restricted use in Hungarian: it is used to express the ‘at rest’ function in the case of a
handful of Hungarian city names, e.g., Székesfehérvár-t ‘in Székesfehérvár’, Győr-ött ‘in Győr’, Pécs-ett ‘in Pécs’, and
Vác-ott ‘in Vác’. The other local cases, however, can be used even with these city names to denote the ‘at
rest’ function—the use of inessive or superessive (the cases used to express ‘at rest’ with placenames) with these city
names is prevalent in modern Hungarian: Székesfehérvár-on, Pécs-en, Vác-on (all superessive), and Győr-ben
(inessive).
The remaining nine local cases indicate the three major functions of ‘at rest’, ‘motion to’, and ‘motion from’ in the
following configuration:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Motion from</th>
<th>At rest</th>
<th>Motion to</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Interior</td>
<td>-ból/ből</td>
<td>-ban /ben</td>
<td>-ba/be</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Exterior</td>
<td>ablative</td>
<td>adessive</td>
<td>allative</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>-tól/től</td>
<td>-nál/nél</td>
<td>-hoz/hez/höz</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Surface</td>
<td>delative</td>
<td>superessive</td>
<td>sublative</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>-ról/ről</td>
<td>-n/on/en/on</td>
<td>-ra/re</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Page 236

In addition to their basic meaning indicating interior, exterior, or surface, the local cases all have some restricted usage with names of institutions and placenames: only one set of the cases (only one row, in terms of the table above) can cooccur with each. For instance, the noun iskola ‘school’ takes the interior cases, as in az iskolá-ból jön ‘come from school’ (elative), az iskolá-ban van ‘be at school’ (inessive), and az iskolá-ba megy ‘go to school’ (illative), while the noun állomás ‘station’ takes the surface cases, as in az állomás-ról jön ‘come from the station’ (ablative), az állomás-on van ‘be at the station’ (superessive), and az állomás-ra megy ‘go to the station’. The majority of the names of Hungarian cities, towns, and villages (as well as of names of places that at one time constituted part of Hungary), take the surface cases, e.g., Budapest-ról ‘from Budapest’, Budapest-en ‘in Budapest’, and Budapest-re ‘to Budapest’, while the rest of Hungarian placenames as well as all foreign city names take the interior cases, e.g., Debrecen-ból ‘from Debrecen’, Boston-ból ‘from Boston’, Debrecen-ben ‘in Debrecen’, Boston-ban ‘in Boston’, Debrecen-be ‘to Debrecen’, and Boston-ba ‘to Boston’.

Postpositions, the universal and partitive pronouns, and some of the adverbs indicating location also strictly refer to the function of ‘motion from’, ‘at rest’, and ‘motion to’, e.g.:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Postpositions</th>
<th>Motion from</th>
<th>At rest</th>
<th>Motion to</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>‘near’</td>
<td>mellől</td>
<td>mellett</td>
<td>mellé</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘in front of’</td>
<td>elől</td>
<td>előtt</td>
<td>élé</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘behind’</td>
<td>mögül</td>
<td>mögött</td>
<td>mögé</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘over, above’</td>
<td>fölül</td>
<td>felett,fölött</td>
<td>fölé</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘below, under’</td>
<td>alól</td>
<td>alatt</td>
<td>alá</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘between, among’</td>
<td>közül</td>
<td>között</td>
<td>köze</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘around’</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>körül</td>
<td>köré</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Universal and partitive pronouns

| ‘somewhere’      | valahonnan | valahol | valahova |
| ‘anywhere’       | akárhonnan | akárhol | akárhova |
| ‘everywhere’     | mindenhonnan | mindenhol | mindenhova |
| ‘nowhere’        | sehonnan   | sehol   | sehova   |

Adverbs

| ‘here’ | innen | itt | ide |
| ‘there’ | onnan | ott | oda |

To combine local cases and postpositions with personal pronouns, e.g., to express ‘in me’ and ‘behind you’, etc., the possessive personal suffixes are attached to the case-markers and postpositions: the only morpho-
phonemic difference between the possessives of nouns and possessive forms of postpositions is that postpositions take a as a connecting vowel when a back connecting vowel is required (as opposed to the o connecting vowel in nouns in such cases, cf. város-om ‘my city’ and alól-ám ‘from under me’). The postpositions receive the possessive suffixes in a very regular way morphologically, so only two sets will be illustrated here, those for mellől ‘from near’ and alatt ‘under’.

mellől
1SG mellőlem ‘from near me’
2SG mellőled ‘from near you’
3SG mellőle ‘from near him/her/it’
1PL mellőlünk ‘from near us’
2PL mellőletek ‘from near you (PL)’
3PL mellőlük ‘from near them’

alatt
1SG alattam ‘under me’
2SG alattad ‘under you’
3SG alatta ‘under him/her/it’
1PL alattunk ‘under us’
2PL alattatok ‘under you (PL)’
3PL alattuk ‘under them’

For the pronominal forms of the various local cases, see section 2.1.2.1.20.5.

In addition to the local cases, the terminative case is also used to express a local function. Its meaning in locatives is ‘up to’ or ‘as far as’.

(292) A labda a fá-ig gurul-t.
the ball the tree-TER roll-PAST.INDEF.3SG
‘The ball rolled up to the tree.’

(293) Ez a vonat csak Budapest-ig megy.
this the train only Budapest-TER go.INDEF.3SG
‘This train goes only as far as Budapest.’

All location functions can be expressed with attributive and adverbial phrases. The phrases denoting ‘at rest’ functions can also be copula complements.

2.1.1.5.1. General location
As explained above, the basic meanings of the three sets of local cases are interior, exterior, and surface, so there is no way of describing general location in Hungarian.
‘Motion past’ is expressed with the postposition mellett ‘near, at’.
(294) El-men-t-ünk Budapest mellett.
   ‘We passed by Budapest.’

Direction is expressed in Hungarian with the postpositions felé ‘towards’ and felől ‘from the direction of’, as well as the third person singular possessive form irány-a of the noun irány ‘direction’ inflected for the elative (irány-á-ból ‘from the direction of’) or the illative (irány-á-ba ‘into the direction of’).

(295) Az ember-ek a templom felől
   the person.PL the church from.direction.of
   jö-tt-ek.
   come-PAST-INDEF.3PL
   ‘The people were coming from the direction of the church.’

(296) A férfi a templom irány-á-ba
   the man the church direction-POSS.3SG-ILL
   fut-ott.
   run-PAST.INDEF.3SG
   ‘The man was running in the direction of the church.’

(297) a templom irány-á-ból közeled-ő
   the church direction-POSS.3SG-ELA approach-APRT
   ember-ek
   person-PL
   ‘the people approaching from the direction of the church’

2.1.1.5.2. Proximate location

Proximate location can be expressed with the postpositions mellől ‘from near’, mellett ‘near’, mellé ‘to near’, and közel ‘near, not far’, with the exterior cases, the ablative, the adessive, and the allative, or with the forms of közel inflected for possessive and the interior cases.

(298) Ez a bokor nem látsz-ik a garázs mellől.
   this the bush not be.seen-INDEF.3SG the garage from.near
   ‘You can’t see this bush from near the garage.’

(299) Az iskola a színház mellett van.
   the school the theater near be.3SG
   ‘The school is near the theater.’

(300) A kutya a tévé mellé men-t.
   the dog the TV to.near go-PAST.INDEF.3SG
   ‘The dog went (to) near the TV.’
Page 239

(301) Az iskola a színház-hoz közel van.

The school is near the theater.

(302) Az iskola a színház-nál van.

The school is by the theater.

(303) a színház-nál lev-ő iskola

The school by the theater

(304) A labda a fal-hoz gurul-t.

The ball rolled to the wall.

(305) A labda el-gurul-t a fal-tól.

The ball rolled away from the wall.

(306) Az iskola valahol a színház közel-é-ben van.

The school is somewhere in the vicinity of the theater.

2.1.1.5.3. Interior location

Interior location is expressed with the interior cases (the inessive, the illative, and the elative) as well as the third person singular possessive form belse-je of the noun belső 'inside' inflected for the interior cases (belse-jé-ben ‘in the inside of’, belse-jé-be ‘into the inside of’, and belse-jé-ből ‘from the inside of’).

(307) A toll a fiók-ban van.

The pen is in the drawer.

(308) A toll-at a fiók-ba tesz-em.

I put the pen into the drawer.

(309) A toll-at ki-vesz-em a fiók-ból.

I take the pen out of the drawer.

(310) a fiók-ban lév-ő toll

The pen in the drawer
(311) A hiba a motor belse-jé-ben van.  
the problem the engine inside-POSS.3SG-INE be.3SG  
'The problem is inside the engine.'

'Motion past' for the interior location is expressed with the postpositions át and keresztül, both meaning 'through, across' (312), or with a construction involving the prefix át- ‘through, across’ and the superessive case (313).

(312) Át-men-t-ünk a város-on keresztül.  
across-go-PAST-INDEF.1PL the city-SUP through  
'We went through the city.'

(313) A madár át-repül-t a szobá-n.  
the bird through-fly-PAST.INDEF.3SG the room-SUP  
'The bird flew across the room.'

All names of continents, countries, counties, all foreign cities and towns, and mountains take the interior cases to express location, with three exceptions—Antarktisz ‘Antarctica’, Arktisz ‘Arctic’, and Magyarország ‘Hungary’—which take the surface cases (superessive, delative, and sublative). The word utca ‘street’ also takes interior cases, except when something is described as being on the sidewalk or pavement.

(314) Tavaly Angliá-ban vol-t-am nyaral-ni.  
last.year England-INE be-PAST-1SG vacation-INF  
'Last year I was in England for a vacation.'

(315) Mikor mész London-ba?  
when go.INDEF.2SG London-ILL  
'When are you going to London?'

(316) Ez a hajó Europá-ból jön.  
this the ship Europe-ELA come.INDEF.3SG  
'This ship is coming from Europe.'

(317) az Európá-ba men-ő hajó  
the Europe-ILL go-APRT ship  
'the ship going to Europe'

(318) A nagybátyá-m Cheshire-ben lak-ik.  
the uncle-POSS.1SG Cheshire-INE live-INDEF.3SG  
'My uncle lives in Cheshire.'

(319) Én eb-ben az utcá-ban lak-om.  
I this-INE the street-INE live-INDEF.1SG  
'I live in this street.'
Ilyen fa nincs az Ural-ban.
‘There are no such trees in the Urals.’

The words tér ‘city square’, sugárút and út ‘avenue’, and körút ‘boulevard’ take the surface cases to express location.

Lajos a Bartók tér-en lak-ik.
‘Louis lives in Bartók Square.’

Some of the Hungarian city and town names taking interior cases to express location are the following: Badacsony, Debrecen, Eger, Esztergom, Győr, Marcali, Sopron, and Tihany. In addition to these, two of the towns and cities that used to be part of Hungary (and therefore have native Hungarian names) also take interior cases: Brassó (Brasov, Romania) and Pozsony (Bratislava, Slovakia).

Ez a vonat Debrecen-be megy.
‘This train goes to Debrecen.’

Most of the Hungarian city and town names, however, take the surface cases to express location. Some of these are Aggtelek, Baja, Balatonfüred, Békészcsaba, Budapest, Cegléd, Fertőd, Gyula, Hévíz, Hódmezővásárhely, Kaposvár, Kecskemét, Keszthely, Kőszeg, Makó, Nyíregyháza, Pannonhalma, Pápa, Pécs, Síkföld, Siófok, Szarvas, Szeged, Szekszárd, Szentendre, Szigetvár, Szombathely, Tata, Vác, Visegrád, and Zalaegerszeg. Some formerly Hungarian cities and towns that take exterior cases are Arad (Arad, Romania), Kassa (Košice, Slovakia), Kolozsvár (Cluj-Napoca, Romania), Munkács (Mukachevo, Ukraine), Nagybánya (Baia Mare, Romania), Nagyszeben (Sibiu, Romania), Szabadka (Subotica, Yugoslavia), ungvár (Uzhhorod, Ukraine), and újvidék (Novi Sad, Yugoslavia).

Az a vonat Szeged-re megy.
‘That train goes to Szeged.’


Sára a bolt-ban van.
‘Sara is in the store.’

(325) Sára az egyetem-en van.
Sara the university-SUP be.3SG
‘Sara is at the university.’

2.1.1.5.4. Exterior location
Exterior location is expressed with the exterior local cases, the adessive, the ablative, and the allative, and the postpositions kívül ‘outside’, kívülről ‘from outside’, and kívül-re ‘to outside’.

(326) A kutya a fal-nál alszik.
the dog the wall-ADJ sleep-INDEF.3SG
‘The dog is sleeping by the wall.’

(327) a fal-nál lévő lámpa
the wall-ADJ be-APRT lamp
‘the lamp by the wall’

(328) A kutya a fal-hoz megy.
the dog the wall-ALL go.INDEF.3SG
‘The dog goes up to the wall.’

(329) A kutya az ajtó-tól szalad.
the dog the door-ABL run.INDEF.3SG
‘The dog is running from the door.’

(330) A busz a város-on kívül-re megy.
the bus the city-SUP outside-SUB go.INDEF.3SG
‘The bus is going to outside the city.’

‘Motion past’ is expressed with the postposition mellett ‘near, at’.

(331) A kutya a garázs mellett szalad.
the dog the garage near run.INDEF.3SG
‘The dog runs past the garage.’

(332) a garázs mellett szalad-ó kutya
the garage near run-APRT dog
‘the dog running past the garage’

2.1.1.5.5. Anterior location
Anterior location is expressed with the postpositions előtt ‘in front of’, elől ‘from in front of’, and élé ‘to in front of’.
A fa a ház előtt van.  
'The tree is in front of the house.'

A macska az autó elől szalad.  
'The cat is running from in front of the car.'

A férfi a csónak elé úsz-ott.  
'The man swam (to) in front of the boat.'

2.1.1.5.6. Posterior location  
Posterior location is expressed with the postpositions mögött 'behind', mögé 'to behind', and mögül 'from behind'.

A pohár az üveg-ek mögött van.  
'The glass is behind the bottles.'

Andrea a ház mögé men-t.  
'Andrea went behind the house.'

Az iskola mögül ide-szalad-ó gyerek-ek  
'the children running here from behind the school'

2.1.1.5.7. Superior location  
Superior location is expressed with the postpositions felett and fölött, both meaning 'above, over', fölül 'from above', and fölé 'to above'.

A tükör a mosdó fölött van.  
'The mirror is above the sink.'
A repülő fel-száll-t a város fölé.  
The plane up-fly-PAST-INDEF.3SG the city to.above  
‘The plane flew up above the city.’

(343) A könyv-et a lexikon fölül ve-tt-em  
the book-ACC the dictionary from.above take-PAST-DEF.1SG le.  
down  
‘I took the book down from above the dictionary.’

2.1.1.5.8. Superior-contact and surface location  
Superior-contact and surface locations are expressed with the surface cases—the superessive, the delative, and the sublative.

(344) A hajó a tenger-en van.  
the ship the sea-SUP be.3SG  
‘The ship is on the sea.’

(345) A könyv-et a polc-ra tesz-em.  
the book-ACC the shelf-SUB put-DEF.1SG  
‘I put the book on the shelf.’

(346) Fel-vesz-em a pohar-at az asztal-ról.  
up-take-DEF.1SG the glass-ACC the table-DEL  
‘I pick up the glass from the table.’

2.1.1.5.9. Inferior location  
Inferior location is expressed with the postpositions alatt ‘under, below’, alól ‘from under/below’, and alá ‘to under/below’.

(347) A macska az autó alatt alsz-ik.  
the cat the car under sleep-INDEF.3SG  
‘The cat is sleeping under the car.’

(348) A kulcs-ot a lábtöről alá tesz-em.  
the key-ACC the doormat to.under put-DEF.1SG  
‘I’m putting the key under the doormat.’

(349) Ki-vesz-em a szőnyeg-et a tévé alól.  
out-take-DEF.1SG the rug-ACC the TV from.under  
‘I’ll get the rug out from under the TV.’
2.1.1.5.11. Lateral location
Lateral location is expressed with the postpositions mellett ‘near, at’, mellől ‘from near’, and mellé ‘to near’. See examples in sections 2.1.1.5.2 and 2.1.1.5.4.

2.1.1.5.13. Citerior location
Citerior location is expressed with the third person singular possessive form oldal-a of the noun oldal ‘side’ inflected for the exterior or the surface cases.

(350) Péter az asztal-nak ez-en az oldal-án
sit.INDEF.3SG
‘Peter sits on this side of the table.’

(351) Az asztal-nak ah-hoz az oldal-ához
sit-PAST-INDEF.1SG
‘I sat down on that side of the table.’

2.1.1.5.15. Ulterior location
Ulterior location is expressed with the postpositions túl ‘beyond’, túlra ‘to beyond’, and túlról ‘from beyond’ in Hungarian.

(352) A város a folyó-n túl van.
‘The town is beyond the river.’

(353) Az ember-ek a folyó-n túlról jönnek.
‘The people are coming from beyond the river.’

‘The train is going beyond the mountains.’

2.1.1.5.17. Medial location
Medial location is expressed with the postpositions között ‘between, among’, közül ‘from between/among’, and közé ‘to between/among’.
A kismacska a virág-ökol között alsz-ik.

The kitten is sleeping among the flowers.

Ki-válogat-om az alma-ke közül a

I'll get the bad ones out from among the apples.

Péter két teherautó közé parkol-t be.

Péter parked his car in between two trucks.

2.1.1.5.19. Circumferential location
Circumferential location is expressed with the postpositions körül ‘around’ and köré ‘to around’.

A gyerek-ek a tanár körül áll-t-ak.

The children were standing around the teacher.

A gyerek-ek a tanár körül szaladgál-t-ak.

The children were running around the teacher.

Az iskola a színház-zal szemben van.

The school is opposite the theater.
John is going into the building opposite the theater.

2.1.1.6. Location in time
There are only two cases, the temporal and the iterative, that only express location in time in Hungarian adverbial elements. In addition to these, several other cases, postpositions, and adverbs are also used to express location in time.

2.1.1.6.1. General
As complements of copular constructions, phrases referring to time are in the nominative.

It is Monday/February/1996.

As adverbial and attributive phrases they are usually assigned a case other than the nominative, as discussed in detail below.

2.1.1.6.1.1. Time of day
Time of day is expressed with the temporal case when it is indicated with time on the clock or with the noun éjfél ‘midnight’. It is expressed with the inessive in the case of the noun dél ‘noon’. Attributive forms of time expressions involving óra ‘o’clock’ are derived with -s, while those involving éjfél and dél are derived with -i.

The movie starts at seven o’clock.

Paul arrived at six o’clock in the evening.
Page 248

(368) Pál éjfél-kor érkez-ett.  
Paul midnight-TEM arrive-PAST.INDEF.3SG  
‘Paul arrived at midnight.’

(369) Pál dél-ben érkez-ett.  
Paul noon-INE arrive-PAST.inef.3SG  
‘Paul arrived at noon.’

(370) a dél-i vonat  
the noon-ADJ DER train  
‘the noon train’

2.1.1.6.1.2. Period of day  
The period of day is expressed with uninflected nouns in the case of reggel ‘morning’, délelőtt ‘late morning’ (from approximately 9:00 a.m. until noon), délután ‘afternoon’, este ‘evening’, éjfel and éjszaka, both meaning ‘night’; the inessive is used with the noun hajnal ‘night, early morning’ (from approximately 3:00 to 5:30 a.m.).

As attributive constructions, phrases expressing the period of the day can be participial or adjectival forms (derived with -i) of the nouns indicating the given period of the day.

(371) Pál reggel/este/hajnal-ban érkez-ett.  
Paul morning/evening/early.morning-INE arrive-PAST.INDEF.3SG  
‘Paul arrived in the morning/evening/early morning.’

(372) az éjszaka érkez-ő vonat  
the night arrive-APRT train  
‘the train arriving at night’

(373) az éjszaka-i vonat  
the night-ADJ DER train  
‘the night train’

2.1.1.6.1.3. Day of the week  
The day of the week is expressed with the name of the day in the superessive; except for Sunday, which is in the nominative. As attributive constructions, phrases expressing days of the week can be participial or employ adjectival forms (derived with -i) of the names of the days.
The word hét 'week' requires the superessive case in adverbial expressions, while in attributive phrases it is derived with -i.

2.1.1.6.1.4. Month of the year

Months of the year, as well as the word hónap 'month', receive the inessive case in Hungarian. Attributive forms of the names of months are formed with the derivational suffix -i. The attributive form of hónap is havi.

Anna október-ben született.
'Anna was born in October.'

az eb-ben a hónap-ban nyíló virág-ök
'the flowers blooming this month'

a december-i hó
'December snow'

a jövő hav-i fizetés
'next month's pay'
2.1.1.6.1.5. Year
Years receive the inessive case in Hungarian. Attributive forms of years are formed with the derivational suffix -s/os/es/ös.

(384) Ágnes 1964-ben született.
Ágnes 1964-INDEF.3SG be.born-PAST.INDEF.3SG
‘Agnes was born in 1964.’

(385) egy 1976-os újság
a 1976-ADJ DER newspaper
‘a newspaper from 1976’

2.1.1.6.1.6. Festivals
Festivals receive the temporal case, and are derived with -i in attributive phrases.

(386) Karácsony-kor esett a hó.
Christmas-TEM fall-PAST.INDEF.3SG the snow
‘It snowed at Christmas.’

(387) Katalin-nap-kor jönnek a rokon-ok.
Catherine-day-TEM come-INDEF.3PL the relative-PL
‘The relatives are coming on St. Catherine’s Day.’

(388) a húsvét-i tojás
the Easter-ADJ DER egg
‘the Easter egg’

2.1.1.6.1.7. Seasons
In adverbial phrases nyár ‘summer’ and téli ‘winter’ receive the superessive case, while őszi ‘autumn’ and tavasz ‘spring’ receive the instrumental. The attributive forms for all four are derived with -i.

(389) Nyár-on nagyon meleg van.
summer-SUP very hot be.3SG
‘It is very hot in the summer.’

(390) Tavasz-szal sok virág nyílik.
spring-INS many flower bloom-INDEF.3SG
‘Lots of flowers bloom in the spring.’

(391) Az őszi level-ek nagyon szép-ek.
the autumn-ADJ DER leaf-PL very beautiful-PL
‘Autumn leaves are very beautiful.’

2.1.1.6.2. Frequentative
Frequentative expressions employ the iterative and the distributive cases. Such expressions exist for words denoting periods of time such as periods of the day, days of the week, and seasons, as well as phrases involving the words nap ‘day’, heti ‘week’, hónap ‘month’, and év ‘year’. 

< previous page | page_250 | next page >
Days of the week can take only the distributive, while the remaining time expressions can receive either the iterative or the distributive with identical meaning.

(392) Az újság csak hétfő-nként jelen-ik meg-the newspaper only Monday-DIS appear-INDEF.3SG PFX
'The newspaper is only published on Mondays.'

(393) Pista reggel-ente/reggel-enként úsz-ni jár.
Steve morning-ITE/morning-DIS swim-INF go.INDEF.3SG
'Steve goes for a swim every morning.'

2.1.1.6.3. Punctual-future
Punctual-future is expressed with the postposition múlva 'past' in Hungarian. Attributive phrases involving múlva can only be participial.

(394) Egy óra múlva itt vagy-ok.
one hour past here be-1SG
'I'll be here in an hour.'

(395) az öt perc múlva érkez-ő repülő
the five minute past arrive-APRT plane
'the plane arriving in five minutes'

2.1.1.6.4. Punctual-past
Punctual-past is expressed with the postpositions ezelőtt 'before this' and azelőtt 'before that'. Ezelőtt is used in referring a point in time to the moment of speaking, while azelőtt is used to refer a point in time prior to the moment of speaking. In attributive phrases these propositions are derived with -i.

(396) Csaba két perc-cel ezelőtt jö-tt.
Csaba two minute-INS this.before come-PAST.INDEF.3SG
'Csaba came two minutes ago.'

(397) a két nap-pal azelőtt-i koncert
the two day-INS that.before-ADJDER concert
'the concert two days ago'

2.1.1.6.5. Duration
Duration phrases referring to an action that is still going on are formed with the third person singular possessive form of the time phrase in question.
Duration phrases referring to a completed past action are expressed with the terminative.

(398)  Két év-e lak-om itt.
    two year-POSS.3SG live-INDEF.1SG here
    'I've been living here for two years.'

Duration phrases referring to an action to be completed are indicated with the sublative.

(400)  Nóra két hónap-ra men-t Moszkvá-ba.
    Nora two month-SUB go-PAST.INDEF.3SG Moscow-ILL
    'Nora went to Moscow for two months.'

The equivalent of the durative phrase of the 'within x time' employs the postposition alatt 'under' in Hungarian.

(401)  Zoltán egy óra alatt meg-ír-t-a a
        Zoltán an hour under PFX-write-PAST-DEF.3SG the
        level-et.
        letter-ACC
        'Zoltán completed writing the letter in an hour.'

2.1.1.6.7. Anterior-duration

Anterior-duration is expressed with the terminative case in Hungarian, regardless of whether it refers to the past or the future.

(402)  Semmi nem történ-t szerdá-ig.
        nothing not happen-PAST.INDEF.3SG Wednesday-TER
        'Nothing happened until Wednesday.'

(403)  Péntek-ig valami történ-ni fog.
        Friday-TER something happen-INF FUT.INDEF.3SG
        'Something is going to happen before Friday.'

2.1.1.6.8. Posterior-duration-past

Posterior-duration-past is expressed with the postposition óta 'since'

(404)  Hat óra óta vár-unk.
        six o'clock since wait-INDEF.1PL
        'We have been waiting since six o'clock.'
2.1.1.6.9. Posterior-duration-future
Posterior-duration-future can be expressed either with the postposition után ‘after’ or the ablative case.

(406) Kilenc után otthon lesz-ek.
nine after at home be.FUT-1SG
‘I’ll be at home after nine.’

(407) Kilenc-től otthon lesz-ek.
nine-ABL at home be.FUT-1SG
‘I’ll be at home from nine on.’

2.1.1.6.10. Anterior-general
Anterior is expressed with the postposition előtt ‘before’.

(408) Nyolc előtt az irodá-ban vol-t-am.
eight before the office-INE be-PAST-1SG
‘I was in the office before eight.’

2.1.1.6.12. Point in period-past
Point in period-past is expressed with phrases involving the participial adjective elmúlt ‘past’ and a time phrase with the postposition alatt ‘under’ or in the inessive case.

(409) Az elmúlt egy órá-ban senki nem
the past one hour-INE nobody not
phone-PAST.INDEF.3SG
telefonált.
‘Nobody called in the past hour.’

(410) Az elmúlt két nap alatt senki nem
the past two day under nobody not
telefonált.
phone-PAST.INDEF.3SG
telefonált.
‘Nobody called in the past two days.’
Point in period-future
Point in period-future is expressed with the postposition belül 'within'.

(411) A vendég-ek öt perc-en belül megérkeznek.
The guest-PL five minute-SUP within PFX-arrive-INDEF.3PL
'The guests will arrive within five minutes.'

2.1.1.7. Double case-marking
In dialectal and nonstandard speech case-marking is sometimes doubled on the accusative forms of the third person singular pronoun Ő and the determiners ez 'this' and az 'that' as Ő-t-et, ez-t-et, and az-t-at, and the pronominal forms of the adessive case as nál-am-nál, nál-ad-nál, nál-á-nál, etc. Historically more widespread, such forms are, however, not considered to be correct in modern Standard Hungarian.

2.1.1.8. Number marking
2.1.1.8.1. Number marking in nouns
The Hungarian number marking system uses the singular-plural opposition, of which only the plural is marked.

**2.1.1.8.1.1. Singular-plural** Singular number is unmarked in Hungarian. The plural is marked with -i in possessives (to mark the plurality of the possessed nominal) and with -k everywhere else. Plural marking is always inside any case-marking.

(412) könyv-ek
book-PL
‘books’

(413) Attila autó-i
Attila car-POSS.3SG.PL
‘Attila’s cars’

The derivational suffix -ék denotes groups of people collectively, and refers to the person denoted and those whom the speaker and hearer associate with that person, usually family members or friends. Such nouns take plural verbs.

(414) Péter-ék
Peter-COL
‘Peter and his friend(s)/family’
2.1.1.8.2. Obligatoriness of number marking

Plural is obligatorily unmarked in Hungarian when a noun is modified with an attributive numeral denoting plurality.

(416)  két/néhány könyv
  'two/some book'

(417)  Attila három lány-a
  'Attila's three daughters'

Body parts occurring in pairs (as well as teeth), and pieces of clothing belonging to such body parts, are usually referred to in the singular in Hungarian.

(418)  El-fárad-t a szem-em.
  'My eyes got tired.'

(419)  Ve-tt-em egy szép barna cipő-t.
  'I bought a pair of nice brown shoes.'

2.1.1.8.5. Collective nouns

Most Hungarian collective nouns are formed with the derivational suffix -ság/ség, which is added to singular forms of nouns referring to one entity, e.g., katonaság 'army' from katona 'soldier' and rendőrség 'police' from rendőr 'policeman'. Others, like család 'family', klub 'club', and bizottság 'committee', form singulatives by compounding with the noun tag 'member'—családtag 'family member', klubtag 'member of the club' and bizottsági tag 'committee member'—and have regular plurals. Several borrowed collective nouns have corresponding borrowed singulatives, like arisztokrácia 'aristocracy' and proletariátus 'proletariat' existing along with arisztokrata 'aristocrat' and proletár 'proletarian'.

2.1.1.8.6. Means of number marking

The plural morpheme -k has five allomorphs for marking nouns: -k, -ok, -ak, -ek, and -ök.

The vowel-initial allomorphs attach to nouns ending in consonants, with the alternation determined by vowel harmony: -ok on back vowel stems like város—városok ‘town—towns’, -ak on a few monomorphemic back vowel stems like ház—házak ‘house—houses’ (such nouns require the a connecting vowel with the accusative and possessive suffixes as well, e.g., házat ‘house-ACC’, házam ‘my house’), -ek on stems with unrounded front vowels, e.g., gyerek—gyerekek ‘child—children’, and -ök on stems whose last vowel is a rounded front vowel, e.g., gyümölcs—gyümölcsök ‘fruit—fruits’. For more details see the section on vowel harmony in Chapter 3.

The plural allomorphs used with adjectives are usually -ak/ek: okos—okosak  ‘clever—clever ones’, szép—szépek ‘nice—nice ones’. Some exceptions are nagy—nagyok ‘big’ and boldog—boldogok ‘happy’.

2.1.1.8.7. Number marking of foreign words
All foreign and borrowed words are assigned a -k plural in Hungarian, e.g., lift—liftek ‘elevator—elevators’, sanzon—sanzonok ‘chanson—chansons’.

Several words borrowed in plural form are singular in Hungarian and receive -k plurals: klipsz—klipszek ‘(ear) clip—clips’, notesz—noteszok ‘(small) notebook—notebooks’, bricsesz—bricseszek ‘breeches—pairs of breeches’.

2.1.1.9. Noun classes
Hungarian nouns are not divided into classes or genders.

Gender is indicated only on some names of professions through compounding with the noun nő ‘woman’, as in király ‘king’ and királynő ‘queen’, színész ‘actor’ and színésznő ‘actress’, orvos ‘(male) doctor’ and orvsnő ‘female doctor’, and ápoló ‘male nurse’ and ápolónő ‘nurse’.

A small number of nouns have masculine and feminine counterparts, like agglegény ‘bachelor’ and vénlány ‘spinster’, szerzetes ‘monk’ and apáca ‘nun’, and úr ‘gentleman’ and hölgy ‘lady’.

2.1.1.10. Definiteness in noun phrases
All proper nouns and noun phrases involving a definite article are definite noun phrases in Hungarian. The definiteness or indefiniteness of the object is crucial in determining the conjugation of the verb (see section 2.1.3.6).
Nem lát-om Péter-t.

not see-DEF.1SG Peter-ACC

'I don't see Peter.'

Nem lát-om a fiú-t.

not see-DEF.1SG the boy-ACC

'I don't see the boy.'

Definiteness is not marked on nouns by affixation. Phrases whose head is a possessed noun, however, always behave like definite noun phrases whether or not they are preceded by a definite article.

Lát-om egy rendőr feleség-ét.

see-DEF.1SG a policeman wife-POSS.3SG-ACC

'I see a policeman's wife.'

Lát-om anyá-m-at.

see-DEF.1SG mother-POSS.1SG-ACC

'I see my mother.'

Lát-om a kutyá-m-at.

see-DEF.1SG the dog-POSS.1SG-ACC

'I see my dog.'

Nominals marked with the unique identification suffix -ik are also definite in Hungarian (see section 2.1.1.15).

Some proper names are always preceded by the definite article a or az: names of lakes, rivers, seas, oceans, and canals, e.g., az Erie tó ‘Lake Erie’, a Duna ‘the Danube’, a Fekete tenger ‘the Black Sea’, az Atlanti óceán ‘the Atlantic Ocean’, a Suez csatorna ‘the Suez Canal’; names of mountains and mountain ranges, e.g., a Mont Everest ‘Mount Everest’, a Sziklás hegység ‘the Rockies’, and az Ural ‘the Urals’; names of newspapers and journals, e.g., a Népszabadság ‘Népszabadság’, a The Times ‘The Times’, a Magyar Nyelv ‘Magyar Nyelv’, a Language in Society ‘Language in Society’; names of universities and other institutions, e.g., a Budapesti Műszaki Egyetem ‘the Technical University of Budapest’, a Yale ‘Yale University’, a Harvard ‘Harvard University’, and a Nemzeti Múzeum ‘the National Museum’; names of streets and city squares, e.g., a Váci utca ‘Váci Street’, a Times Square ‘Times Square’; and, exceptionally, az Arktisz ‘the Arctic’, and az Antarktisz ‘Antarctica’.

In colloquial usage personal names are also often preceded by the definite article.

Hol van a János?

where be.3SG the John

‘Where is John?’
Abstract nouns are most often preceded by the definite article:

(427) Szeret-em a szabadság-ot.
like-DEF.1SG the freedom-ACC
‘I like freedom.’

Incorporated argumental preverbs when they express objects are also usually articleless and therefore indefinite (see section 2.1.3.6.12).

(431) Andrea újság-ot olvas.
Andrea newspaper-ACC read.INDEF.3SG
‘Andrea is reading a newspaper. (=‘newspaper-reading’)

Among proper names, the following do not receive articles: names of continents, countries, states, counties, cities, towns and villages, e.g., Európa ‘Europe’, Oroszország ‘Russia’, Dél-Dakota ‘South Dakota’, Csongrád megye ‘Csongrád County’, Budapest ‘Budapest’, Velence ‘Venice’, and Szöreg ‘Szöreg’.

Subject- and object-complements normally do not receive articles in Hungarian.

(432) Diák vagy-ok.
student be-1SG
‘I am a student.’

(433) Peti-t választ-ott-ák kapus-nak.
Pete-ACC choose-PAST-DEF.3PL goalkeeper-DAT
‘They chose Pete to be the goalkeeper.’
Page 259

In discourse, entities often appear with no article when they are first mentioned.

(434) Tűzoltóautó áll-t meg a ház előtt.
    fire.truck stop-PAST.INDEF.3SG PFX the house in.front.of
    ‘A fire truck has stopped in front of the house.’

2.1.1.12. Referential and nonreferential indefiniteness

Referential and nonreferential indefiniteness are both expressed with the indefinite article in Hungarian.

Nonreferential indefiniteness can also be indicated by the attributive use of the pronouns valami and valamilyen ‘some kind’ with both count and noncount nouns, the former in both singular and plural.

(435) Béla talál-t valamilyen könyv-(ek)-et a padlás-on.
    Béla find-PAST.INDEF.3SG some.kind book-(PL)-ACC the attic
    ‘Béla found some book(s) in the attic.’

(436) Gyula valami rossz sör-t iv-ott.
    Julius some bad beer-ACC drink-PAST.INDEF.3SG
    ‘Julius drank some bad beer or other.’

2.1.1.13. Genericness in noun phrases

Generic reference can be indicated with a definite singular or plural noun phrase.

(437) A hód a víz-ben él.
    the beaver the water-INE live.INDEF.3SG
    ‘The beaver lives in the water.’

(438) A hód-ok víz-ben él-nek.
    the beaver-PL water-INE live-INDEF.3PL
    ‘Beavers live in the water.’

(439) Szeret-em az almá-t.
    like-DEF.1SG the apple-PL
    ‘I like apples.’

(440) Szeret-em a gyerek-ek-et.
    like-DEF.1SG the child-PL-ACC
    ‘I like children.’

Noncount nouns are always definite in generic reference.
2.1.1.15. **Unique identification**

The unique identification suffix -ik is added to nominals, especially to comparative adjectives (nagyobbik ‘the bigger one’, kisebbik ‘the smaller one’), ordinal numerals (második ‘the second’, harmadik ‘the third’), and some universal and partitive pronouns (mindegyik ‘each one’, valamelyik ‘any/either one’, semelyik ‘not one’) to denote ‘givenness’, i.e., membership in a set of entities known to be limited to both speaker and hearer. Nominals marked for -ik assume a limited set of items predefined for both speaker and listener (Harlig 1989), and are identified by personal knowledge as unique (Hetzron 1970). Such nominals are also always definite—in fact, on a scale of definiteness proposed by Hetzron (1970), more definite than entities identified referentially through earlier mention. (See also sections 2.1.3.2.1.2, 2.1.4.4.2, and 2.1.6.6.)

### 2.1.2. Pronouns

#### 2.1.2.1. Personal pronouns

**2.1.2.1.1. Free pronouns**

Free pronouns occur in Hungarian in subject, direct object, indirect object, and other positions. Free pronouns are not obligatory in all circumstances.

The nominative forms of the free pronouns are the following (see section 2.1.2.1.20.5 for the forms bearing other cases):

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Person</th>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>first</td>
<td>én</td>
<td>mi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>second</td>
<td>te</td>
<td>ti</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>third</td>
<td>ō</td>
<td>ōk</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
In several Hungarian dialects the plural forms mink and tik occur for first and second person, respectively; these, however, are considered nonstandard in modern Hungarian.

The third person pronouns ő and ők, singular and plural respectively, do not express gender. As subjects and direct objects they are used to refer only to humans, and as indirect objects and arguments governed by verbs or adjectives they can usually refer only to animates. Inanimates are referred to with the demonstrative az ‘that’ inflected for the appropriate case.

Hungarian does not mark differently various third person actors as more or less important. There is no differentiation between different degrees of proximity in participants, and no special anaphoric third person pronouns.

2.1.2.1.3. Occurrence of free pronouns

2.1.2.1.3.1. Noncontrastive nonemphatic contexts Free pronouns as subjects usually do not occur in noncontrastive nonemphatic contexts, since all verbs are marked for subject. The free pronoun subjects that are obligatorily present in noncontrastive nonemphatic contexts are third person subject pronouns in present tense copular constructions in simple sentences like (446), since the copula does not overtly occur in these cases.

(444) Diák-ok vagy-unk.
student-PL be-1PL
‘We are students.’

(445) Az egyetem-en dolgoz-tok?
the university-SUP work-1NDEF.2PL
‘Do you (PL) work at the university?’

(446) Ök tanár-ok.
they teacher-PL
‘They are teachers.’

Because third person pronoun direct objects require the verb to be in the definite conjugation, while first and second pronoun direct objects require the indefinite conjugation, third person pronoun direct objects are usually not expressed overtly if they are singular, though they are obligatory in the plural.

(447) Szeret-ed?
love-DEF.2SG
‘Do you love him/her/it?’
Page 262

(448) Szeret-ed Őket?
love-DEF.2SG they-ACC
'Do you love them?'

In the case of a first or second person pronoun direct object, the pronoun can be omitted if it is singular and if the person referred to is unambiguous from the context, and it is expressed overtly if it is plural or if there would be ambiguity as to whether the object referred to is first or second person.

(449) Szeret-lek.
love-1SG.2OBJ
'I love you (SG).'

(450) Szeret-lek titeket.
love-1SG.2OBJ you.PL.ACC
'I love you (PL).'

(451) Szeret-sz?
love-INDEF.2SG
'Do you love me?'

(452) Szeret-sz minket?
love-INDEF.2SG we.ACC
'Do you like us?'

(453) Péter szeret engem?
Peter love.INDEF.3SG I.ACC
'Does Peter love me?'

In indirect object and other positions, pronouns are usually expressed overtly, since case must be marked on them. When the personal pronoun is governed by a postposition, the person and number are indicated on the postposition itself.

(454) Ez-t a pulóver-t ve-tt-em nek-ed.
this-ACC the sweater-ACC buy-PAST-DEF.1SG DAT-2SG
'I bought this sweater for you.'

(455) Ez-t a pulóver-t ve-tt-em.
this-ACC the sweater-ACC buy-PAST-DEF.1SG
'I bought this sweater.'

(456) Péter felel ért-ünk.
Peter be.responsible.INDEF.3SG CAU-1PL
'Peter is responsible for us.'
2.1.2.1.1.3.2. **Emphatic and contrastive contexts**

In contexts where the pronoun is emphasized or contrasted it is always expressed overtly, in a preverbal focussed position (also see 1.11 and 1.12).

(458) \[ \text{Te ül-sz ít?} \]
\[ \text{you sit-INDEF.2SG here} \]
\[ \text{Is it you who is sitting here?'} \]

(459) \[ \text{Én téged szeret-lek, nem ő-t.} \]
\[ \text{I you.ACC love-1SG.2OBJ not s/he-ACC} \]
\[ \text{It is you that I love, not him/her.'} \]

2.1.2.1.1.3.3. **Unemphatic contexts with imperative verbs**

In unemphatic contexts involving imperative verbs, pronouns do not occur overtly, since the person and number are always indicated on the verb.

(460) \[ \text{Néz-z ide!} \]
\[ \text{come-IMP.INDEF.2SG to.here} \]
\[ \text{‘Look here!’} \]

(461) \[ \text{Ne gyer-tek ide!} \]
\[ \text{not come.IMP-INDEF.2PL to.here} \]
\[ \text{‘Don’t come here!’} \]

2.1.2.1.1.3.4. **Emphatic and contrastive contexts with imperative verbs**

In emphatic contexts pronouns are not expressed with imperative verbs. Instead, other markers of emphasis, like már or a vocative clause, are usually used.

(462) \[ \text{Gyer-e már ide!} \]
\[ \text{come.IMP-INDEF.2SG EMPH to.here} \]
\[ \text{‘Come here!’ (emphatic)} \]

(463) \[ \text{Nóra, gyer-e ide!} \]
\[ \text{Nora come.IMP-INDEF.2SG to.here} \]
\[ \text{‘Nora, you come here!’} \]

In contrastive contexts, however, pronouns are expressed with imperative verbs overtly.

(464) \[ \text{Te gyer-e ide, ne Zsófia!} \]
\[ \text{you come.IMP-INDEF.2SG to.here not Sophia} \]
\[ \text{‘You come here, not Sophia!’} \]
Questions of the 'Who is that?' type have nominative forms of the pronouns. A resumptive az is optional in answers involving first and second persons: it is usually present with the third person singular, and is obligatory with the third person plural.

(465)  En vagy-ok (az).
      I be-1SG (that)
      'It's me.'

(466)  Ok az-ok.
      they that-PL
      'It is they.'

2.1.2.1.3.6. Cleft and pseudo-cleft constructions Hungarian does not have cleft or pseudo-cleft constructions. The Hungarian equivalents of such constructions contain relative clauses, with the main clause receiving extra emphasis through focus. (Also see section 1.11 for emphasis and focus.)

(467)  Zsuzsa vol-t az, aki
      Susan be-PAST.3SG that REL.who
      be-vásárol-t.
      PFX-do.shopping-PAST.INDEF.3SG
      'It was Susan who did the shopping.'

(468)  Vigájáték-ok az-ok, ami-k-et Irén
      comedy-PL that-PL REL.what-PL-ACC Irene
      nez.
      watch.INDEF.3SG
      'It is comedies that Irene watches.'

(469)  A Karácsony az, ami-nek a legjobb-an
      the Christmas that REL.what-DAT the best-MOE
      örül.
      be.happy.INDEF.3SG
      'It's Christmas that s/he is happiest about.'

(470)  A fiók az, ahova a toll-at
      the drawer that REL.to.where the pen-ACC
      te-tt-e.
      put-PAST-DEF.3SG
      'It was the drawer that s/he put the pen into.'
2.1.2.1.4. Suprasegmental characteristics of free pronouns

In emphatic contexts free pronouns always receive primary stress (marked by ' below) if they are in the preverbal focus position and secondary stress (marked by ) otherwise. In nonemphatic contexts pronouns are unaccented.

(471) 'Téged szeret-lek.
    you.ACC love-1SG.2OBJ
    'It's you that I love.'

(472) Én 'téged szeret-lek.
    I you.ACC love-1SG.2OBJ
    'As for me, it is you that I love.'

(473) Figyel-sz rá-m?
    listen-INDEF.2SG SUB-1SG
    'Are you listening to me?'

2.1.2.1.4. Number marking in pronouns

Hungarian distinguishes between singular and plural in pronouns. Number marking is obligatory. Pronouns can be associated with numerals.

If the pronoun the numeral is associated with is the subject, the numeral phrase serves as an adverbial inflected for the modal-essive case. There is no upper limit on the numeral in such cases.

(474) Kett-en megy-ünk sétál-ni.
    two-MOE go-INDEF.1PL walk-INF
    'The two of us will go for a walk.'

(475) Sokezr-en meg-néz-t-ék a
    many.thousand-MOE PFX-see-PAST-DEF.3PL the
    kiállítás-t.
    exhibition-ACC
    'Many thousands of people have seen the exhibition.'

If the pronoun the numeral is associated with is not a subject and is not emphasized, the numeral is marked with the personal possessive suffix corresponding to the person of the pronoun. If the pronoun associated with the numeral receives special emphasis, it is expressed overtly before the numeral and bears the case required in the position that it appears in.
(476) A fiú kettő-nk-et vár-ja.
the boy two-POSS.1PL-ACC expect-DEF.3SG
'The boy is expecting the two of us.'

(477) Mink-et kettő-nk-et vár a fiú.
we-ACC two-POSS.1PL-ACC expect.INDEF.3SG the boy
'It's us two that the boy is expecting.'

(478) (Nek-ik) husz-uk-nak küld-t-ünk
(DAT-3PL) twenty-POSS.3PL-DAT send-PAST-INDEF.1PL
meghívó-t.
invitation-ACC
'We sent invitations to twenty of them.'

Collectivity in such expressions is indicated by the collective pronoun mind 'all'. Mind can be compounded with the numerals kettő 'two' and három 'three' to form mindkettő 'both' and mindhárom 'all three'. Mind also occurs in noun phrases with all numerals, including kettő and három. Personal pronouns bearing the case appropriate in the given position can also be included in such phrases for special emphasis.

(479) Mindkett-en ott vol-t-unk.
all.two-MOE there be-PAST-1PL
'Both of us were there.'

(480) (Ők) mind a hat-an el-jö-tt-ek.
(they) all the six-MOE PFX-come-PAST-INDEF.3PL
'All six of them came.'

(481) Mindhárm-unk-at meg-hív-t-ak.
all.three-POSS.1PL-ACC PFX-invite-PAST-INDEF.3PL
'They invited all three of us.'

(482) (Nek-ik) mind a tíz-uk-nek küld-ünk
(DAT-3PL) all the ten-POSS.3PL-DAT send-INDEF.1PL
meghívó-t.
invitation-ACC
'We'll send invitations to all ten of them.'

2.1.2.1.12. Status distinction
In Hungarian the use of the second person pronouns te 'you (SG)' and ti 'you (PL)' conveys familiarity, informality, solidarity, and/or intimacy. Formality, politeness, and/or lack of familiarity or intimacy is expressed by the nominal forms ön or maga in the singular and önök and maguk in the plural, cooccurring with third person verb-forms in the
appropriate number. Of the two sets, ön/önök is more formal and/or polite than maga/maguk.

(483) Hol lak-ik ön?
where live-1NDEF.3SG you.formal
‘Where do you (SG, formal) live?’

(484) Mag-uk tanár-ok?
you.formal-PL teacher-PL
‘Are you (PL, formal) teachers?’

The choice of informal te-address and formal ön- or maga-address, as well as of reciprocal or nonreciprocal usage, is determined along lines very much like those proposed in Brown and Gilman’s classic 1960 study. For further details on Hungarian address, see Reményi (1994) and Terestyéni (1995).

The use of names, titles, and various combinations of names and titles indicates politeness if the addressee’s title and/or name is known to the addresser, whereas their omission indicates the lack thereof.

Honorary kinship titles are bácsi and néni in Hungarian, literally meaning ‘uncle’ and ‘aunt’, respectively, used by children in addressing adults and by adults in nonreciprocal formal (but familiar and intimate) address toward adults at least a generation older.

Titles and combinations of titles and names are generally of the following kind in Hungarian:

- first name (full or diminutive)  Péter, Péti, Anna, Ani
- last name  Kovács, Szabó
- first name+honorary kinship title  Péter bácsi, Mari néni
- last name+honorary kinship title  Kovács bácsi, Szabó néni
- title alone  uram ‘sir’, asszonyom ‘ma’am’, kisasszony ‘miss’
- last name+title  Kovács úr ‘Mr Kovács’, Szabó kisasszony ‘Miss Szabó’
- double title  doktor úr ‘sir doctor’, elnök asszony ‘ma’am president’, tanárnő ‘ma’am teacher/professor’

The cooccurrence of te-, ön- and maga-address with the various title and name combinations creates over a dozen possible ways of address, the choice among which is determined by a complex set of Hungarian sociolinguistic rules. Sociolinguistic variables that contribute to determining the appropriate address are: the social context of the interaction, shared group membership, kinship ties and previous acquaintance between the parties involved, sex, and age.
2.1.2.1.13.2. Nonspecific indefinite pronouns

The second person singular pronoun te is sometimes used as a nonspecific indefinite pronoun. It is, however, usually used only in situations where informal address would otherwise be acceptable as well.

If informal address would not be acceptable in the given situation (e.g., in instructions for products or in giving directions to a stranger), third person verb-forms are normally used. First person plural forms are also sometimes used in nonspecific indefinite usage, e.g., in recipes and sewing instructions in magazines. In all these kinds of nonspecific indefinite usage, the pronouns themselves are usually not expressed overtly, but are indicated by agreement on the verb.

(485)  A hús-t meg-süt-jük és apró szelet-ek-re
      vág-jük.
      ‘Bake the meat and cut it into small slices.’

The most common kind of nonspecific indefinite usage, however, is that involving the noun ember ‘person’; see 2.1.2.1.13.3 below.

2.1.2.1.13.3. Nouns in nonspecific indefinite usage

The noun phrase az ember ‘the person’ most commonly functions in nonspecific indefinite usage in everyday conversation, with corresponding third person singular verbs.

(486)  Az ember nem tud-ja, mi-t csinál-j-on ilyen-kor.
      ‘One doesn’t know what to do in a situation like this.’

2.1.2.1.14. Specific indefinite pronouns

The specific indefinite pronoun referring to humans is valaki ‘someone’. The pronoun némelyik ‘someone’ is occasionally used instead, especially in the possessive with a partitive meaning. Its plural, némelyek, refers to specific indefinite persons, but is used mostly with negative connotations.

(487)  Valaki be-jö-tt.
      ‘Someone came in.’
Some of the villagers keep rabbits.

Some people don't know how to behave.

I see something.

We linguists speak languages well.

You doctors work a lot.

You (formal) doctors work a lot.

The construction of the general type 'we (and) the priest', meaning 'the priest and I', occurs in Hungarian with the noun part of the construction in the instrumental. It can contain the second person singular pronoun te as well. The coordinators és and meg, both meaning 'and', which are the normal coordinators for noun phrases, cannot occur in this construction.
in Hungarian (*mi és Péterrel, *mi és veled could not occur instead of mi Péterrel and mi veled in the examples below).

(494) Mi Péter-rel sok-at jár-unk koncert-re.
     we Peter-INS much-ACC go-INDEF.1PL concert-SUB
     ‘Peter and I go to concerts a lot.’

(495) Mi vel-ed sok-at jár-unk koncert-re.
     we INS-2SG much-ACC go-INDEF.1PL concert-SUB
     ‘You and I go to concerts a lot.’

2.1.2.1.20. Case system in pronouns
Pronouns are inflected for case in Hungarian. Pronouns do not have any additional cases beyond those found in nouns. Not all of the noun cases, however, occur with pronouns.
The cases that do NOT occur with personal pronouns are the locative, terminative, temporal, iterative, translative, comitative, essive, multiplicative, modal, modal-essive, formal, essive-formal, and distributive.
The allative forms of the pronouns are used instead of the terminative.

2.1.2.1.20.5. Irregular forms of cases
The accusative forms of the personal pronouns are the following:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Person</th>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1SG</td>
<td>engem(et)</td>
<td>minket, bennünket</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2SG</td>
<td>téged(et)</td>
<td>titeket, benneteket</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3SG</td>
<td>öt</td>
<td>öket</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The accusative suffix -et is optional (and redundant) with the first and second person singular pronouns.
The other cases of the personal pronouns are formed with the possessive personal endings attached to one of the allomorphs of the case suffix. In the following pronominal paradigms all pronouns have alternative forms with the nominative forms of the pronouns attached before them (e.g., dative forms énnekem and teneked instead of nekem and neked, etc.), which are used to provide extra emphasis on the person (e.g., Énnekem ilyet mondasz? ‘You say this to ME?’).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Person</th>
<th>Dative</th>
<th>Causal-final</th>
<th>Instrumental</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1SG</td>
<td>nekem (nékem)</td>
<td>értem</td>
<td>velem</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2SG</td>
<td>neked (néked)</td>
<td>érted</td>
<td>veled</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3SG</td>
<td>neki(néki)</td>
<td>érte</td>
<td>vele</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1PL</td>
<td>nekünk (nékünk)</td>
<td>értünk</td>
<td>velünk</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2PL</td>
<td>nekték (nékték)</td>
<td>értetek</td>
<td>veletek</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3PL</td>
<td>nekik(nékik)</td>
<td>értük</td>
<td>velük</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Elative Inessive Illative

1SG belőlem bennem belém
2SG belőled benned beléd
3SG belőle benne belé
1PL belőlünk bennünk belenk
2PL belőletek bennetek belétek
3PL belőlük bennük beléjük

Ablative Adessive Allative

1SG tôlem nálam hozzám
2SG tôled nálad hozzád
3SG tôle nála hozzá
1PL tôlünk nálunk hozzák
2PL tôletek nálatok hozzátok
3PL tôlük náluk hozzájuk

Delative Superessive Sublative

1SG rólam rajtam rám (reám)
2SG rõlad rajtad rád (reád)
3SG rõla rajta rá (reá)
1PL rõlunk rajtunk ránk (reánk)
2PL rõlatok rajtotok rátok (reátok)
3PL rõluk rajtuk rájuk (reájuk)

The bracketed forms of the dative and sublative pronouns are archaic and are used only very rarely in literary texts in modern Hungarian.

2.1.2.2. Reflexive pronouns

Hungarian has a set of reflexive pronouns. Below are the nominative forms of these pronouns, which are used only as emphatic pronouns (see section 2.1.2.2.7 below):

Person

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
<td>magam</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>magad</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>maga</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Reflexivity can also be expressed with reflexive verbs in Hungarian; see sections 1.6, 2.1.3.1.2.1, and 2.2.2.2.4.

2.1.2.2.4. Case-marking of reflexive pronouns

Reflexive pronouns are marked for case. Case suffixes are attached to the base forms in a regular manner, e.g., magam-ban (inessive), magam-on (superessive), and magam-nak (dative).
Page 272
(496) Márta egy sál-at ve-tt
Martha a scarf-ACC buy-PAST.INDEF.3SG
magá-nak.
him/herself-DAT
‘Martha bought a scarf for herself.’
(497) Bíz-z-atok magatok-ban.
trust-IMP-INDEF.2PL yourselves-INE
‘Trust yourselves.’

The accusative forms of the first and second person reflexive pronouns are marked optionally: magam(at),
magad(at).
(498) Lát-om magam(-at) a tükör-ben.
see-DEF.1SG myself(-ACC) the mirror-INE
‘I see myself in the mirror.’
not see-DEF.1PL ourselves-ACC the picture-SUP
‘We don’t see ourselves in the picture.’

2.1.2.2.7. Other uses of reflexive pronouns
Reflexive pronouns are used as emphatic pronouns, occurring optionally together with the personal pronouns.
(500) (Én) magam varr-t-am ez-t a zakó-t.
(I) myself sew-PAST-DEF.1SG this-ACC the jacket-ACC
‘I sewed this jacket myself.’
(501) Pál-nak magá-nak is van autó-ja.
Paul-DAT him/herself-DAT also be.3SG car-POSS.3SG
‘Paul himself has a car, too.’

2.1.2.3. Reciprocal pronoun
Hungarian has one reciprocal pronoun: egymás. It is marked for case in a regular manner: egymás-t (accusative),
egymás-nak (dative), egymás-tól (ablative), etc.
(502) A gyerek-ek ajándék-ot készít-ett-ek
the child-PL present-ACC make-PAST-1NDEF.3PL
egymás-nak.
each.other-DAT
‘The children made presents for each other.’
Ők szeret-ik egymás-t?
they love-DEF.3PL each.other-ACC
‘Do they love each other?’

A lány-ök be-fon-t-ák egymás
the girl-PL PFX-braid-PAST-DEF.3PL each.other
haj-á-t.
hair-POSS.3SG-ACC
‘The girls braided each other’s hair.’

A nyúl-ak egymás után el-pusztul-t-ak.
the rabbit-PL each.other after PFX-die-PAST-INDEF.3PL
‘The rabbits died one after the other.’

2.1.2.4. Possessive pronouns

In attributive positions (in the equivalent of ‘my book’, etc.) Hungarian uses personal pronouns (see section 2.1.1.4.6 for details).

In predicative positions the following possessive pronouns are used:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular possession</th>
<th>Plural possession</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1SG enyém, enyémek</td>
<td>1PL mienk, mienk</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2SG tied, tiéd</td>
<td>2PL tietek, tiéték</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3SG övé, övéi</td>
<td>3PL övék</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The alternative forms tiéd, mienk, tiéték, and enyémek are used mostly in spoken Hungarian, but there they are very common.

Possessive pronouns are usually preceded by the definite article in Hungarian.

Az a kávé az enyém.
‘That coffee is mine.’

Ez-ek a könyv-ek az övé-PL.
‘These books are his/hers.’

Hungarian does not make a distinction between alienable and inalienable, temporary and permanent, or present and past possession.
2.1.2.4.4. Case-marking in predicative possessive pronouns

Predicative possessive pronouns are marked for case in the regular way, e.g., enyém-nek (dative) and tied-hez (allative).

(508) Az én kutyá-m nem féle a
tied-től.
yours-ABL
‘My dog is not afraid of yours.’

(509) Az ő any-ja szereti az enyém-et.
the s/he mother-POS.3SG like-DEF.3SG the mine-ACC
‘His/Her mother likes mine.’

2.1.2.4.7. Reflexive possessive pronouns

Hungarian does not have specific reflexive possessive pronouns, but reflexive pronouns can be marked for the possessive with the -é possessive suffix (see section 2.1.1.4.6 for details): magam-é, magad-é, magá-é, magunk-é, magatok-é, maguk-é. These forms can also be marked for case: magamé-t (accusative), magamé-nak (dative), etc.

(510) Éva az ő kutyá-já-val játszik, én a
myself-POS-INS
‘Eve is playing with her dog and I with my own.’

2.1.2.4.8. Reciprocal possessive pronouns

There are no specific reciprocal possessive pronouns in Hungarian, but the reciprocal pronoun egymás can be marked with the -é possessive: egymásé. This form, in turn, can receive case-marking: egymásét (accusative), egymásénak (dative), etc.

(511) Question
Ki-nek a képé-i-t nézgetítek?
whom-DAT the picture-POSS.3SG-PL-ACC look.ITER-DEF.2PL
‘Whose pictures are you looking through?’
Answer
Egymás-é-i-t.
each.other-POS-PL-ACC
‘Each other’s.’

< previous page  page_274  next page >
2.1.2.5. Demonstrative pronouns

Hungarian has the following demonstrative pronouns:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Demonstrative Pronoun</th>
<th>Hungarian</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ez</td>
<td>'this'</td>
<td>'that'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>emez</td>
<td>'this other'</td>
<td>'that other'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ugyanez</td>
<td>'this same'</td>
<td>'that same'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ily, ilyen</td>
<td>'such'</td>
<td>'such'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>emilyen</td>
<td>'such like this'</td>
<td>'such like that'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ugyanilyen</td>
<td>'same as this'</td>
<td>'same as that'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>effele</td>
<td>'this kind'</td>
<td>'this kind'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ilyenféle</td>
<td>'this kind'</td>
<td>'this kind'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ilyesféle</td>
<td>'this kind'</td>
<td>'this kind'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ilyesmi</td>
<td>'this kind'</td>
<td>'this kind'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ekkora</td>
<td>'this size'</td>
<td>'this size'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ugyanekkora</td>
<td>'this same size'</td>
<td>'this same size'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ennyi</td>
<td>'this much'</td>
<td>'this much'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>emennyi</td>
<td>'this other amount'</td>
<td>'this other amount'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ugyanennyi</td>
<td>'this same amount'</td>
<td>'this same amount'</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Note that the z of ez and az fully assimilates to any suffix-initial consonant. Thus forms such as ennyi and afféle (above) are the assimilations from ez+nyi and az+félé. See also the discussion of case-marking on demonstrative pronouns in section 2.1.2.5.6 below.

All of the demonstrative pronouns can be used attributively and as nominals as well.

(512) Ennyi pénz-t kap-t-am.
    this.much money-ACC receive-PAST-INDEF.1SG
    'I received this much money.'

(513) Ennyi-t kap-t-am.
    this.much-ACC receive-PAST-INDEF.1SG
    'I received this much.'

When any of the basic demonstrative pronouns ez, az, emez, amaz, ugyanez or ugyanaz is used attributively, it is obligatorily followed by the definite article in the noun phrase.

(514) Ez a könyv régi,
    this the book old
    'This book is old.'
2.1.2.5.1. Parameters involved in the demonstrative pronouns

2.1.2.5.1.1. Relative distance from speaker

The main parameter in the Hungarian demonstrative system is relative distance from the speaker. The reference of the pronoun ez and the pronouns containing ez (efféle, ekkora, etc.) is a relatively short distance from the speaker, while the reference of the pronoun az and the demonstrative pronouns containing it (ugyanaz, akkora, etc.) is a relatively greater distance from the speaker.

Ez egy toll, az egy ceruza.
This a pen, that a pencil

‘This is a pen, and that is a pencil.’

2.1.2.5.1.2. Other parameters

Other parameters in the demonstrative system are contrastive emphasis and identity.

2.1.2.5.1.2.1. Contrastive emphasis

Demonstrative pronouns compounded with em- and am-, such as emez, amaz, emilyen, amolyan, emennyi, and amennyi, are used to express emphasis to ez, az, ilyen, olyan, ennyi, and annyi, respectively.

Nem ez-t kér-em, hanem emez-t.
not this-ACC want-DEF.1SG but this.other-ACC
‘It’s not this that I want but this other one.’

Az én ház-am nem olyan, hanem amolyan.
the I house-POSS.1SG not that.kind but that.other.kind
‘My house is not like that but like that other one.’

2.1.2.5.1.2.2. Identity

The demonstrative pronouns compounded with ugyan-, such as ugyanez, ugangolyan, and ugyanekkora, express identity with something else.

Még mindig ugyanaz-t a könyv-et olvas-od?
yet always that.same-ACC the book-ACC read-DEF.2SG
‘Are you still reading that same book?’

En ugyanolyan cipő-t akar-ok, mint te.
I same.that.kind shoe-ACC want-INDEF.1SG as you
‘I want the same kind of shoes as you.’
(521) Ugyanannyi-ból él-ek én is.
that.same.amount-ELA live-INDEF.1SG I also
'I live on exactly the same amount also.'

2.1.2.5.4. Number marking in demonstrative pronouns
All demonstrative pronouns except those referring to amounts (ennyi 'this amount', ugyanannyi 'that same amount', etc.) can be marked for plural in Hungarian. As in nouns, plural is marked with the plural marker -k.

(522) Ez-ek-ről a könyv-ek-ről beszél-t-em
this-PL-DEL the book-PL-DEL speak-PAST-INDEF.1SG
'Ve talked to him about these books.'

(523) Lajos ilyen-ek-et mond-ott.
Louis such-PL-ACC say-PAST.INDEF.3SG
'Louis said these kinds of things.'

2.1.2.5.6. Case-marking in demonstrative pronouns
Demonstrative pronouns are marked for case in Hungarian. The cases that do NOT occur with the main demonstrative pronouns ez and az are: the locative, iterative, comitative, essive, distributive, modal, and modal-essive. The occurrence of the forms of other demonstrative pronouns are even further restricted by their meaning: for instance, the pronouns referring to amounts (such as ennyi and annyï) never occur with the essive-formal case which is used to express functions.

The z of the pronouns ez, az (and of the compounds emez, amaz, ugyanez, and ugyanaz) completely assimilates to a following suffix-initial consonant in all possible cases. It does not assimilate in the accusative, however, or in the transitive (where the suffix-initial v assimilates to the z obligatorily), the instrumental (where either the suffix-initial v assimilates to the z or vice versa), or the formal (where the z is deleted). The forms of ez and az in the various cases are the following:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Case</th>
<th>ez</th>
<th>az</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Accusative</td>
<td>ezt</td>
<td>azt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dative</td>
<td>ennek</td>
<td>annak</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Inessive</td>
<td>ebben</td>
<td>abban</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elative</td>
<td>ebből</td>
<td>abból</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Illative</td>
<td>ebbe</td>
<td>abba</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Adessive</td>
<td>ennél</td>
<td>annál</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ablative</td>
<td>ettől</td>
<td>attól</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
The pronouns ez, az, emez, amaz, ugyanez, and ugyanaz are marked for case when they are used attributively, and they also require the definite article to be included in the noun phrase (e.g., ez a város ‘this city’). In such phrases, these demonstrative pronouns are modified by the case-marking as well as by the postpositions. This is thus the only instance of case-marking inside the noun phrase in Hungarian that involves anything beyond the head noun (although attributive adjectives and numerals are also case-marked when their head nouns are not overtly expressed and they constitute pro-forms; see section 2.1.4.3). When these attributive demonstrative pronouns are governed by postpositions beginning with a consonant, the z of ez and az is deleted.

(524) Eb-ben a város-ban lak-om.
    this-INE the city-INE live-INDEF.1SG
    ‘I live in this city.’

(525) A kulcs az alatt a könyv alatt van.
    the key that under the book under be.3SG
    ‘The key is under that book.’

(526) A kulcs e mellett a könyv mellett van.
    the key this near the book near be.3SG
    ‘The key is next to this book.’

2.1.2.6. Interrogative pronouns and other question-words
Hungarian has interrogative pronouns which are used identically in direct and indirect questions.

2.1.2.6.1. Interrogative pronouns
The general interrogative pronouns in Hungarian are ki ‘who’ and mi ‘what’, with the former being
used in reference to humans and the latter to nonhumans. They are marked for plural (kik and mik) if the answer is expected to be in the plural. They are also marked for case and can be governed by postpositions.

(527) Mi ez?  
what this  
‘What is this?’

(528) Ki-k-et vár-sz?  
who-PL-ACC expect-INDEF.2SG  
‘Whom are you expecting?’

(529) Ki-ben bíz-ol?  
who-INE trust-INDEF.2SG  
‘Whom do you trust?’

(530) Mi-ről beszél-t Júlia?  
what-DEL speak-PAST.1INDEF.3SG Julia  
‘What was Júlia speaking about?’

(531) Mi után szalad-t-al?  
what after run-PAST-INDEF.2SG  
‘What were you running after?’

2.1.2.6.1.2. Selective interrogative pronouns The selective interrogative pronouns are melyik ‘which one’ and hányadik ‘which one (ordinal)’. The pronoun hányadik is used to refer to something occupying a place in a certain order, and its answer contains an ordinal numeral. Both can be used attributively or as nominals. When they are used as nominals they are marked for case.

(532) Melyik virág-ot kér-ed?  
which flower-ACC want-DEF.2SG  
‘Which flower do you want?’

(533) Melyik-et kér-ed?  
which-ACC want-DEF.2SG  
‘Which one do you want?’

(534) Question  
Hányadik sor-ban ül-sz?  
which.ordinal row-INE sit-INDEF.2SG  
‘What row do you sit in?’

Answer  
A harmadik-ban.  
the third-INDEF  
‘In the third row.’
2.1.2.6.1.3. Other interrogative pronouns

Other interrogative pronouns are milyen, miféle, mifajta, all three meaning ‘what kind’; mékora ‘what size’; hány ‘how many’; mennyi ‘how much/many’; mikor ‘when’; miért ‘why’; kié ‘whose’; hol ‘where’; honnan ‘from where’; and hová/hova ‘to where’. The pronoun milyen is the most usual pronoun in questions of the ‘What is it like?’ type, whereas miféle and mifajta are used much less frequently, in the ‘What sort of…?’ type of questions.

(535) Milyen ez a könyv?
what.kind this the book
‘What is this book like?’

(536) Milyen-ek a diájai-d?
what.kind-PL the student-PL-POSS.2SG
‘What are your students like?’

The pronouns milyen, mékora, hány, and mennyi can be used both attributively and as nominals. In the latter usage they can be marked for case. The pronouns milyen, miféle, mifajta, and mékora can also be marked for the plural when they are used as nominals.

(537) Mékora kert-et akar-sz?
what.size garden-ACC want-INDEF.2SG
‘What size garden do you want?’

(538) Mennyi-ért ve-tt-ed az autót?
how.much-CAU buy-PAST-DEF.2SG the car-ACC
‘How much did you buy the car for?’

(539) Milyen-ek-et szeret-sz?
what.kind-PL-ACC like-INDEF.2SG
‘What kinds do you like?’

(540) Hány-ban szület-t-él?
how.many-INE be.born-PAST-INDEF.2SG
‘What year were you born in?’

(541) Hány-kor indul-unk?
how.many-TEM leave-INDEF.1PL
‘What time are we leaving?’

The pronoun kié ‘whose’ can only be used as a nominal, and only to refer to human possessors. Kinek and minek (ki ‘who’ and mi ‘what’ bearing dative to signal the possessor) are used to refer to possessors attributively.

< previous page  page_280  next page >
(542) Kié ez a táska?
whose this the bag
‘Whose is this bag?’

(543) Ki-nek a táská-ja ez?
who-DAT the bag-POSS.3SG this
‘Whose bag is this?’

(544) Mi-nek az ajtó-ja ez?
what-DAT the door-POSS.3SG this
‘What is this the door of (=the door to)?’

The pronouns hol ‘where’, honnan ‘from where’, and hová/hova ‘to where’ refer to place adverbs.

(545) Hol van Attila?
where be.3SG Attila
‘Where is Attila?’

(546) Honnan jön a vonat?
where.from come.INDEF.3SG the train
‘Where is the train coming from?’

(547) Hová mész?
where.to go.INDEF.2SG
‘Where are you going?’

2.1.2.6.2. Other question phrases
The pronoun milyen ‘what kind’ is used in interrogative phrases involving adjectives.

(548) Milyen szín-ű az új autó-d?
what.kind color-ADJ DER the new car-POSS.2SG
‘What color is your new car?’

(549) Milyen széles a Duna?
what.kind wide the Danube
‘How wide is the Danube?’

(550) Milyen magas az a fa?
what.kind tall that the tree
‘How tall is that tree?’

2.1.2.7. Relative pronouns
Hungarian has a set of special relative pronouns. They are derived from the interrogative pronouns through compounding with a- (historically az),
e.g., aki ‘who’, ami ‘which’, ahol ‘where’, and ahány ‘as much’. The pronoun aki is used in reference to humans. The pronoun amely (or, in colloquial usage, amelyik or ami) is used in reference to countable and/or specific nonhumans. The pronoun ami is used in reference to all other nonhumans. All relative pronouns can be used in both restrictive and nonrestrictive relative clauses, which are differentiated by other means (see section 1.1.2.3.2). Each relative pronoun can be marked for plural and for case, and can be modified by a postposition in exactly the same fashion as the interrogative pronoun from which it is derived.

(551) A férfi, aki-vel táncol-t-am, svéd.
the man REL.who-INS dance-PAST-INDEF.1SG Swedish
'The man who I danced with is Swedish.'

(552) A könyv-ek, ami-k-et ve-tt-él,
the book-PL REL.what-PL-ACC buy-PAST-INDEF.2SG
el-tün-t-ek.
PFX-disappear-PAST-INDEF.3PL
'The books that you bought have disappeared.'

(553) Amikor tíz év-es vol-t-ám, Rómá-ban
REL.when ten year-ADJDER be-PAST-1SG Rome-INE
él-t-ünk.
live-PAST-INDEF.1PL
'When I was ten years old we lived in Rome.'

(554) Az utca, ahol lak-unk, egy park mellett van.
the street REL.where live-INDEF.1PL a park near be.3SG
'The street where we live is near a park.'

(555) A kutya, amely után szalad-t-am,
the dog REL.what after run-PAST-INDEF.1SG
Máté-é.
Matthew-POS
'The dog I was running after is Matthew's.'

2.1.3. Verb morphology
2.1.3.1. Voice
2.1.3.1.1. Passive
The Hungarian passive is a very restricted construction. Its status as a separate construction is questioned in traditional Hungarian descriptive grammars (e.g., Tompa 1961, Rácz 1968), which view it as a participial...
Page 283

construction involving the copula and expressing a state adverbial. Without wanting to take a stand on whether it is truly passive or adverbial, I will refer to this construction in the following discussion as ‘the passive construction’. The discussion of several features of the passive below draws heavily on Alberti (1996).

In the passive construction the lexical verb is in the adverbial participial (or ‘simple converb’) form (bearing the suffix -va/ve), and tense, person and number are marked on the copula.

2.1.3.1.1. Direct object of the active as subject of passive

Some, but by no means all, transitive verbs can be passivized in Hungarian, with the accusative direct object of the active becoming the nominative subject of the passive.

(556) A ház ki van ad-va külföldi-ek-nek.
    the house out be.3SG give-SCVB foreigner-PL-DAT
    ‘The house is rented out to foreigners.’

(557) Egy autó meg vol-t vé-ve.
    a car PFX be-PAST.3SG buy-SCVB
    ‘A car was bought.’

(558) A kincs el lesz ás-va.
    the treasure PFX be.FUT.3SG dig-SCVB
    ‘The treasure will be buried.’

(559) *Péter messzi-ről meg vol-t lát-va.
    Peter far-DEL PFX be-PAST.3SG see-SCVB
    ‘Peter was seen from afar.’

According to Alberti (1996), the verb must be telic in order for the passive construction to be grammatical. Robert Hetzron (personal communication, 1996) notes that the passive construction needs to denote a change of state (as in (556) and (557) above) to be grammatical in Hungarian; hence the ungrammaticality of (559).

2.1.3.1.3. Subject of active as subject of passive

In some cases the subject of an intransitive verb becomes the subject of the passive: the subject of the active construction in (560) and of the passive one in (561) is the same.

(560) Enikő meg-hatód-ott a
    Enikő PFX-be.touched-PAST.INDEF.3SG the
    kedvesség-ünk-től.
    kindness-POSS.1PL-ABL
    ‘Enikő was touched by our kindness.’

(561) Enikő meg-hatód-ott a
    Enikő PFX-be.touched-PAST.INDEF.3SG the
    kedvesség-ünk-től.
    kindness-POSS.1PL-ABL
    ‘Enikő was touched by our kindness.’
Enikő meg volt hátradva a
Enikő PFX be-PAST.3SG be.touched-SCVB the
ekedvesség-ünk-től.
kindness-POSS.1PL-ABL
‘Enikő was touched by our kindness.’

According to Alberti (1996), it is only unaccusative verbs, i.e., verbs with patient arguments, that can undergo passivization of this type in Hungarian.

Le volt hullva egy levél.
down be-PAST.3SG fall-SCVB a leaf
‘There was a leaf fallen down.’

Attila be van rúgva.
Attila in be.3SG get.drunken-SCVB
‘Attila is drunk.’

Not all intransitive verbs can, however, undergo such a change: unergative verbs, for instance, cannot.

Énekelve volt.
sing-SCVB be-PAST.3SG
‘There was sung.’

2.1.3.1.2. Means of decreasing valency
In Hungarian, the means of decreasing valency of a verb are derivational, very often operating not to derive verbs from other verbs, but to derive them from adjectives or nouns in ways that contrast with processes deriving verbs with a higher number of arguments:

e.g. szép ‘beautiful’ → szépül ‘become beautiful’
       → szépít ‘make something/somebody beautiful’.

2.1.3.1.2.1. Nonagentive verbs Verbs that do not express the agent are often derived from verbs that do by means of the derivational suffix -ódik/ődik: húz ‘pull’ → húzódik ‘stretch, drag on’, ver ‘beat’ → verődik ‘beat against’, vonz ‘attract’ → vonzódik ‘be drawn/attracted’, tud ‘know’ → kitudódik ‘become known’.

Az ügy szeptember óta húzódik.
the matter September since stretch-INDEF.3SG
‘The matter has been dragging on since September.’

Ágnes a magas férfiak-hoz vonzódik.
Agnes the tall man-PL-ALL be.attracted-INDEF.3SG
‘Agnes is attracted to tall men.’
Several reflexive verbs are derived from agentive verbs with the suffixes -kodik/kedik/ködik and -kozik/kezik/közik: mos 'wash' → mosakodik 'wash oneself', fésül 'comb' → fésülkedik 'comb oneself', ruház 'clothe' → ruház-kodik 'clothe oneself'; borotvál 'shave v.t.' → borotválkozik 'shave oneself, törül 'wipe' → törülközik 'wipe oneself (with towel)', zár 'lock' → zárközik 'lock oneself in'. Other verbs not expressing the agent are also derived with these suffixes, e.g., emel 'lift' → emelkedik 'ascend', and vár 'wait for' → várakozik 'wait around'.

Nonagentive verbs are very often derived from adjectives with the derivational suffix -ul/ül: kék 'blue' → kékül 'turn/become blue', barna 'brown' → barnul 'turn/become brown', buta 'stupid' → butul 'become stupid', vak 'blind' → vakul 'become blind'. The suffix -odik/edik/ödik often serves the same function, deriving verbs not expressing the agent from adjectives: fekete 'black' → feketedik 'turn/become black', piros 'red' → pirosodik 'turn/become red', erős 'strong' → erősödik 'become strong', széles 'wide' → széle-sedik 'become wide'. Verbs derived with these suffixes usually have a counterpart expressing an agent, derived from the base adjective with -it: barnít 'make brown', butít 'stupefy', feketít 'blacken', erősít 'strengthen', szélesít 'widen'.

A number of verbs not expressing the agent are derived with the non-productive suffix -ad/ed: ébred 'wake up', reped 'crack v.i.', hasad 'burst'. These verbs can have a counterpart expressing the agent, derived with -aszt/eszt, as in ébreszt 'awaken', repeszt 'crack v.t.', or with -it, as in hasít 'split v.t.' Some verbs are derived with the suffix -g/og/eg/ög from verbs expressing the agent: gőzöl 'steam v.i.' → gőzöl 'steam v.t.', füstöl 'smoke v.i.' → füstöl 'smoke v.t.'

Passive verbs can be derived with the suffix -atik/etik/tatik/tetik from agentive verbs in a process with limited productivity: ad 'give' → adatik 'be given', enged 'allow' → engedetik 'be allowed', néz 'look at' → nézetik 'be looked at'. In some instances, the verb root does not express the agent, e.g., forr 'boil v.i.' or fő 'cook v.i.', and it is the verb expressing the agent that is derived from it, e.g., forral 'boil v.t.' and főz 'cook v.t.' 2.1.3.1.2.2. Verbs not specifying direct object: Several verbs have the same form in both a transitive and an absolute transitive meaning: eszik 'eat v.i.' and 'eat v.t.', iszik 'drink v.i.' and 'drink v.t.', öl 'kill v.i.' and 'kill v.t.', fest 'paint v.i.' and 'paint v.t.', mos 'do laundry' and 'wash', rajzol 'make a drawing' and 'draw v.t.' These verbs, however, acquire an unambiguously transitive meaning if an appropriate prefix is attached to them: megeszik 'eat v.t.', megiszik 'drink v.t.', megöl 'kill v.t.', megfest or lefest 'paint v.t.', kimos 'wash (clothes)', lerajzol 'draw v.t.'
2.1.3.1.2.3. Reciprocal intransitive verbs

Several verbs have the same form when expressing both the subject and the direct object as the subject, and when expressing the direct object as the instrumental object: e.g., csókolózik ‘kiss’, ölelkezik ‘embrace’, randevúzik ‘rendezvous’, szeretkezik ‘make love’, vitatkozik ‘argue’, összeütközik ‘collide’, veszekszik ‘fight (verbally)’, verekzik ‘fight physically (not using a weapon)’, harcol ‘fight using a weapon’, háborúzik ‘war’, birkózik ‘wrestle’.

(567) Gábor és Anikó csókolóz-ik.
Gabriel and Anikó kiss-INDEF.3SG
‘Gabriel and Anikó are kissing.’

(568) Gábor Anikó-val csókolóz-ik.
Gabriel Anikó-INS kiss-INDEF.3SG
‘Gabriel is kissing Anikó.’

(569) János és Dénes verek-ik.
John and Dennis fight-INDEF.3SG
‘John and Dennis are fighting.’

(570) János Dénes-sel verek-ik.
John Dennis-INS fight-INDEF.3SG
‘John is fighting Dennis.’

2.1.3.1.3. Means of increasing valency

The main method of increasing valency in Hungarian is through the derivation of causative verbs from noncausatives by means of the derivational suffix -at/et/tat/tet, which derives causatives from intransitives, transitives, and ditransitives alike. (See also section 2.2.2.2.2.) It is important to note that the derivation of causatives from noncausatives is not a completely productive process in Hungarian.

A large group of transitive verbs with causative meaning are derived with the -ít suffix from adjectives: szép ‘beautiful’→szépít ‘make pretty, beautify’, buta ‘stupid’→butít ‘make stupid, stupefy’, kék ‘blue’→kékít ‘make blue’, gazdag ‘rich’→gazdáit ‘enrich’, apró ‘tiny’→aprit ‘cut up into small pieces’, etc. The causer is the subject of such verbs, and the causee, if it is expressed, is the direct object in the accusative.

(571) Margit szép-i-a szob-á-t.
Margaret make.pretty-DEF.3SG the room-ACC
‘Margaret is making the room pretty.’

(572) A sok tévénéz-és butít.
the much TV.watch-NML stupefy.INDEF.3SG
‘Watching a lot of TV is stupefying.’
2.1.3.1.3.1. Intransitives made causative

Intransitive verbs can be made causative with the suffix -at/et/tat/tet: ugrik 'jump'→ugrat 'make jump', legel 'graze'→legeltet 'make graze', alszik 'sleep'→(el)altat 'make sleep, anesthetize', fekszik 'lie'→(le)fektet 'put to bed', ázik 'soak v.i.'→(be)áztat 'soak v.t.', csikorog 'squeak, grind'→(meg)csikorgat 'make squeak, grind', pattog 'bounce v.i.'→pattogtat 'make bounce'.

The causer is the nominative subject of such verbs, while the causee is the direct object in the accusative.

(573) Az anya el-altat-t-a a gyerek-et.
    the mother PFX-sleep.CAUS-PAST-DEF.3SG the child-ACC
    'The mother made the child sleep.'

(574) András be-áztat-t-a az ing-é-t.
    Andrew PFX-soak.CAUS-PAST-DEF.3SG the shirt-POSS.3SG-ACC
    'Andrew soaked his shirt.'

(575) A fiú csikorgat-ja a fog-á-t.
    the boy squeak.CAUS-DEF.3SG the tooth-POSS.3SG-ACC
    'The boy is grinding his teeth.'

2.1.3.1.3.1.2. Transitives made causative

Transitives are made causative with the same -at/et/tat/tet suffix: vág 'cut'→vágat 'make cut', ír 'write'→írat 'make write', olvas 'read'→olvastat 'make read', szerel 'repair'→szereltet 'make repair'.

The causer of such causative verbs is the subject, the direct object in the accusative is the theme, and the causee is in the instrumental. The causee can usually be omitted with no resulting ambiguity.

(576) Pál le-vágat-t-a a haj-á-t
    Paul PFX-cut.CAUS-PAST-DEF.3SG the hair-POSS.3SG-ACC
    the barber-INS
    'Paul had his hair cut by the barber.'

(577) Pál le-vágat-ta a haj-á-t.
    Paul PFX-cut.CAUS-PAST-DEF.3SG the hair-POSS.3SG-ACC
    'Paul had a haircut.'
The teacher makes the children write a test. ('gives a test')

The teacher is giving a test.

Ditransitives made causative Ditransitives are made causatives in the same way as other transitives: ad 'give'→adat 'make give', küld 'send'→küldet 'make send', vesz 'buy'→vetet 'make buy'. The causer of such causative verbs is the subject, the direct object in the accusative is the theme, the causee is in the instrumental, and the indirect object is in the dative. The causee can usually be omitted with no resulting ambiguity.

Thomas makes the secretary make a coffee for him.

Martin made Nora send a check to Eve.

For a discussion of reflexive and reciprocal verbs, see sections 2.1.3.1.2.1 and 2.1.3.1.2.3, respectively.
2.1.3.2. Tense

Tense is a category of the finite verb in Hungarian.

2.1.3.2.1. Tenses distinguished formally

Hungarian distinguishes between three tenses: present, past, and future. Present tense verb-forms are unmarked, past tense forms bear the past tense marker -t/tt, and the future tense is expressed by the auxiliary verb fog (except for the verb ‘be’, which has synthetic future forms in all persons and numbers). Hungarian has no formally distinguished universal tense: actions characteristic of all time are expressed with the present tense.

(584) A nap kelet-en kel fel.
the sun east-SUP rise.INDEF.3SG up
‘The sun rises in the east.’

2.1.3.2.1.2. Present

Present tense can be expressed in all three Hungarian moods, the indicative, the conditional, and the imperative.

In the indicative mood the present tense has no marker; the personal suffixes are attached directly to the verb stem.

The present tense forms of the verb ‘be’ are the following:

1SG vagyok 1PL vagyunk
2SG vagy 2PL vagyok
3SG van 3PL vannak

In the third person the verb ‘be’ has negative forms: nincs(en) ‘is not’, nincsenek ‘3PL are not’, sincs(en) ‘is not either’, and sincsenek ‘3PL are not either’.

The present tense personal suffixes of other verbs are illustrated with the paradigms of the verbs ad ‘give’, kér ‘want, ask for’, tör ‘break’, iszik ‘eat’, and szökik ‘escape’. (For a discussion of the second person singular -ol/el suffix, as in iszol and eszel, see below.)

Indefinite conjugation

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>-ik-less verbs</th>
<th>-ik verbs</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1SG adok, kérek, török</td>
<td>iszom, eszem, szököm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2SG adsz, kérsz, törsz</td>
<td>iszol, eszel, szöksh</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3SG ad, kér, tör</td>
<td>iszik, eszik, szökik</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1PL adunk, kérünk, törünk</td>
<td>(same as -ik-less verbs)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2PL adtok, kétek, törtök</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3PL adnak, kémek, törnek</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

1SG subject with second person object: adlak, kérlek, törlek
Definite conjugation:

1SG  adom, kérem, töröm
2SG  adod, kéred, töröd
3SG  adják, kérjük, törjük
1PL  adjátok, kérjtek, törjtek
2PL  adjátok, kérjtek, törjtek
3PL  adják, kérjük, törjük

In the indefinite conjugation first person singular forms -ik verbs, i.e., verbs whose present tense third person singular indefinite forms receive the -ik suffix, use what is otherwise the definite suffix in Standard Hungarian. The use of the indefinite -ok/ek/ök suffix for -ik verbs (e.g., eszek ‘I eat’, íszok ‘I drink’, and szökök ‘I escape’) is very common in colloquial Hungarian, although speakers striving to use what is considered ‘good Hungarian’ use the traditional m-final endings (Kontra 1995:64). Verbs whose stem ends in two consonants (except for geminates) or in a long vowel (except for á and é) and -t insert a linking vowel before the second person singular and plural and before the third person plural suffixes. The relevant forms for tanít ‘teach’, segít ‘help’, and fűt ‘heat’ are given below:

Indefinite conjugation

1SG  tanítok, segítek, fűtök
2SG  tanítasz, segítesz, fűtesz
3SG  tanít, segíts, fűt
1PL  tanítunk, segítenek, fűtünk
2PL  tanítotok, segítenek, fűtök
3PL  tanítanak, segítenek, fűtenek

1SG subject with second person object  tanítalak, segítelek, fűtelek

Verbs whose stem ends in -s, -sz, or -z, in the second person singular indefinite receive -ol/el/öl instead of the -sz suffix; see forms of iszik and eszik above, and e.g., olvasol ‘you (SG) read’, viszol ‘you (SG) carry’, and főzol ‘you (SG) cook’. In the definite conjugation the stem-final sibilants of these verbs completely assimilate all suffix-initial js (in the back vowel third person singular and all plural suffixes, and in the front vowel first person plural suffixes). The definite forms of the verbs olvas ‘read’, visz ‘carry’, and főz ‘cook’ are given below as illustrations:

Definite conjugation:

1SG  olvasom, viszem, főzöm
2SG  olvasod, viszéd, főzöd
3SG  olvassa, viszi, főzi
1PL  olvassuk, visszük, főzzük
2PL  olvassátok, viszitek, főzitek
3PL  olvassák, viszik, főzik
In non-Standard Hungarian verbs ending in -t undergo assimilations identical to those of imperative forms when j-initial suffixes are attached to them, e.g., lássuk ‘we see (DEF)’ and válasszuk ‘we choose (DEF)’ instead of the Standard látjuk and választjuk, respectively. Such forms are, however, very heavily stigmatized as uneducated (Kontra 1995:64, Váradi and Kontra 1995). (For details about the assimilations in imperative forms, see section 2.1.3.4.3.)

The verb megy ‘go’ has irregular forms in the second person singular and plural and in the third person plural: mész ‘you (SG) go’, mentek ‘you (PL) go’, and mennek ‘they go’.

The verbs ró ‘carve (archaic)’, lő ‘shoot’, sző ‘weave’, nő ‘grow’, fő ‘cook’, and rí ‘weep’ insert an epenthetic -v- before suffixes beginning with a vowel. In those same cases the verb jön ‘come’ takes an -n-less stem and inserts an epenthetic -v- as well. (Note that jön is slightly irregular in other forms as well.) The forms of ró, lő, and jön are given below.

### Indefinite conjugation

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1SG</th>
<th>2SG</th>
<th>3SG</th>
<th>1PL</th>
<th>2PL</th>
<th>3PL</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>rovok, lövök, jövök</td>
<td>rósz, lősz, jóssz</td>
<td>ró, lő, jön</td>
<td>rovünk, lövünk, jövünk</td>
<td>rótok, lőtok, jöttök</td>
<td>rónak, lőnek, jönnek</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Subject with second person object

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1SG</th>
<th>2SG</th>
<th>3SG</th>
<th>1PL</th>
<th>2PL</th>
<th>3PL</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>rovom, lövöm</td>
<td>rovod, lövöd</td>
<td>rója, lóvi</td>
<td>rójuk, lőjük</td>
<td>rójátok, lövitek</td>
<td>róják, lővik</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

In the indicative mood the present tense indicates that the action:

(i) is taking place at the moment of speaking (585)
(ii) is taking place at about this time but not necessarily at the moment of speaking (586)
(iii) takes place habitually, always or often (587)
(iv) began in the past and still continues (588)
(v) has not happened for some time and is not expected to happen again (589)
(vi) will take place in the future (590)–(592)
(vii) took place in the past—only in narratives, relating historical biographies etc. (593).
Page 292

The interpretation of the present tense verb-form is affected by adverbials occurring in the sentence (cf. (589) and (590)) or by the general context (cf. (591) and (592)).

(585) Hova megyünk?
where.to go-INDEF.1PL
‘Where are we going?’

(586) Franciául tanulok.
French-ESS learn-INDEF.1SG
‘I’m learning French.’

(587) Veronika gyalog jár iskolába.
Veronica on.foot go.INDEF.3SG school-ILL
‘Veronica always walks to school.’

Andrea 1989 since live-INDEF.3SG Budapest-SUP
‘Andrea has been living in Budapest since 1989.’

(589) Attila már egy év-e nem dohányzik.
Attilla already one year-POSS.3SG not smoke-INDEF.3SG
‘Attilla hasn’t been smoking for a year now.’

(590) Jóvő kedd-en érkezik Londonba.
next Tuesday-SUP arrive-INDEF.1PL London-ILL
‘We’ll arrive in London next Tuesday.’

(591) Question
Most mit fogsz csinálni?
now what-ACC FUT-INDEF.2SG do-INF
‘What are you going to do now?’

Answer
Megveszem ez a könyvet.
PFX-buy-DEF.1SG this-ACC the book-ACC
‘I’m going to buy this book.’

(592) Orvos leszek, betegeket gyógyítok és
doctor be.FUT-1SG sick-PL-ACC cure-INDEF.1SG and
elet-eket mentek.
life-PL-ACC save-INDEF.1SG
‘I’ll be a doctor, I’ll cure the sick and save lives.’
Később Bartók Amerikába megy, és 1945-ben ott hal meg. ‘Later Bartók goes to America and that is where he dies in 1945.’

Present conditional verb-forms refer to the present or the future, in absolute or relative terms. (For the formation of the conditional verb-forms see section 2.1.3.4.2 below.)

Ha nem le-nné-k beteg, el-men-né-k mozi-ba. ‘If I weren’t sick, I’d go to the movies.’

Mi le-nne, ha nem men-né-nk mozi-ba? ‘What would happen if we didn’t go to the movies?’

Az-t mond-t-ad, hogy el-men-né-1 mozi-ba. ‘You said that you would go to the movies.’

Az-t mond-od, hogy el-men-né-1 mozi-ba? ‘Are you saying that you would go to the movies?’

Imperative forms do not have tense distinctions in Hungarian. In their meaning they can refer only to the future. (For the formation of imperative verb-forms see section 2.1.3.4.3 below.)

Vegy-él nek-em fagylalt-ot! ‘Buy me some ice cream!’
In their subjunctive use, imperative forms can have a relative past, present, or future tense meaning.

(600) Az-t mond-t-ad, hogy vegy-ek
that-ACC say-PAST-DEF.2SG that buy.IMP-INDEF.1SG
fagylalt-ot.
ice.cream-ACC
‘You told me to buy some ice-cream.’

(601) Az-t mond-od, hogy vegy-ek nek-ed
that-ACC say-DEF.2SG that buy.IMP-INDEF.1SG DAT-2SG
fagylalt-ot?
ice.cream-ACC
‘Are you telling me to buy you some ice-cream?’

(602) Az-t fog-od mond-ani, hogy vegy-ek
that-ACC FUT-DEF.2SG say-INF that buy.IMP-1SG
fagylalt-ot.
ice.cream-ACC
‘You’ll tell me to buy some ice-cream.’

2.1.3.2.1.3. Past

The past tense can be expressed in the indicative and the conditional moods in Hungarian. In the indicative mood the past tense is marked by the -t/tt past tense suffix which is attached to the verb stem before personal suffixes. The past tense paradigms are illustrated by the forms of the verbs vár ‘wait, expect’, kér ‘want, ask for’, tart ‘keep’ and fest ‘paint’ below.

Indefinite conjugation

1SG vártam, kértem, tartottam, festettem
2SG várta, kért, tartotta, festette
3SG várta, kért, tartotta, festette
1PL vártek, kértek, tartottak, festettek
2PL várta, kért, tartottak, festettek
3PL vártak, kértek, tartottak, festettek

Definite conjugation

1SG vártam, kértem, tartottam, festettem
2SG várta, kért, tartott, festett
3SG várta, kért, tartott, festett
1PL vártek, kértek, tartottak, festettek
2PL várta, kért, tartottak, festettek
3PL vártak, kértek, tartottak, festettek
The choice between the short (-t) suffix and the long (-tt) suffix is determined in the following way. Verbs ending in a vowel and -l, -r, -n, -ny, -j, or -ly, or in a geminate of any of these consonants, take the short past tense suffix in all of their forms: for instance, the first person singular forms of csinál ‘do’, köszön ‘thank’, folyik ‘flow’ are csináltam, köszöntem, and folytam, respectively. Vowel-deleting stems ending in other consonants take the long past tense suffix (attached to the shortened stem) in the third person singular indefinite form and the short past tense suffix in all other past forms: e.g., the first and third person singular indefinite forms of the verbs érez ‘feel’, inog ‘wobble, sway’ and mosolyog ‘smile’ are éreztem, inogtam, and mosolyogtam, but érzett, ingott, and mosolyogott, respectively.

Verbs ending in a consonant cluster (with some exceptions, such as küld ‘send’, mond ‘say’, zeng ‘resound’, and mereng ‘brood over’), or in -it and the verb bocsát ‘admit’, as well as monosyllabic verbs ending in -t (except lát), take the long past tense suffix in all forms (see paradigms for tart and fest above). All other verbs take the long past tense suffix in the third person singular indefinite form and the short one in all other forms. So, for instance, the first and third person singular indefinite forms for ad ‘give’, dolgozik ‘work’, szeret ‘like, love’ and lép ‘step’ are adtam, dolgoztam, szerettem, léptem, but adott, dolgozott, szeretett, and lépett, respectively.

The past tense stem of ‘be’ is vol- (voltam ‘I was’, voltál ‘you (SG) were’ etc.). Irregular verbs of the vesz-type take an allomorph ending in the stem vowel and employ the long past tense suffix: e.g., the first person singular forms of vesz ‘take’, visz ‘carry’, iszik ‘drink’ and eszik ‘eat’ are vettem, vittem, ittam, and ettem, respectively. (In the third person singular indefinite forms eszik and iszik have the forms evett and ivott.) The -ik verbs that take stems ending in -d in the infinitive take the -d stems in past tense forms as well: the first person singular forms of alszik ‘sleep’, fekszik ‘lie’, nyugszik ‘calm’, and cselekszik ‘act’ are aludtam, feküdtem, nyugodtam, cselekedtem, respectively. Some of these, like nyugszik and cselekszik, take the long past tense suffix in third person singular indefinite forms (nyugodott, cselekedett), while others, like alszik and fekszik, take the short past tense suffix in all forms. The past tense in Hungarian refers to an action which:

(i) took place before the moment of speaking (603)–(604)
(ii) started in the past and was completed before the moment of speaking (605)
(iii) has not taken place for some time but is expected to happen (606) (also cf. (589) above)
(iv) took place often or habitually in the past (607).
Márta telefonál-t.
‘Martha called.’

Maria három év-ig lak-ott eb-ben a
ház-ban.
‘Maria lived in this house for three years.’

Ezer év-e nem lát-t-alak!
‘I haven't seen you for ages!’

Május óta nem ve-tt-em könyv-ét.
‘I haven't bought any books since May.’

Pál mindig gyalog jár-t iskolá-ba.
‘Paul always walked to school.’

In the conditional mood, past conditional forms refer to past unfulfilled actions.

Ha nem le-tt-em volna beteg, el-men-t-em
volna mozi-ba.
‘If I hadn’t been sick, I would have gone to the movies.’

2.1.3.2.1.3.1. Subdivision of past. Historically, Hungarian had four past tenses, of which only one survives in modern Hungarian. The short summary of the historical past tenses below is based on Bárczi et al. (1967:505–506).

The historical ‘relating past tense’ involved an -á/é past tense marker (e.g., várék 'I waited', várál 'you waited') and was used for the relation of past events.

A continuous past tense, expressed with the present tense verb-form and the auxiliary vala (e.g., várok vala 'I waited', vársz vala 'you waited'), was used to refer to incomplete past actions, providing background information about the actions referred to by the relating past tense.

The completive past tense contained the -t/tt past tense marker (e.g., vártam 'I waited', vártál 'you waited') and was used to refer to past actions with result in the present or with which the speaker felt an emotional connectedness.
The pluperfect past tense, consisting of the completive -t/tt past tense-marked verb and the auxiliary *vala* (e.g., *vártam vala* ‘I had waited, *vártál vala* you had waited’), was used to refer to a past action that occurred earlier than actions referred to with the other past tenses.

None of these past tenses, except for what used to be the completive and is now the only past tense, are now used in modern Standard Hungarian.

In modern Hungarian, remoteness of past can only be indicated by adverbials.

### 2.1.3.2.1.4. Future

Future tense is marked only in the indicative mood in Hungarian. It refers to an action that will take place after the moment of speaking.

Note that future actions can also be referred to with the present tense in Hungarian; see section 2.1.3.2.1.2 above.

The use of the present tense for future time reference is more common with perfective than with imperfective verb-forms.

Only the verb ‘be’ has synthetic future forms; all other forms are expressed with the auxiliary verb *fog* marked for person, number, and definiteness, while the lexical verb is in the infinitive not marked for person.

#### Future forms of ‘be’

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Person/Number</th>
<th>Form</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1SG</td>
<td>leszek</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2SG</td>
<td>leszel</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3SG</td>
<td>lesz</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1PL</td>
<td>leszünk</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2PL</td>
<td>leszek</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3PL</td>
<td>lesznek</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### Forms of auxiliary ‘fog’

**Indefinite conjugation**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Person/Number</th>
<th>Form</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1SG</td>
<td>fogok</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2SG</td>
<td>fogsz</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3SG</td>
<td>fog</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1PL</td>
<td>fogunk</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2PL</td>
<td>fogtok</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3PL</td>
<td>fognak</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1SG subject with second person object</th>
<th>Foglak</th>
</tr>
</thead>
</table>


Definite conjugation

1SG fogom
2SG fogod
3SG fogja
1PL fogjuk
2PL fogjátok
3PL fogják

(609) Hat után otthon lesz-ek.
   six after at.home be.FUT-1SG
   ‘I’ll be home after six.’

(610) Meg fog-om kérdez-ni er-ről Krisztiná-t.
   PFX FUT-DEF.1SG ask-INF this-DEL Christina-ACC
   ‘I’ll ask Christina about this.’

Remote future can only be indicated with adverbials in Hungarian.

2.1.3.2.3. Absoluteness and relativeness of the tenses

The tenses in Hungarian are absolute or relative depending on the context. In indirect speech, subordinate clauses retain the tenses they would have in direct speech and are interpreted in relation to the main clause.

(611) Eva az-t mond-t-a, hogy beszél
   Eve that-ACC say-PAST-DEF.3SG that speak.INDEF.3SG
   angol-ul.
   English-ESS
   ‘Eve said that she spoke English.’

(612) Péter az-t mond-t-a, hogy fáradt vol-t.
   Peter that-ACC say-PAST-DEF.3SG that tired be-PAST.3SG
   ‘Peter said that he had been tired.’

(613) Györgyi az-t mond-t-a, hogy itt lesz.
   Georgina that-ACC say-PAST-DEF.3SG that here be.FUT.3SG
   ‘Georgina said that she would be here.’

(614) Györgyi az-t fog-ja mond-ani, hogy fáradt
   Georgina that-ACC FUT-DEF.3SG say-INF that tired
   be-PAST.3SG
   ‘Georgina will say that she was tired.’
Aspect is a grammatical category that has not yet been fully and comprehensively dealt with in the linguistic literature of Hungarian, descriptive or theoretical. The present account aims at summarizing the findings to date, primarily on the basis of Tompa (1961), Hetzron (1982), Kiefer (1982a), and E.Kiss (1987). Aspect is expressed primarily through the use and syntactic positioning of prefixes in Hungarian. (For information about prefixes see section 2.1.3.6.12.)

2.1.3.3. Aspect distinctions as different ways of viewing the duration of a situation

The main markers of aspect in Hungarian are prefixes and their syntactic positions in the sentence. (For a discussion of prefixes see section 2.1.3.6.12.) In addition, several aspectual properties such as continuity, iterativity, and ingressivity, can be expressed by derivational means in the verb. Prefixes modify the aspectual properties of the verbs they occur with, but the way in which that modification works depends to a great extent on the aspectual properties of the verbs themselves. There are no formal means of marking aspect in Hungarian that apply regularly to all verbs.

2.1.3.3.2. Formal marking of aspect

2.1.3.3.2.1. Perfective aspect

Stative verbs express perfectivity in their past tense forms.

(615) Kristóf tud-t-a a válasz-t.
Christopher know-PAST-DEF.3SG the answer-ACC
‘Christopher knew the answer.’

(616) Mihály szeret-t-e Mártá-t.
Michael love-PAST-DEF.3SG Martha-ACC
‘Michael loved Martha.’

(617) Anitá örül-t az ajándék-nak.
Anitá be.happy-PAST.INDEF.3SG the present-DAT
‘Anitá was very happy about the present.’

Perfectivity in a construction involving a prefix can always be expressed by placing a prefix immediately before the verb in a neutral sentence, and immediately after it in a sentence containing a focussed constituent or a negative particle. All preverbal prefixes express perfectivity in these positions. (For a somewhat different, although not altogether...
Page 300

contradictory, account of the aspectual meaning of such sentences, see Hetzron (1982), where they are seen as expressing factual aspect, as opposed to the descriptive—in other approaches, progressive—aspect.)

(618) József ki-men-t a terem-ből.
Joseph out-go-PAST.INDEF.3SG the classroom-ELA
‘Joseph went out of the classroom.’

(619) Andrea kék-re fest-ett-e a kapu-t.
Andrea blue-SUB paint-PAST-DEF.3SG the gate-ACC
‘Andrea painted the gate blue.’

(620) Károly el-beszélget-t-e Marta-VAL az idő-t.
Charles away-talk-PAST.3SG Martha-INS the time-ACC
‘Charles spent his time talking to Martha.’

(621) A vállalat csőd-be men-t.
the company bankruptcy-ILL go-PAST.INDEF.3SG
‘The company went bankrupt.’

In verbs that do not have a prefix, perfectivity is often expressed with the preverbal prefixes meg (which has no primary adverbial meaning, only an aspectual one) and el ‘away’: ír ‘write’—megír ‘write completely’, olvas ‘read’—elolvas ‘read completely’, énekel ‘sing’—élénekel ‘sing completely’, csinál ‘do’—megcsinál ‘complete, do completely’, főz ‘cook’—megfőz ‘cook completely’, számol ‘count’—megszámol ‘count up’, iszik ‘drink’—megiszik ‘drink completely’, eszik ‘eat’—megeszik ‘eat completely’.

(622) El-olvas-t-ad a könyv-et?
PFX-read-PAST-DEF.2SG the book-ACC
‘Have you finished reading the book?’

(623) Meg-ír-t-ad a level-et?
PFX-write-PAST-DEF.2SG the letter-ACC
‘Have you written the letter?’

(624) Pál meg-csinál-t-a a lecké-jé-t.
Paul PFX-do-PAST-DEF.3SG the homework-POSS.3SG-ACC
‘Paul did his homework.’

Some verbs occur only with prefixes: the verb ‘die’ has to have either a preverbal prefix, as in meghal ‘die’, or an argumental preverb, as in hős halált hal ‘die a heroic death’. (For a discussion of argumental preverbs see section 2.1.3.6.12.)

(625) Péter nem hal-t meg.
Peter not die-PAST.INDEF.3SG PFX
‘Peter didn’t die.’
A nagyapá-m hős-i halál-t
die-PAST.INDEF.3SG
‘My grandfather died a heroic death.’

2.1.3.3.2.1.2. Imperfective aspect

The imperfective aspect as such cannot be expressed formally in Hungarian, though various imperfective categories—habitual, progressive, and iterative aspect—can be.

2.1.3.3.2.1.3. Habitual aspect

Habitual aspect is indicated by the auxiliary szokott, which is formally a past tense verb-form, but which refers only to the present, expressing present habitual actions in Standard Hungarian.

Nem szok-t-am tévé-t néz-ni.
‘I don’t watch TV usually.’

Gyalog szok-t-ál jár-ni az egyetem-re?
‘Do you walk to the university?’

Miklós korán szok-ott fel-kel-ni.
‘Nicholas gets up early.’

Past habitual actions can be referred to with past tense verb-forms, past tense adverbs, and adverbs of frequency such as mindig ‘always’, sokat ‘a lot’, and gyakran ‘often’. The past tense adverbs régen and régebben, both meaning ‘earlier’, indicate that the action no longer happens, much like the auxiliary used to in English.

Régebb-en mindig gyalog jár-t-am az
‘I always used to walk to the university.’

Péter régen sok-at dohányz-ott.
‘Peter used to smoke a lot.’
Page 302

2.1.3.2.1.5. **Progressive aspect** In verbal constructions containing prefixes, the progressive aspect is expressed by placing the prefix immediately after the verb and assigning primary stress (marked with ' below) to the verb, the prefix, and any phrase after it in the same clause. (With a different stress pattern, i.e., with primary stress on the preverbal constituent and secondary stress on the other constituents in the main clause, these sentences would be interpreted as involving a focussing of the preverbal constituent, e.g., (633) would mean ‘It was Irene who went out the gate when I arrived.’)

Progressive sentences can also involve the adverb épp(en) ‘just’, as in (636) below.

(633) Irén 'men-t 'ki a 'kapu-n, amikor
    Irene go-PAST.INDEF.3SG out the gate-SUP REL when
    meg-érkez-t-em.
    PFX-arrive-PAST-INDEF.1SG

‘Irene was going out the gate when I arrived.’

(634) Ferenc száll-t 'le a 'busz-ról, amikor
    Frank get-PAST.INDEF.3SG down the bus-DEL REL when
    meg-lát-t-am.
    PFX-see-PAST-1SG

‘Frank was getting off the bus when I noticed him.’

Verbs that take up prefixes only to express perfectivity occur by themselves to express the progressive.

(635) 'Olvas-t-am a 'könyv-et, amikor
    read-PAST-DEF.1SG the book-ACC REL when
    meg-szólal-t a csengő.
    PFX-ring-PAST.INDEF.3SG the bell

‘I was reading the book when the doorbell rang.’

(636) A kutya éppen 'ev-ett, amikor a macska
    the dog just eat-PAST.INDEF.3SG REL when the cat
    be-jö-tt.
    in-come-PAST.INDEF.3SG

‘The dog was just eating when the cat came in.’
Page 303

Verbs with a durative meaning (see section 2.1.3.3.2.1.11) occur by themselves to express the progressive.

2.1.3.3.2.1.6. Ingressive aspect Derivational suffixes expressing the ingressive aspect are the unproductive suffixes -
odik/edik/ödik: felháborít ‘make indignant’—felháborodik ‘become indignant’.
Ingressive aspect can be marked on many stative verbs with the prefixes meg, el, and sometimes fel: tud ‘know’—megtud ‘find out, get to know’, lát ‘see’—meglát ‘notice’, szeret ‘like, love’—megszeret ‘get to like, love’, haragszik ‘be angry’—megharagszik ‘become angry’, örül ‘be happy’—megörül ‘become happy’, hallgat ‘be quiet, listen’—elhallgat ‘become quiet, shut up’, alszik ‘sleep’—elalszik ‘fall asleep’, zúg ‘roar, drone’—felzúg ‘start to roar, drone’.
Other stative verbs, such as van ‘be’, létezik ‘exist’, and tartalmaz ‘consist’, cannot be combined with prefixes.

(637) Rita nagyon meg-haragud-ott rá-nk.
Rita very PFX-be.angry-PAST.INDEF.3SG SUB-1PL
‘Rita got very angry with us.’
(638) A kisfiú gyors-an el-alud-t.
the little.boy quick-MOE PFX-sleep-PAST.INDEF.3SG
‘The little boy fell asleep quickly.’
The ingressive aspect can be indicated for nonstative verbs with the help of the verb (el)kezd ‘begin, start’.

(639) Mária énekel-ni kezd-ett.
Maria sing-INF start-PAST.INDEF.3SG
‘Maria started to sing.’


(640) A gyerek-ek fénykép-ek-et nézeget-t-ek.
the child-PL photo-PL-ACC look.ITER-PAST-DEF.3PL
‘The children were looking at photos.’
(641) János hiába szólítgat-t-a Pál-t, az nem
John in.vain call.ITER-PAST-DEF.3SG Paul-ACC that not
wake-PAST.INDEF.3SG up
‘John was calling Paul in vain, and he didn’t wake up.’
(It is important to note that in some cases the -gat/get/ogat/eget/öget suffix

< previous page page_303 next page >
changes the meaning of the verb it is derived from: e.g., mos ‘wash’—mosogat ‘do dishes’, lát ‘see’—látogat ‘visit’, kér ‘ask for’—kéreget ‘beg’ (Robert Hetzron, personal communication, 1996.)

Other common but unproductive derivational suffixes expressing iterativity are -ong/eng/öng, as in hajlik ‘bend’—hajlong ‘bow repeatedly’, jaj ‘oh! (interjection)’—jajong ‘wail, lament’; and -oz(ik)/ez(ik)/öz(ik), as in kiált ‘call out, cry’—kiáltozik ‘call out, shout repeatedly’, sóhajt ‘sigh’—sóhajtozik ‘sigh repeatedly’.

(642) Miért sóhajtoz-ol?
    why sigh.ITER-INDEF.2SG
    ‘Why are you sighing?’

A rarer and rather unproductive iterative suffix is -kod/ked/köd, which occurs on some verbs ending in -p: e.g., csap ‘strike’—csapkod ‘strike repeatedly’, lép ‘step’—lépked ‘step repeatedly’, and repül ‘fly’—röpkőd ‘fly around’.

(643) A szobá-ban egy madár röpkőd-ött.
     the room-INE a bird fly.ITER-PAST.INDEF.3SG
     ‘A bird was flying around in the room.’


(644) Évi-ke egész nap csak szaladgál a szobá-ban.
     Eve-DIM whole day just run.ITER.INDEF.3SG the room-INE
     ‘Little Eve just runs around the room all day.’

(645) Ne lökdös-s!
     not push.ITER-IMP.INDEF.2SG
     ‘Stop pushing me!’

Iterativity can also be expressed by doubling of the preverbal prefix.

(646) Anna ki-ki-néz-ett az utcá-ra.
     Anna out-out-look-PAST.INDEF.3SG the street-SUB
     ‘Every now and then Anna looked out in the street.’

(647) Rita el-el-men-t a nagynén-jé-hez
     Rita away-away-go-PAST.INDEF.3SG the aunt-POSS.3SG-ALL
     a kórház-ba.
     the hospital-ILL
     ‘Rita visited her aunt in the hospital every now and then.’

Such doubled prefixes are hyphenated in orthography: ki-kinéz ‘look out repeatedly’.

< previous page page_304 next page >
2.1.3.3.2.1.9. **Semelfactive aspect**

Semelfactive aspect is most often expressed by verbs derived with -an/en, -int, and -ant/ent: pattan 'bounce once', csobban 'splash once', durran 'make banging noise once', szökkent 'leap once', harsan 'sound once', köhög 'cough'—köhint 'cough once', bólogat 'nod repeatedly'—bólint 'nod once', horkol 'snore'—horkant 'snore once', vakkant 'bark once', tüüssög 'sneeze repeatedly'—tüsszent 'sneeze once'.

(648) Valaki tüüsszent-ett.
   somebody sneeze.SEM-PAST.INDEF.3SG
   'Somebody sneezed (once).'

(649) A labda csak egy-et pattan-t.
   the ball only one-ACC bounce.SEM-PAST.INDEF.3SG
   'The ball only bounced once.'

(650) A kutya nem mer-t még vakkant-ani sem.
   the dog not dare-PAST.INDEF.3SG even bark.SEM-INF
   neither
   'The dog didn't dare to bark even once.'

Other verbs can sometimes take the extent adjunct egyet 'once' to express semelfactivity:

(651) A harang kondul-t egy-et.
   the bell toll-PAST.INDEF.3SG one-ACC
   'The bell tolled once.'

(652) Az oroszlán mordul-t egy-et.
   the lion growl-PAST.INDEF.3SG one-ACC
   'The lion growled once.'

The prefix meg can express semelfactivity with durative verbs: csóvál 'wag'—megcsóvál 'wag once', csókol 'kiss'—megcsókol 'kiss once', dörzsöl 'rub'—megdörzsöl 'rub once', kapar 'scratch'—megkapar 'scratch once'.

(653) A kutya meg-csóvál-t-a a fark-á-t.
   the dog PFX-wag-PAST-DEF.3SG the tail-POSS.3SG-ACC
   'The dog wagged his tail once.'

(654) Judit meg-csókol-t-a Márton-t.
   Judith PFX-kiss-PAST-DEF.3SG Martin-ACC
   'Judith gave Martin a kiss.'

2.1.3.3.2.1.10. **Punctual aspect**

The punctual aspect is not expressed by any formal syntactic or derivational means in Hungarian.
2.1.3.3.2.1.11. Durative aspect Verbs with a durative meaning can be derived with various derivational suffixes. The most productive of these is -gat/get/ogat/eget/öget, as in hall ‘hear’—hallgat ‘listen’, beszél ‘speak’—beszélget ‘talk’, köt ‘knit’—kötöget ‘be knitting’, töröl ‘wipe’—törölgat ‘be wiping’, and söpör ‘sweep’—söpröget ‘be sweeping’. Less productive suffixes include -oz(ik)/ez(ik)/öz(ik), as in önt ‘pour’—öntöz ‘water’, and álmodik ‘dream’—álmodzik ‘be dreaming, daydream’; -og/eg/ög, as in pattog ‘be bouncing’, mekeg ‘(for goat) be bleating’, zümmög ‘be buzzing’, közeleg ‘be nearing’; and -dogál/degél/dögél, as in fúj ‘blow’—fújdogál ‘(for wind) be blowing’, megy ‘go’—mendegél ‘be going’, ül ‘sit’—üldögél ‘sit around’, and all ‘stand’—álldögél ‘stand around’.

(655) Az ember-ek álldogál-t-ak és
talk-PAST-INDEF.3PL
beszélget-t-ek.

‘The people were standing around talking.’

(656) Gábor egész nap csak álmodoz-ott.
Gábor whole day only daydream-PAST.INDEF.3SG
‘Gabriel was just daydreaming all day.’

(657) A labda soká-ig pattog-ott.
the ball late-TER bounce.DUR-PAST-INDEF.3SG
‘The ball bounced for a long time.’

2.1.3.3.2.1.12. Simultaneous aspect Simultaneity can be expressed in Hungarian only with the help of adverbial clauses.

(658) Amíg én takarít-ott-am, Gábor a kert-ben
while I clean-PAST-INDEF.1SG Gabriel the garden-INE
dolgoz-ott.
work-PAST-INDEF.3SG
‘While I was cleaning, Gabriel was working in the garden.’

2.1.3.3.2.1.13. Existential aspect The existential aspect, as proposed by É.Kiss, “expresses that the action has already taken place an indefinite number of times, but at least once, or will take place an indefinite number of times, but at least once” (1987:72). The existential aspect is expressed by stressing the verb and placing the prefix after the verb, with the adverbs már ‘already’ and meg ‘still’ often occurring between the verb and the prefix, the former in past tense sentences and the latter in sentences referring to the future.
(659) Nóra men-t már el Pál-tól sír-va.
Nora go-PAST.INDEF.3SG already away Paul-ABL cry-SCVB
‘Nora has left Paul’s place crying before.’

(660) Vilmos jön meg haza részeg-en.
William come.INDEF.3SG still to.home drunk-MOE
‘William will come home drunk at some point.’

In cases when no prefix occurs in the verbal construction, the adverbs már and még appear to be obligatory. Without them the sentences have different interpretations (cf. (661)-(662) and (663)-(664), respectively):

(661) Edit dohányz-ott már az erkély-en.
Edith smoke-PAST.INDEF.3SG already the balcony-SUP
‘Edith has smoked on the balcony before.’

Edith smoke-PAST.INDEF.3SG the balcony-SUP
‘As for Edith, what she did on the balcony is smoke.’

(663) Edit fog még dohányoz-ni az erkély-en.
Edith FUT.INDEF.3SG still smoke-INF the balcony-SUP
‘Edith will smoke on the balcony at some point.’

(664) Edit fog dohányoz-ni az erkény-en.
Edith FUT.3SG smoke-INF the balcony-SUP
‘As for Edith, she will smoke on the balcony.’

2.1.3.2.1.14. Telicity In Hungarian, verbal constructions with a perfective prefix or, in the progressive, with a definite direct object indicate telicity, whereas verbs without perfective prefixes and with an incorporated articleless object indicate the atelic nature of the situation. Thus, (665) and (666) express telicity, while (667) does not.

(665) György meg-i-tt-a a bor-t.
George PFX-drink-PAST-DEF.3SG the wine-ACC
‘George drank the wine.’

(666) György i-tt-a a bor-t.
George drink-PAST-DEF.3SG the wine-ACC
‘George was drinking the wine.’

(667) György bor-t iv-ott.
George wine-ACC drink-PAST.1NDEF.3SG
‘George drank (some) wine.’
2.1.3.2.2.2. Restrictions on combination of aspect with other verbal features

2.1.3.2.2.2.1. Aspect and voice
The passive construction almost always involves a preverbal prefix in Hungarian, which, at least partly, carries a perfective meaning.

(668) A kérvény meg van ír-va.
    the application PFX be.3SG write-SCVB
    ‘The application has been written.’

(669) A kérvény be vol-t ad-va.
    the application in be-PAST.3SG give-SCVB
    ‘The application was submitted.’

2.1.3.2.2.2.2. Aspect and tense
Aspect distinctions are the same in all tenses in Hungarian.

2.1.3.2.2.2.3. Aspect and mood
Aspect distinctions are the same in all moods in Hungarian.

2.1.3.2.2.2.4. Aspect and finiteness
Aspect distinctions are the same across finite and nonfinite verb-forms in Hungarian.

2.1.3.4. Mood

Three moods are marked in Hungarian morphologically: the indicative, the conditional, and the imperative. The debitive and the potential, as well as possibility and the degree of certainty, can be expressed with auxiliary verbs in Hungarian.

2.1.3.4.1. Indicative

The indicative mood is expressed by zero marking on the verb. The indicative occurs in all three of the tenses.

(670) Sára egyetem-en tanít.
    Sara university-SUP teach.INDEF.3SG
    ‘Sara teaches at a university.’

(671) Andrea tegnap érkez-ett Párizs-ból.
    Andrea yesterday arrive-PAST.INDEF.3SG Paris-ELA
    ‘Andrea arrived from Paris yesterday.’
Holnap-tól László itt fog dolgozni.
'tomorrow-ABL Lászó here FUT.INDEF.3SG work-1NF
'László will be working here from tomorrow.'

2.1.3.4.2. Conditional

The conditional mood occurs in the present tense and the past tense in Hungarian.

In the present tense the conditional is marked by the -na/ne/ná/né suffix, which is attached to the verb stem before the suffix expressing person and number. (The allomorphs -ná/né occur in all persons and numbers and in both conjugations, except for the third person singular indefinite conjugation forms of -ik-less verbs, which take -na/ne.)

The personal suffixes are identical with those of the present tense indicative suffixes in both conjugations, except in the definite conjugation forms of -ik verbs.

The conditional forms are illustrated below with vár 'wait, expect' and kér 'want, ask for' (as well as by utazik 'travel' and esik 'fall' for the indefinite forms of -ik verbs).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Indefinite conjugation</th>
<th>-ik-less verbs</th>
<th>-ik verbs</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1SG vámék</td>
<td>kérnék</td>
<td>utaznám</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2SG vámál</td>
<td>kémél</td>
<td>utaznál</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3SG várna</td>
<td>kérne</td>
<td>utaznék</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1PL várnánk</td>
<td>kéménk</td>
<td>esném</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2PL várnátok</td>
<td>kémétek</td>
<td>esnél</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3PL várnának</td>
<td>kémének</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

1SG with second person object: várnálak, kémélek

All verbs:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Definite conjugation</th>
<th>-ik-less verbs</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1SG vámám</td>
<td>kémém</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2SG vámád</td>
<td>kéméd</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3SG várma</td>
<td>kémé</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1PL vármánk</td>
<td>kéménk</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2PL vármátok</td>
<td>kémétek</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3PL vármák</td>
<td>kémék</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

In the singular forms of the indefinite conjugation, the -ik verbs retain their separate paradigms in very formal literary style as well as in some Hungarian dialects. The same -ik-less paradigm forms (e.g., utaznék 'I')
would travel', esnék 'I would fall', utazna 's/he would travel', and esne 's/he would fall') are used almost exclusively for the -ik verbs nowadays.

Verbs of the vesz-type form the conditional with a vowel-final stem and a geminated n of the conditional suffix: e.g., the first person singular indefinite forms of vesz 'take', eszik 'eat', and iszik 'drink' are vennék, enném, and innám, respectively.

(673)  
Ha nem es-ne az eső, sétál-ni
if not fall-COND.INDEF.3SG the rain walk-INF
men-né-k,
go-COND-INDEF.1SG
‘If it wasn’t raining, I would go for a walk.’

(674)  
Ha sok pénz-em le-nne, sok-at
if much money-POSS.1SG be-COND.3SG much-ACC
utaz-né-k,
travel-COND-INDEF.1SG
‘If I had a lot of money, I would travel a lot.’

In the past tense, the conditional mood is expressed by the past tense verb and the auxiliary volna.

(675)  
Ha nem es-ett volna az eső, sétál-ni
if not fall-PAST.INDEF.3SG COND the rain walk-INF
men-t-em volna.
go-PAST-INDEF.1SG COND
‘If it hadn’t rained, I would have gone for a walk.’

(676)  
Ha siet-t-em volna, találkoz-t-am
if hurry-PAST-INDEF.1SG COND meet-PAST-INDEF.1SG
volna vel-e.
COND INS-3SG
‘If I had hurried up, I would have met him/her.’

2.1.3.4.3. Imperative
The imperative has no tense marking in Hungarian.
The imperative suffix -j is attached to the verb stem before personal suffixes. The imperative paradigms are illustrated by the forms of the verbs vár ‘wait, expect’ and kér ‘want, ask for’ below.
Indefinite conjugation:
1SG várjak kérjek
2SG várj(ál) kérj(él)
3SG várjon kérjen
1PL várjunk kérjünk
2PL várjatok kérjetek
3PL várjanak kérjenek

1SG subject with second person object:
várjalak kérjelek

Definite conjugation:
1SG várjam kérjem
2SG vár(j)a)d kér(j)e)d
3SG várja kérje
1PL várjuk kérjük
2PL várjatok kérjetek
3PL várják kérjék

In verbs ending in -s, -z, or -sz, the imperative suffix assimilates completely to the stem-final consonant, for instance the first person singular indefinite forms for olvas ‘read’, néz ‘watch’, and játszik ‘play’ are mossak, nézzek, and játsszak, respectively. In verbs ending in -st and -szt, the stem-final -t is deleted and the preceding sibilant completely assimilates the imperative -j: e.g., the first person singular indefinite forms for fest ‘paint’ and választ ‘choose’ are fessek and válasszak, respectively.

In verbs ending in a short vowel and -t, the stem-final vowel and the imperative suffix coalesce into a geminate -ss: e.g., the first person singular indefinite forms for szeret ‘like, love’ and fut ‘run’ are szeressek and fussak, respectively.

In verbs ending in a long vowel or a nonsibilant consonant and -t, the imperative -j partially assimilates into a -s: e.g., the first person singular indefinite forms for készít ‘prepare’, javíts ‘repair’, kiált ‘shout’, and ért ‘understand’ are készítsek, javítsak, kiáltak, and értsek, respectively.

Verbs of the vesz-type form irregular stems ending in -gy in their imperative forms: e.g., the first person singular indefinite forms for vesz ‘take’ and iszik ‘drink’ are vegyek and igyak, respectively. In the second person singular definite forms the shorter alternative forms of these verbs end in -dd, vidd and idd. The verb jön takes a stem ending in -j: jöjjek ‘come.IMP.1SG.INDEF’, and has two alternative forms in the second person: jöjjél and gyere in the singular, and jöjjetek and gyertek in the plural.

The imperative forms are used in genuine imperative constructions, in indirect commands, in first person plural suggestions (the equivalent of English ‘let’s’ phrases), in the equivalent of ‘let somebody do something’ phrases together with hadd ‘let (2SG imperative)’, in first person questions.
asking for suggestions (the equivalent of English ‘shall I/we...?’), and in subordinate clauses of purpose. In the imperative a preverbal prefix is placed after the verb in the neutral sentence. In negative imperatives the negative particle ne is used.

(677) Olvas-d el ez-t!
read-IMP.DEF.2SG PFX this-ACC
‘Read this!’

(678) Éva az-t mond-t-a, hogy olvas-s-am
Eve that-ACC say-PAST-DEF.3SG that read-IMP-DEF.1SG
el ez-t.
PFX this-ACC
‘Eve said that I should read this.’

(679) Men-j-ünk mozi-ba!
go-IMP-INDEF.1PL movies-ILL
‘Let’s go to the movies.’

(680) Had-d főz-z-ek ma ebéd-et!
let-IMP.2SG cook-IMP-INDEF.1SG today lunch-ACC
‘Let me cook lunch today.’

(681) Most mi-t csinál-j-ak?
now what-ACC do-IMP-INDEF.1SG
‘What shall I do now?’

(682) Az-ért men-t haza, hogy
that-CAU go-PAST.INDEF.3SG to.home that
olvas-s-on.
read-IMP-INDEF.3SG
‘S/he went home to read.’

2.1.3.4.4. Optative
There is no formal optative mood in Hungarian. A wish for something to come about can be indicated by the adverbs bárcsak, bár, both meaning ‘if only’, and csak ‘only’, all occurring together with a conditional verb phrase.

(683) Bárcsak meg-hív-ná-nak minket!
if.only PFX-invite-CON-INDEF.3PL we.ACC
‘If only they invited us!’

(684) Bár ne le-nne ennyi dolg-om!
if.only not be-CON.3SG this.much thing-POSS.1SG
‘If only I didn’t have so much to do!’
There is no special intentional mood in Hungarian. Intentionality can be expressed with the verbs *akar* ‘want’, *kíván* ‘wish to’, *óhajt* ‘desire’, *szándékozik* ‘wish to’, and the conditional verb-form *szeretne* ‘would like to’, together with the infinitive form of the lexical verb. (The verb *szándékozik* does not mark definiteness agreement.)

(686) Haza akar-ok men-ni.
    to.home want-INDEF.1SG go-INF
    ‘I want to go home.’
(687) Pál nem kíván kérdés-t fel-ten-ni.
    Paul not wish.INDEF.3SG question-ACC up-put-INF
    ‘Paul does not wish to ask a question.’
(688) Pál nem szándékoz-ik az-t a kérdés-t
    Paul not wish-INDEF.3SG that-ACC the question-ACC
    fel-ten-ni.
    up-put-INF
    ‘Paul does not wish to ask that question.’

2.1.3.4.6. Debitive

There is no formal debitive mood in Hungarian. Obligation can be expressed with the auxiliary verbs *kell* ‘need, have to’ and *kellene* ‘ought to’. The former expresses a stronger obligation than the latter. The subject of both *kell* and *kellene* is in the dative case. The lexical verb is in the infinitive, which is marked for person and number if the obligation refers to a specific person rather than being a general statement. In the past tense *kell* forms a regular past tense, *kellett*, while *kellene*, formally a conditional verb-form, is used in the regular past conditional form, *kellett volna*. Hungarian does not formally indicate a difference between moral and physical obligation.
Page 314

(689) Nek-em most men-n-em kell.
DAT-1SG now go-INF-1SG need
‘As for me, I have to go now.’

(690) Tegnap el kell-ett men-ni-ük a postá-ra.
yesterday away need-PAST go-INF-3PL the post.office-SUB
‘Yesterday they had to go to the post office.’

(691) Dorottyá-nak sok-at kellene olvas-ni-a.
Dorothy-DAT much-ACC ought.to read-INF-3SG
‘Dorothy ought to read a lot.’

Dorothy-DAT more-ACC need-PAST COND read-INF-3SG
‘Dorothy ought to have read more.’

(693) Mi-t kell a kert-tel csinál-ni?
what-ACC need the garden-INS do-INF
‘What needs to be done to the garden?’

2.1.3.4.7. Potential

There is no formal potential mood in Hungarian.
Ability can be expressed with the auxiliaries tud and bír, both meaning ‘be able to’. Both take the nonperson-marked
infinitive forms of the lexical verb. In the past they both form regular past tenses.
The auxiliary bír is used to express physical ability or strength. The verb tud can indicate both learned ability (695)
and potential due to circumstances (696).

(694) Nem bír-ok fel-all-ni.
not be.able-INDEF.1SG up-stand-INF
‘I am not able to stand up.’

(695) Eszter már tavaly is tud-ott
Esther already last.year also be.able-PAST.INDEF.3SG
úsz-ni.
swim-INF
‘Esther could already swim last year.’

(696) Nem tud-ok fel-áll-ni, a macska
not be.able-INDEF.1SG up-stand-INF the cat
ül az ől-em-ben,
sit.INDEF.3SG the lap-POSS.1SG-INE
‘I can’t stand up; the cat is sitting in my lap.’
Verbs bearing the inflectional suffix -hat/het can also express potential—having the ability, the opportunity, the circumstances, the permission, the possibility, or the right to act. Verbs with -hat/het can be in the indicative or the conditional, but they can only be used in their finite forms. In the past tense the past tense suffix is attached after -hat/het.

(697) Ez-t a könyv-et könny-en meg-szerez-het-em.
this-ACC the book-ACC easy-MOE PFX-get-POT-DEF.1SG
‘I can get this book easily.’

(698) Péter nem ír-hat Mária-nak level-et.
Peter not write-POT.INDEF.3SG Maria-DAT letter-ACC
‘Peter can’t write letters to Maria (=was not allowed to).’

(699) Mi-t mond-hat-né-k nek-ed?
what-ACC say-POT-CON-INDEF.1SG DAT-2SG
‘What could I say to you?’

(700) Nem mond-hat-t-am meg nek-ed, hol vagy-ok.
not tell-POT-PAST-DEF.1SG PFX DAT-2SG where be-1SG
‘I couldn’t tell you where I was (=was not allowed to).’

Permission is also expressed with the auxiliaries lehet and szabad, while lack of permission can be indicated with tilos.

Both lehet and szabad take the nonperson-marked infinitive when the permission is general, and the person-marked infinitive when the permission refers to a specific person. The noun phrase indicating the person that the permission refers to is in the dative. In the past tense szabad occurs with the third person singular past form of volt, ‘be’, while lehet forms a past tense form, lehetett.

(701) Péter-ké-nek nem szabad a kés-sel játsz-ani-a.
Peter-DIM-DAT not PERM the knife-INS play-INF-3SG
‘Little Peter is not allowed to play with the knife.’

(702) Itt ezelőtt szabad vol-t parkol-ni.
here this.before PERM be-PAST.3SG park-INF
‘One could park here before.’

(703) Haza lehet men-n-em?
to.home PERM go-INF-1SG
‘Am I allowed to go home?’

The auxiliary lehet can also express potential due to circumstances. In cases where the subject is a passive recipient (as in (705) below), the auxiliary is optional.
A piac-on mindig lehet friss gyümölcs-öt ve-nni.
‘One can always buy fresh fruit at the farmer’s market.’

A Vár-ból majdnem egész Budapest-et (lehet)
lát-ni.
‘One can see almost all of Budapest from the castle.’

‘One can always buy fresh fruit at the farmer’s market.’
The auxiliary tilos is mostly used in the wording of official prohibitions, and takes the infinitive of the lexical verb. In the past tense it occurs with volt.

Fű-re lép-ni tilos.
‘Keep off the grass.’

Itt ezelőtt tilos volt dohányoz-ni.
‘Smoking was prohibited here before.’

Degree of certainty can be indicated in Hungarian by the adjectives valószínű ‘probable, likely’, lehetséges ‘possible’, and biztos ‘certain’; the verb lehet ‘be possible’; or the adverbs biztosan ‘certainly’, talán ‘perhaps’, and valószínűleg ‘probably’.

The adjectives valószínű and lehetséges and the verb lehet are used with clausal complements. In expressing degree of certainty the verb lehet cannot be used in the past.

Lehetséges, hogy Lajos is jön.
‘It’s possible that Louis is also coming.’

Nem volt valószínű hogy Péter ott lesz.
‘It was not likely that Peter was going to be there.’

Lehet, hogy jövök.
‘I may be coming.’

Talán otthon van András.
‘Perhaps Andrew is at home.’
András biztosan otthon van.
Andrew certainly at.home be.3SG
‘Andrew is most certainly at home.’

2.1.3.4.11. Monitory
There is no formal monitory mood in Hungarian.
An imperative involving a verb with a preverbal prefix indicates warning if the prefix is placed before the verb (rather than after it, as in non-warning imperatives). If the warning involves a negative particle, it is placed between the prefix and the verb.

(713) El-mosogas-s, mi-re
  PFX-do.dishes-IMP.INDEF.2SG what-SUB
  vissza-jöv-ök!
  back-come-INDEF.1SG
‘You better do the dishes by the time I come back!’

(714) El ne olvas-d az-t a könyv-et, nagyon
  PFX not read-IMP.DEF.2SG that-ACC the book-ACC very
  rossz!
  bad
‘Don’t read that book, it’s really bad!’

2.1.3.4.14. Contingent
There is no contingent mood in Hungarian. Possibility is expressed similarly to degree of certainty; see section 2.1.3.4.8 above.

2.1.3.5. Finite and nonfinite forms
Finite verbs indicate the person and number of the subject, the definiteness or indefiniteness of the accusative direct object, and—in one exceptional case, when the subject is first person singular and the object is second person—the person of the direct object. Finite forms also indicate time relations and mood.
Hungarian has the following nonfinite forms: one infinitive (marked or unmarked for the subject) and five participial forms.
The infinitive of a verb is derived with the suffix -ni: ír ‘write’—írni ‘to write’, olvas ‘read’—olvasni ‘to read’. If the verb stem ends in two consonants or a long vowel (except á and é) and a consonant, the infinitival suffix is usually preceded by the linking vowel -a/e: hall ‘hear’—hallani ‘to hear’, tart ‘keep’—tartani ‘to keep’, ért ‘understand’—érténi ‘to understand’.
The verb megy 'go' takes the stem allomorph men- in the infinitive: menni 'to go'. The vesz-type verbs—vesz 'take',
tesz 'put', visz 'carry', hisz 'believe', eszik 'eat', and íszik 'drink'—take stem allomorphs ending in a vowel and
geminate the n of the infinitive suffix: venni, tenni, vinni, hinni, enni, and inni, respectively. The infinitive of 'be' is
lenni. Several -ik verbs ending in -sz, like alszik 'sleep', fekszik 'lie', and esküszik 'swear', take stems ending in -d in
their infinitival forms: aludni, feküdni, and esküdni.
The nonperson-marked infinitival forms are used as complements of lexical verbs, in expressing the future with the
verb fog (see section 2.1.3.2.1.4), and with the auxiliaries tud and bír (see section 2.1.3.4.7); they can also be used
with the other auxiliaries to express general, nonperson-specific forms (see sections 2.1.3.4.6 and 2.1.3.4.7).

(715) Nem szeret-ek itt lak-ni.
   not like-INDEF.1SG here live-INF
   'I don't like to live here.'
The person-marked infinitival forms have the possessive personal suffixes (see section 2.1.1.4.7). The paradigm is
illustrated with the forms of olvas 'read', fest 'paint', and tör 'break' below.

1SG olvasnom, festenem, törnöm
2SG olvasnod, festened, törnöd
3SG olvasnia, festenie, törnie
1PL olvasnunk, festenünk, törnünk
2PL olvasnotok, festenetek, törnetek
3PL olvasniuk, festeniük, törniük
The person-marked infinitive is used with the auxiliaries kell, kellene, lehet, and szabad (see sections 2.1.3.4.6 and
2.1.3.4.7), as well as in subject-complement clauses of adjectives:

(716) Nem fontos magyar-ul beszél-ni-e.
   not important Hungarian-ESS speak-INF-3SG
   'It is not important that s/he speak Hungarian.'

Hungarian has five participles: the active (present) participle, the passive (past) participle, the future participle, the
simple (simultaneous) adverbial participle, and the perfective adverbial participle.
The active participle is formed with the -dő suffix, and is used in an adjectival function.

(717) Az a táncol-ó nő az anyá-m.
    that the dance-APRT woman the mother-POSS.1SG
    'That dancing woman is my mother.'
Az a kopasz férfi-val táncol-ó nő az that the bald man-INS dance-APRT woman the anyá-m.mother-POSS.1SG

‘That woman dancing with the bald man is my mother.’


The passive participle is formed with the -t/tt suffix, where the choice between the allomorphs is made exactly like the third person singular indefinite past tense form of the given verb (see section 2.1.3.2.1.3). The passive participle serves an adjectival function in Hungarian.

Passive participles can be formed from both transitive (719)–(720) and intransitive verbs (721)–(722).

(719) a meg-beszél-t találkoz-ó
the PFX-arrange-PPRT meet-APRT
‘the arranged meeting’

(720) a tanul-t ember
the learn-PPRT person
‘the learned person’

(721) a ki-tisztul-t ég
the out-clear-PPRT sky
‘the cleared-up sky’

(722) a meg-hal-t ember
the PFX-die-PPRT person
‘the dead person’

Several passive participles are also lexicalized adjectives and nouns: sápadt ‘pale’, nyugodt ‘calm’, fáradt ‘tired’, halott ‘dead person’, örölt ‘mad person’, múlt ‘past’.

The future participle is derived with the -andó/endő suffix. It can be formed from transitive and intransitive verbs alike (although only future participles of transitive verbs are formed productively), and is adjectival in meaning.

(723) az el-jöv-endő kor
the PFX-come-FPRT age
‘the age to come’

(724) a le-endő férj
the be-FPRT husband
‘the husband-to-be’
Some lexicalized adjectives and nouns originate in a future participial form: állandó ‘stable’, halandó ‘mortal’, jövendő ‘future’. The simple adverbial participle (called, in recent analyses, the ‘simple converb’) is formed with the suffix -va/ve, from transitive and intransitive verbs alike. It is used as an adverb of manner, and refers to an action happening simultaneously with the action referred to by the finite verb in the same sentence.

(727) A gyerek-ek kiabál-va szalad-t-ak végig az utcá-n.

‘The children ran down the street shouting.’

The perfective adverbial participle (also called, in recent analyses, the ‘perfective converb’) is formed with the suffix -ván/vén, from both transitive and intransitive verbs. It is very infrequent in spoken Hungarian, and is used only in formal and ceremonious style in writing, as an adverb of manner. A perfective participle has historically been used to refer to an action preceding that referred to by the finite verb in the same sentence (728). Nowadays it is sometimes used synonymously with the simple adverbial participle to refer to an action happening simultaneously with that referred to by the finite verb of the sentence (729).

(728) A bot pörög-ve repül-t át az udvar-on.

‘The stick flew across the yard spinning.’

(729) Az élet-nek e pillanat-á-hoz érkez-vén, gondol-j-unk […]

‘Having arrived at this moment in life, let’s think […]’.
Ez-t mond-t-a nek-em az asztalfő-n
this-ACC say-PAST-DEF.3SG DAT-1SG the table.head-SUP
ülvén.
sit-PCVB
‘Sitting at the head of the table s/he said this to me.’

2.1.3.5.1. Finite and nonfinite forms versus voices
All of the nonfinite forms can be found in the active voice in Hungarian.
The passive construction is expressed by the simple adverbial participle, and no other nonfinite form is possible in
the passive. (For details about the passive and about its debated status in Hungarian, see section 2.1.3.1.1.)

2.1.3.5.2. Finite and nonfinite forms versus tenses
Finite forms in Hungarian are all marked for tense (see section 2.1.3.2).
None of the nonfinite forms mark absolute tenses; instead, they express relative tenses and express relative time
reference to the finite verbs in the same sentence.

2.1.3.5.3. Finite and nonfinite forms versus aspects
For aspect marking in finite forms, see section 2.1.3.3.
Nonfinite forms express aspect to the extent that preverbal prefixes occurring in them do. (For the aspect relations
expressed by prefixes, also see section 2.1.3.3.)

2.1.3.5.4. Finite and nonfinite forms versus moods
Mood is a property of finite forms only in Hungarian (see section 2.1.3.4).

2.1.3.6. Person- and number-marking
The agreement categories coded in the verb are the person and number of the subject and the definiteness of the
direct object. Throughout the verbal paradigm, in all moods and tenses, Hungarian has two conjugations—indefinite
and definite.
The indefinite (traditionally called ‘subjective’) conjugation is used when the verb has no direct object (i.e., when it is
intransitive) or when it is transitive and has an indefinite direct object. The definite (traditionally called ‘objective’)
conjugation is used when the verb is transitive and has a definite direct object.
The kind of direct object phrases that constitute indefinite objects in Hungarian (and therefore call for the indefinite conjugation) are the following:

(i) a noun phrase with an indefinite article or no article (731)
(ii) a noun phrase premodified by a numeral or a quantifier (but not the definite article) (732)
(iii) first or second person pronoun (733)
(iv) an interrogative pronoun unmarked by the unique identification -ik suffix, such as ki ‘who’, mi ‘what’, milyen ‘what kind’, mekkora ‘what size’, hány ‘how many’, and mennyi ‘how much’ (734)–(735)
(v) the indefinite universal pronoun minden ‘everything’ and the indefinite demonstrative pronouns ennyi ‘this many/much’, annyi ‘that many/much’, valamegyen ‘some number/amount’, senki ‘no one’, semmi ‘nothing’, valaki ‘someone’, valami ‘something’, valamilyen ‘some kind’, and semmilyen ‘no kind’ (736)–(737)
(vi) a noun phrase containing any of the pronouns in (iv) and (v) as an attributive modifier (738)–(739)
(vii) a sentential object with an indefinite anticipatory pronoun such as annyi ‘that much’ in the main clause (740).

(731) András viz-et/egy könyv-et kér.
Andrew water-ACC/a book-ACC want.INDEF.3SG
‘Andrew wants some water/a book.’

(732) Mária két gyerek-et akar.
Maria two child-ACC want.INDEF.3SG
‘Maria wants two children.’

(733) Márton szeret téged/engem.
Martin love.INDEF.3SG you.SG.ACC/I.ACC
‘Martin loves you (SG)/me.’

(734) Ki-t/Mi-t vár-sz?
who-ACC/what-ACC wait-INDEF.2SG
‘Who/What are you waiting for?’

(735) Hány-at/Mily-et kér-sz?
how.many-ACC/what.kind-ACC want-INDEF.2SG
‘How many/What kind do you want?’

(736) Minden-t/Valami-t/Ennyi-t
every thing-ACC/something-ACC/this.much-ACC
látk.
see-INDEF.1SG
‘I see every thing/some thing/this much.’
The kind of direct object phrases that constitute definite objects in Hungarian (and therefore call for the definite conjugation) are the following:

(i) a proper noun with or without the definite article (741)
(ii) a noun phrase with a definite article (742)
(iii) a possessive noun phrase (743)
(iv) a third person pronoun (744)
(v) the demonstrative pronoun ez ‘this’ or az ‘that’ (745)
(vi) a reflexive pronoun, the reciprocal pronoun (egymás ‘each other’), a nominal possessive pronoun (enyém ‘mine’, ővé ‘his/hers’, etc.), (746)–(747)
(vii) an interrogative, definite partitive, or universal pronoun marked by the -ik unique identification suffix, e.g., melyik ‘which one’, valamelyik ‘any/either one’, egyik ‘one’, semelyik ‘not one’, mindegyik ‘each and every one’ (748)–(749)
(viii) the universal pronouns mind ‘all’ and valamennyi ‘each (one)’ (750)
(ix) a noun phrase containing any of the pronouns in (v)–(viii) as a pre-modifier (751)–(752)
(x) a sentential object not containing the anticipatory pronoun annyi ‘that much’ (753).

(741) János szeret-i Budapest-et/a Duná-t.
John like-DEF.3SG Budapest-ACC/the Danube-ACC
‘John likes Budapest/the Danube.’

(742) Ferenc szereti a krimi-k-et.
Frank like-DEF.3SG the mystery-PL-ACC
‘Frank likes mysteries.’
(743) Dániel szeret-ı a
Daniel like-DEF.3SG the
lány-á-t/apá-m-at.
daughter-POSS.3SG-ACC/father-POSS.1SG-ACC
‘Daniel likes his daughter/my father.’

(744) Szeret-em ő-t.
like-DEF.1SG s/he-ACC
‘I like him/her.’

(745) Az-t kér-em.
that-ACC want-DEF.1SG
‘I want that.’

(746) A gyerek-ek lát-ják maguk-at/egymás-t.
the child-PL see-DEF.3PL themselves-ACC/each.other-ACC
‘The children see themselves/each other.’

(747) Az enyém-et kér-ed vagy a tied-et?
the mine-ACC want-DEF.2SG or the yours-ACC
‘Do you want mine or yours?’

(748) Melyik-et kér-ed?
which.one-ACC want-DEF.2SG
‘Which one do you want?’

(749) Edit valamelyik-et/az egyik-et kér-i.
Edith either.one-ACC/the one-ACC want-DEF.3SG
‘Edith wants any/either one.’

(750) Tamás mind-et/valamennyi-t kér-i.
Thomas all-ACC/each.one-ACC want-DEF.3SG
‘Thomas wants all/each one.’

(751) Az-t a könyv-ét kér-ed?
that-ACC the book-ACC want-DEF.2SG
‘Do you want that book?’

(752) Valamelyik/Mindegyik/Az egyik könyv-ét kér-em.
either.one/all.ones/the one book-ACC want-DEF.1SG
‘I want either/all/one of the books.’

(753) Judit (az-t) mond-t-a, hogy
Judith (that-ACC) say-PAST-DEF.3SG that
el-jón.
PFX-come.INDEF.3SG
‘Judith said that she would come.’
In a small number of cases there is ambiguity as to the definiteness or indefiniteness of the direct object. In these cases the verb can be in either conjugation. The direct object is ambiguously definite or indefinite when:
(i) it is a possessive noun phrase with a partitive meaning (754)–(755)
(ii) it is a universal or partitive pronoun used as a nominal and bearing the possessive (756)–(758).

(754) Három könyv-em-et
three book-POSS.1SG-ACC
el-lap-t-a/el-lap-ott
PFX-steal-PAST-DEF.3SG/PFX-steal-PAST.INDEF.3SG
valaki.
somebody
'Somebody has stolen three of my books.'

(755) Péter négy-ünk-et
Peter four-POSS.1SG-ACC
lát-t-a/lát-ott.
see-PAST-DEF.3SG/see-PAST.INDEF.3SG
'Peter saw four of us.'

(756) Orsolya valamennyi-ünk-et
Ursula each one-POSS.1PL-ACC
szeret/szeret-i.
like.INDEF.3SG/like-DEF.3SG
'Ursula likes each one of us.'

(757) Mátyás minden-em-et
Matthias everything-POSS.1SG-ACC
el-vi-tt/el-vi-tt-e.
PFX-take-PAST.INDEF.3SG/PFX-take-PAST-DEF.3SG
'Matthias took everything of mine.'

(758) Mátyás semmi-m-et nem
Matthias nothing -POSS.1SG-ACC not
vi-tt/vi-tt-e el.
take-PAST.INDEF/take-PAST-DEF.3SG PFX
'Matthias did not take anything of mine.'

It is important to note that verbal arguments that are marked by the accusative case but do not constitute direct objects also affect the choice of
conjugations. Verbs denoting sports activities appearing with adjuncts expressing extent can involve preverbal prefixes (fut ‘run’—lefut ‘complete running’, úszik ‘swim’—leúszik ‘complete swimming’, ugrik ‘jump’—megugrik ‘complete the jump’, etc.) and definite extent phrases to express the completion of a distance, in which case the verb has to be in the definite conjugation (cf. (760) and (762)).

(759) Péter három kör-t fut-ott.
Peter three lap-ACC run-PAST.INDEF.3SG
‘Peter ran three laps.’

(760) Péter le-fut-ott-a a három kör-t.
Peter down-run-PAST-DEF.3SG the three lap-ACC
‘Peter completed running the three laps.’

(761) Agnes ezer méter-t úsz-ik.
Agnes thousand meter-ACC swim-INDEF.3SG
‘Agnes swims a thousand meters.’

(762) Agnes le-usz-sza az ezer méter-t.
Agnes down-swim-DEF.3SG the thousand meter-ACC
‘Agnes completes swimming the thousand meters.’

Other verbs that take arguments and adjuncts marked by the accusative but cannot express the completion of a distance always take indefinite phrases as arguments and adjuncts and, therefore, can only be in the definite conjugation (763)–(764).

(763) A csomag húsz kiló-t nyom.
the package twenty kilo-ACC weigh.INDEF.3SG
‘The package weighs twenty kilos.’

(764) A macska tíz méter-t és-ett lefelé.
the cat ten meter-ACC fall-PAST.INDEF.3SG downwards
‘The cat fell ten meters downwards.’

It is also important to note that only direct objects marked by the accusative case affect the choice between the conjugations. When the verb governs a direct object marked with any other case, e.g., the dative or the inessive, the verb receives the indefinite conjugation even if the object is definite.

(765) Erika nem bíz-ik János-ban.
Erica not trust-INDEF.3SG John-INE
‘Erica doesn't trust John.’
The person of the direct object is coded only when the verb has a first person singular subject and a second person object (with a -lak/-lek suffix throughout the verbal paradigm).

This form does not belong formally to either the definite or the indefinite conjugation.

2.1.3.6.1.1. Subject

The person and number of the subject are marked on every finite verb in Hungarian. Although accidentally identical forms marking different persons do occur (e.g., -ik as the present tense third person singular indefinite suffix in -ik verbs and as the present tense third person plural definite front vowel suffix, making reggelizik ambiguous between ‘s/he eats breakfast’ and ‘they eat it for breakfast’), such ambiguities are very rare and are always easily disambiguated in context.

Because the personal suffixes are slightly different across the tenses and moods, the paradigms are given under the sections covering the present tense (section 2.1.3.2.1.2), the past tense (2.1.3.2.1.3), the future tense (2.1.3.2.1.4), the conditional mood (2.1.3.4.2), and the imperative mood (2.1.3.4.3).

2.1.3.6.1.2. Direct object

As noted above, the person of the direct object is expressed with one subject/object pair: the -lak/lek suffix indicates a first person singular subject with a second person singular or plural object. This form is found in all tenses and moods, e.g., tanítalak ‘I teach you’, szeretlek ‘I love you’, tanítottalak ‘I taught you’, szerettelek ‘I loved you’, tanítbalak ‘I teach.IMP you’, szeresselek ‘I love.IMP you’, tanítanálak ‘I would teach you’, and szeretnélek ‘I would love you’.

2.1.3.6.2. Agreement

Finite verbs always agree with their subjects in person and number in all tenses and moods. With the exception of the person-marked infinitival forms (see section 2.1.3.5 above), nonfinitive verb-forms do not express number or person in Hungarian.

Coordinated noun phrases involving two or more human singular subjects can receive either singular or plural verb agreement. Coordinated nonhuman singular subjects usually receive singular verb agreement.

(767) János és Klára itt van/van-nak.  
John and Claire here be.3SG/be-3PL  
‘John and Claire are here.’
A coordinated noun phrase involving a combination of both singular and plural subjects receives plural verb agreement. In such cases the plural subject is usually listed closer to the verb than the singular subject.

(769) János és a gyerek-ek mozi-ba men-nek.
John and the child-PL movies-ILL go-INDEF.3PL
‘John and the children are going to the movies.’

(770) Az asztal-on van-nak a pohar-ak és a kancsó?
the table-SUP be-3PL the glass-PL and the pitcher
‘Are the glasses and the pitcher on the table?’

Numeral noun phrases—which, in Hungarian, involve a singular head noun (e.g., négy tanár ‘four teachers’)—require singular verb and predicative adjective agreement.

(771) Négy tanár vol-t a terem-ben.
four teacher be-PAST.3SG the classroom-INE
‘Four teachers were in the classroom.’

(772) Négy tanár vol-t magas.
four teacher be-PAST.3SG tall
‘Four teachers were tall.’

2.1.3.6.7. Identity/nonidentity of subjects in successive clauses
Identity and nonidentity between the subject of a verb and the subject of the following or preceding verb is not indicated in Hungarian inflectionally. For details of anaphoric relations see section 1.5.

2.1.3.6.8. Reflexive verb-forms
Hungarian does not have special inflectional reflexive forms of verbs. Reflexivity can be expressed syntactically (see section 1.6.1) and derivationally (see sections 2.1.3.1.2.1 and 2.2.2.2.4).

2.1.3.6.12. Incorporation
Incorporation of various elements in Hungarian has been suggested in several current analyses (e.g., Ackerman 1987, Farkas and Sadock 1989, Komlós 1994, E. Kiss 1996). The two main types of elements for which incorporation analyses have been proposed are the adverbial
preverbal prefixes and argumental constituents. Ackerman (1987) calls both kinds of elements preverbs, distinguishing between preverbal prefixes and argumental preverbs, while Komlósy (1994) calls both complex predicates. In the present description I will follow Ackerman's terminology. Preverbal prefixes are all adverbial in their basic meaning, except for the prefix meg which is purely perfective in modern Hungarian. They include fel ‘up’, le ‘down’, ki ‘out’, be ‘in’, szét ‘apart’, el ‘away’, etc. In verbal constructions the prefix may keep its original adverbial meaning (e.g., felmegy ‘go up’, lemegy ‘go down’, kimegy ‘go out’), or have an aspectual meaning (e.g., megír ‘write up’, elolvas ‘read (completely)’, megcsókol ‘kiss (once)’), or become part of a noncompositional idiomatic unit with the verb (e.g., felvág meaning ‘show off’ instead of the literal ‘cut up’, and kiad meaning ‘publish’ instead of the literal ‘give out’, although both exist with their literal meaning as well). Articleless internal arguments constitute argumental preverbs in Hungarian, e.g., the direct object as in level-et ír ‘write a letter’ (= ‘letter-write’), an object-complement as in bolond-nak tart ‘consider a fool’ (= ‘for-fool-consider’), a subject-complement as in katona+copula ‘serve in the army’ (lit. ‘be a soldier’), a locative as in mozi-ba megy ‘go to the movies’ (= ‘movies-into-go’), an adverb of manner as in ügyes-en vezeti (a labdát) ‘handle (the ball) skillfully’, a translative adverb as in szén-né éget ‘burn (something) to cinders’, or a postposition as in után néz valami-nek ‘look something up’ (lit. ‘after-look something.DAT’).

The two types of preverbs pattern together with respect to their syntactic position with the verb, and in serving as inputs to derivational processes. As for their syntactic positions, to give just one example, both kinds of preverbs precede the verb in neutral sentences and follow it when there is a preverbal focus constituent or a negative particle in the sentence.

(773) Attila ki-men-t.  
Attila out-go-PAST.INDEF.3SG  
‘Attila went out.’

(774) Attila nem-men-t ki.  
Attila not-go-PAST.INDEF.3SG out  
‘Attila didn’t go out.’

(775) Attila egy perc-CEL ezelőtt men-t ki.  
Attila a minute-INS this.before go-PAST.INDEF.3SG out  
‘Attila went out a minute ago.’

2.1.4. Adjectives

In Hungarian the only adjective that has two different forms, attributive vs. predicative, is kis/kicsi ‘small’. The form kis is used exclusively attributively, kicsi is used mostly predicatively, and only rarely attributively.

(779) Ez egy kis ház.
    this a small house
    ‘This is a small house.’

(780) Ez a ház kicsi.
    this the house small
    ‘This house is small.’

The comparative and superlative forms of adjectives are used most often with the unique identification -ik suffix (see section 2.1.1.15) when they are used attributively and their head noun is definite.

(781) Egy nagyobb ház-at akar-ok.
    a big-CMP house-ACC want-INDEF.1SG
    ‘I want a bigger house.

(782) A nagyobb-ik ház-at fog-om meg-ven-ni.
    the big-CMP-UNIQ house-ACC FUT-DEF.1SG PFX-buy-INF
    ‘I’m going to buy the bigger house.’

Hungarian makes no distinction between absolute and contingent state.
2.1.4.3. Agreement in predicative and attributive adjectives
In Hungarian predicative adjectives agree with the subject in number, but no number marking occurs with attributive adjectives whose head noun is expressed overtly.

(783) A hav-as fa szép.
    the snow-ADJ DER tree beautiful
    ‘The snow-covered tree is beautiful.’

(784) A magyar fiú-k magas-ak.
    the Hungarian boy-PL tall-PL
    ‘Hungarian boys are tall.’

Attributive adjectives receive number and case-marking when their head nouns are not expressed overtly and they therefore constitute pro-forms.

(785) A fehér ing-et vesz-ed fel vagy a kék-et?
    the white shirt-ACC put-DEF.2SG up or the blue-ACC
    ‘Are you going to wear the white shirt or the blue one?’

(786) Nem bíz-om a fiatal orvos-ok-ban, csak az
    not trust-INDEF.1SG the young doctor-PL-INE only the
    öreg-ek-ben.
    old-PL-INE
    ‘I don't trust young doctors, only old ones.’

2.1.4.4. Comparison of adjectives
2.1.4.4.1. Equality
Equality is expressed with the unchanged adjective stem (in the singular or the plural) in Hungarian.

(787) János olyan magas, mint én.
    John such tall as I
    ‘John is as tall as me.’

(788) A fiú-k olyan magas-ak, mint én.
    the boy-PL such tall-PL as I
    ‘The boys are as tall as me.’
2.1.4.4.2. Comparative

The comparative of adjectives is formed with the -bb/abb/ebb suffix. Adjectives ending in a vowel take the vowelless allomorph of the suffix, while those ending in a consonant take a harmonizing vowel-initial one:

- olcsó ‘cheap’—olcsóbb ‘cheaper’
- igazi ‘real’—igazibb ‘more real’
- savanyú ‘sour, tart’—savanyúbb ‘more sour’
- keserű ‘bitter’—keserűbb ‘more bitter’
- lusta ‘lazy’—lustább ‘lazier’
- gyenge ‘weak’—gyengébb ‘weaker’
- gazdag ‘rich’—gazdagabb ‘richer’
- unalmas ‘boring’—unalmasabb ‘more boring’
- érdekes ‘interesting’—érdekesebb ‘more interesting’
- erős ‘strong’—erősebb ‘stronger’

Some adjectives ending in -ú or -ű, however, delete the stem-final vowel in the comparative and take a vowel-initial comparative suffix:

- lassú ‘slow’—lassabb ‘slower’
- hosszú ‘long’—hosszabb ‘longer’
- könnyű ‘easy’—könnyebb ‘easier’

There are some vowel-shortening and vowel-deleting stems among adjectives as well:

- kevés ‘few, little’—kevesebb ‘fewer, less’
- derék ‘brave, honest’—derekabb ‘braver, more honest’
- bátor ‘brave’—bátrabb ‘braver’

Some adjectives have irregular forms in the comparative:

- jó ‘good’—jobb ‘better’
- nagy ‘big’—nagyobb ‘bigger’
- szép ‘beautiful’—szebb ‘more beautiful’
- kicsi ‘small’—kisebb ‘smaller’
- sok ‘much, many’—több ‘more’

Several adjectives are formed by compounding nagy ‘big’, kis ‘small’, jó ‘good’, and rossz ‘bad’ with denominal adjectives derived with -ú/ű. These form their comparatives with the comparative form of the first part of the compound if the denominal adjective refers to literally ‘having the noun’:

- olcsó ‘cheap’—olcsóbb ‘cheaper’
- igazi ‘real’—igazibb ‘more real’
- savanyú ‘sour, tart’—savanyúbb ‘more sour’
- keserű ‘bitter’—keserűbb ‘more bitter’
- lusta ‘lazy’—lustább ‘lazier’
- gyenge ‘weak’—gyengébb ‘weaker’
- gazdag ‘rich’—gazdagabb ‘richer’
- unalmas ‘boring’—unalmasabb ‘more boring’
- érdekes ‘interesting’—érdekesebb ‘more interesting’
- erős ‘strong’—erősebb ‘stronger’

Some adjectives ending in -ú or -ű, however, delete the stem-final vowel in the comparative and take a vowel-initial comparative suffix:

- lassú ‘slow’—lassabb ‘slower’
- hosszú ‘long’—hosszabb ‘longer’
- könnyű ‘easy’—könnyebb ‘easier’

There are some vowel-shortening and vowel-deleting stems among adjectives as well:

- kevés ‘few, little’—kevesebb ‘fewer, less’
- derék ‘brave, honest’—derekabb ‘braver, more honest’
- bátor ‘brave’—bátrabb ‘braver’

Some adjectives have irregular forms in the comparative:

- jó ‘good’—jobb ‘better’
- nagy ‘big’—nagyobb ‘bigger’
- szép ‘beautiful’—szebb ‘more beautiful’
- kicsi ‘small’—kisebb ‘smaller’
- sok ‘much, many’—több ‘more’

Several adjectives are formed by compounding nagy ‘big’, kis ‘small’, jó ‘good’, and rossz ‘bad’ with denominal adjectives derived with -ú/ű. These form their comparatives with the comparative form of the first part of the compound if the denominal adjective refers to literally ‘having the noun’:
with a big head—nagyobb fejű 'with a bigger head'
own big eyes—nagyobb szemű 'with bigger eyes'
of great number—nagyobb számú 'of greater number'
of small number—kisebb számú 'of smaller number'
with small ears—kisebb fülű 'with smaller ears'
of small size—kisebb méretű 'of smaller size'
'good-tasting'—jobb ízű 'better-tasting'
'bad-tasting'—rosszabb ízű 'worse-tasting'
with big eyes—nagyobb szemű 'with bigger eyes'
with small ears—kisebb fülű 'with smaller ears'
with small size—kisebb méretű 'of smaller size'
Such compounded adjectives form regular comparative forms if the denominal adjective does not literally mean
'having the noun':
'pompous'—nagyképűbb 'more pompous'
'loud-mouthed, bombastic'—nagyhangúbb 'more loud-mouthed, more bombastic'
'generous'—nagylelkűbb 'more generous'
'renowned'—nagynevűbb 'more renowned'
'nosy, pertinent'—nagyszajúbb 'noisier, more pertinent'
'grandiose'—nagyszabású 'noisier, more pertinent'
'renowned'—nagynevűbb 'more renowned'
'well-meaning'—jóhiszeműbb 'more well-meaning'
'friendly, kind'—jóindulatúbb 'friendlier, kinder'
'cheerful'—jókedvűbb 'more cheerful'
'handsome'—jóképűbb 'more handsome'
'charitable, kind'—jólelkűbb 'more charitable, kinder'
'affluent'—jómodúbb 'more affluent'
'good-hearted'—jószívűbb 'more good-hearted'
'good-looking'—jóvágású 'better looking'
'distrustful'—rosszhiszműbb 'more distrustful'
'malignant'—rosszindulatúbb 'more malignant'
'moody'—rosszkedvűbb 'more moody'
'malicious'—rossznéműbb 'more malicious'
'sharptongued'—rosszneműbb 'more sharptongued'
Some lexicalized active and passive-participial adjectives can also have comparative forms:
'revolting, shocking'—felháborítóbb 'more shocking'
'brilliant'—ragyogóbb 'more brilliant'
'unsuccessful'—elhibázottabb 'more unsuccessful'
'pale'—sápadtabb 'paler'
The pronouns ilyen ‘such, like this’ and olyan ‘such, like that’, and some adverbs, such as távol ‘far’, hátra ‘back’, belül ‘inside’, fent ‘high up’, and lent ‘down low’, also have comparative forms: ilyenebb ‘more like this’ and olyanabb ‘more like that’, távolabb ‘further’, hátrább ‘further back’, beljebb ‘further in’, fentebb ‘further up’, and lentebb ‘further down’, respectively.

The lesser degree of comparison is expressed with the adverb kevésbé ‘less’ and the equational form of the adjective:

(790) Ez a szótag kevésbé hangsúlyos.
This the syllable less stress-ADJ
‘This syllable is less stressed.’

2.1.4.4.3. Superlative

The superlative of an adjective is formed by attaching the prefix leg- on the comparative form of the adjective: legszebb ‘most beautiful’, legkisebb ‘smallest’, legnagyobb fejű ‘with the biggest head’, legjóképűbb ‘most handsome’, legfelháborítóbb ‘most shocking’, legsápadtabb ‘palest’, etc.

(791) János a leg-magasabb.
John the SPR-tall-CMP
‘John is the tallest.’

The adverb legkevésbé ‘least’ is used with the equational form of the adjective to express ‘least x’.

(792) Ez a folyó a legkevésbé veszélyes.
This the river the least danger-ADJ
‘This river is the least dangerous.’

Comparison of entities to other entities, and to themselves at other points or times, employs the same superlative forms in Hungarian.

(793) Ez a folyó a legszelesebb.
This the river the SPR-wide-CMP
‘This river is the widest.’

(794) Ez a folyó itt a legszélesebb.
This the river here the SPR-wide-CMP
‘This river is widest here.’

Pronouns and adverbs that have comparative forms also have superlative forms, e.g., legilyenebb ‘most like it’, legtávolabb ‘furthest’, leghátrabb 'further back', legjóképűbb 'most handsome', legfelháborítóbb 'most shocking', etc.
Page 335

‘furthest back’, legbeljebb ‘furthest in’, legfentebb ‘furthest up’, and leglentebb ‘furthest down’, etc.

2.1.4.4.4. Emphatic superlative

All adjectives that can have comparative and superlative forms in Hungarian can also have emphatic superlative forms referring to the superabundance of the quality. The emphatic superlative is formed from the superlative with the prefix legè:- attached before the superlative leg-: legeslegszebb ‘absolutely the most beautiful’, legeslegkisebb ‘absolutely the smallest’, legeslegfelhaborítóbb ‘absolutely the most shocking’, etc.

The emphatic superlative forms are used to provide special emphasis, mostly in spoken and more colloquial discourse only.

2.1.4.5. Degrees of quality

2.1.4.5.1. Large measure

A large measure of a quality is expressed with various intensifying adverbs. The most frequently used intensifier is nagyon ‘very’. Other intensifiers include igen ‘very’, kivételesen ‘exceptionally’, egészen ‘quite’, rendkívül ‘extremely’, hallatlanul ‘extremely’, hihetetlenül ‘unbelievably’, and borzasztóan ‘terribly’. Some are restricted to certain lexical items, e.g., mélyen vallásos ‘deeply religious’. The adjective jó ‘good’ and various expletives are also used as intensifiers in colloquial Hungarian.

(795)  Ez a fa nagyon magas.
      this the tree very tall
      ‘This tree is very tall.’

(796)  Ez a környék rendkívül veszély-é.
      this the neighborhood extremely danger-ADJDER
      ‘This neighborhood is extremely dangerous.’

2.1.4.5.2. Superabundance

Superabundance can be expressed with the adverbs túl and túlságosan, both meaning ‘too’.

(797)  Ez a kabát túl hosszú nek-em,
      this the coat too long DAT-1SG
      ‘This coat is too long for me.’

(798)  Az a bolt túlságosan messze van.
      that the store too far be.3SG
      ‘That store is too far.’
2.1.4.5.3. Small measure

Small measure of a quality can be expressed with the adverb *elég* ‘enough’.

(799)  
Az a film elég jó, de lát-t-ám már jobb-at is.  
That the movie enough good but see-PAST-INDEF.1SG already better-ACC also

‘That movie is good enough, although I’ve seen better ones.’

In colloquial Hungarian *valami ‘something’* can also be used as an intensifying adverb expressing small measure when there is a negative particle in the sentence.

(800)  
Ez a film nem vol-t valami jó.  
this the movie not be-PAST.3SG very good

‘This movie wasn’t very good (= it was rather bad).’

(801)  
Ez a fa nem valami magas.  
this the tree not very tall

‘This tree is not very tall (= it’s rather short).’

2.1.4.5.4. Verbs with predicative adjectives

Predicative adjectives are used with the verb ‘be’ in Hungarian.

2.1.5. Postpositions

Hungarian has no prepositions, only postpositions. Postpositions are divided into two types according to their morphosyntactic behavior: some govern objects in the nominative and others govern objects bearing other cases. Most postpositions can be combined with personal pronouns in the form of personal possessive suffixes. Some, however, cannot be person-marked because of their meaning (*óta ‘since (a point in time)’, múlva ‘in (some time)', szerte ‘all over (a place)’). Others, such as számára and részére, both denoting a benefactor and synonymous with the dative case, and révén ‘through, by means of have only person-marked forms (számomra ‘for me’, számodra ‘for you (SG)’, számára ‘for him/her’, számunkra ‘for us’, számotokra ‘for you (PL)’, számukra ‘for them).

A near-exhaustive list of the two types of postpositions (those governing nominative and nonnominative objects, respectively), together with their meaning and characteristics of pronoun marking, is given below. Note that several postpositions can have additional meanings besides those listed below.
If a postposition can be person-marked for all persons and numbers, its first and second person singular forms, marked with the suffixes `-m/am/ em and -d/ad/ed`, respectively, are given in the third column. If it cannot be person-marked, it is labeled 'no person-marking'. If, however, a postposition has only person-marked forms and no nonperson-marked forms, it is labeled 'only person-marked' after the first and second person singular forms. In the latter case the form listed as the basic form in the first column is the third person singular form.

### Postpositions governing nominative objects

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Postposition</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
<th>Person-marking</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>alá</td>
<td>'to under'</td>
<td>alám, alád</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>alatt</td>
<td>'under'</td>
<td>alattam, alattad</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>álal</td>
<td>'from under'</td>
<td>álalam, álalad</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>elé</td>
<td>'to in front of'</td>
<td>élém, éléd</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>elén</td>
<td>'against'</td>
<td>ellenem, ellened</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>elől</td>
<td>'from in front of'</td>
<td>előlem, előled</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>előtt</td>
<td>'in front of'</td>
<td>előttém, előtted</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>esetén</td>
<td>'in case of'</td>
<td>no person-marking</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>felé</td>
<td>'towards'</td>
<td>felém, feléd</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>felétt</td>
<td>'above, over'</td>
<td>feléttém, felétted</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>felől</td>
<td>'from the direction of'</td>
<td>fölén/föléd</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fölé</td>
<td>'to above/over'</td>
<td>fölém, föléd</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>föliőtt</td>
<td>'above, over'</td>
<td>föliőttém, föliőtted</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fölül</td>
<td>'from above/over'</td>
<td>fölülém, fölüléd</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>folytán</td>
<td>'as a consequence of'</td>
<td>no person-marking</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>helyett</td>
<td>'instead of'</td>
<td>helyettém, helyetted</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>iránt</td>
<td>'towards'</td>
<td>irántam, iránta</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>körül</td>
<td>'around'</td>
<td>körültem, körülletted</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>közé</td>
<td>'to between/among'</td>
<td>közém, közéd</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>között</td>
<td>'between, among'</td>
<td>közöttem, közötted</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>közül</td>
<td>'from between/among'</td>
<td>közülem, közüled</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>létére</td>
<td>'despite being'</td>
<td>létéreme, létédre; only person-marked</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>metté</td>
<td>'to near'</td>
<td>mellém, melléd</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mellett</td>
<td>'near'</td>
<td>mellettem, melletted</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mellől</td>
<td>'from near'</td>
<td>mellőlem, mellőled</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>miatt</td>
<td>'because of'</td>
<td>miattam, miattad</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mögdjára</td>
<td>'in the manner of'</td>
<td>no person-marking</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>möddra</td>
<td>'in the mode of'</td>
<td>no person-marking</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mögé</td>
<td>'to behind'</td>
<td>mögém, mögéd</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mögött</td>
<td>'behind'</td>
<td>mögöttém, mögötted</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
The following postpositions all govern objects in cases other than the nominative. Such postpositions, if they can be combined with personal pronouns, do so in the following way: the postposition itself remains unchanged, while the pronoun appears in its case-marked form (see section 2.1.2.1.20.5). For instance, the postposition kívül ‘besides’ governs superessive, so the postpositional phrases ‘besides me’ and ‘besides you’ are rajtam kívül and rajtad kívül, respectively.

In the table below, postpositions are listed together with their meanings, the case they govern, and with information about the way they are combined with pronouns. If a postposition can be combined with a pronoun, the postpositional phrase containing the first person singular pronoun is listed in the fourth column. (If it cannot be combined with a pronoun, this column contains the label ‘does not occur’.) In the ‘case’ column below, ‘dative’ occurs in parentheses when dative case-marking on the object of the postpositional phrase appears only when the possessor phrase is emphasized or moved out (for these features of the possessor see section 2.1.1.4.6).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Postposition</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
<th>Case</th>
<th>With pronoun</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>alul</td>
<td>‘below’</td>
<td>SUP</td>
<td>does not occur</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>át</td>
<td>‘through, across’</td>
<td>SUP</td>
<td>does not occur</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>belül</td>
<td>‘inside of’</td>
<td>SUP</td>
<td>does not occur</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dacára</td>
<td>‘despite’</td>
<td>(DAT)</td>
<td>does not occur</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>együtt</td>
<td>‘together’</td>
<td>INS</td>
<td>velem együtt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ellenére</td>
<td>‘despite’</td>
<td>(DAT)</td>
<td>does not occur</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fogva</td>
<td>‘as a result of’</td>
<td>ADE</td>
<td>does not occur</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Postposition Meaning Case With pronoun
fogva 'from (time)' ABL does not occur
felől 'over' SUP does not occur
hasonlóan 'similarly to' ALL hozzáam hasonlóan
innen 'on this side of' SUP does not occur
képest 'compared to' ALL hozzáam képest
keresztül 'through' SUP rajtam keresztül
kezdve 'beginning from' ABL does not occur
kivéve 'exception for' ACC engem kivéve
kivül 'outside, beside' SUP rajtam kívül
kívülre 'from outside' SUP does not occur
kivülől 'from outside' SUP does not occur
közel 'close to' ALL hozzáam közel
nélve 'regarding' INS velem nélve
szemben 'opposite' INS velem szemben
től 'beyond' SUP rajtam től
tőlről 'from beyond' SUP does not occur
túl 'beyond' SUP does not occur
túlra 'to beyond' SUP does not occur
túlől 'from beyond' SUP does not occur
végig 'to the end of' SUP does not occur

Some postpositions—typically postpositions which evolved relatively recently, or are still evolving, from case-marked third person singular possessive nouns such as alkalmazásával 'with the application of'—have only third person singular forms (listed below as the basic form in the first column):

Postposition Meaning Case
alkalmazásával 'with the application of' dative
folyamán 'during' (dative)
megfelelően 'in agreement with' dative
segítségével 'with the help of' dative

Postpositions do not combine with the articles of noun phrases that they govern in Hungarian.
The postpositions which do not occur in section 2.1.1 are illustrated in (802)–(816) below.

(802) Hat óra tájban fel-hív-om Kati-t.
six o'clock around up-call-DEF.1SG Kathy-ACC
'I'll call up Kathy around six o'clock.'
(803) Ilona helyett Anikó-val men-t-em mozi-ba.
Helen instead.of Anikó-INS go-PAST-INDEF.1SG movies.ILL
'I went to the movies with Anikó, instead of Ilona.'
(804) Szánalmát érzek Zoltán iránt.
  pity-ACC feel-INDEF.1SG Zoltán towards
  ‘I feel pity for Zoltán.’
(805) Melyik ország ellen harcolt Anglia?
  which country against fight-PAST.INDEF.3SG England
  ‘Which country was England fighting against?’
(806) János szerint ez jó, de szerint-em nem.
  John according.to this good but according.to-POSS.1SG not
  ‘In John’s opinion this is good, but not in my opinion.’
(807) Fiú létére Józsi sok-at sír.
  boy despite.being Joey much-ACC cry
  ‘Even though he is a boy, Joey cries a lot.’
(808) Tűz esetén az üveget ki kell törni.
  fire in.case.of the glass-ACC out need break-INF
  ‘In case of fire break glass (=the glass has to be broken).’
(809) A házát ár-on alul ve-ttük.
  the house-ACC price-SUP below buy-PAST-DEF.1PL
  ‘We bought the house below its price.’
(810) Ez-en felül nem vállalunk az áruért
  this-SUP beyond not accept-INDEF.1PL the goods-CAU
  felelősséget.
  ‘We do not accept responsibility for the goods beyond this.’
(811) A mi tanyánk a Tiszán innen van.
  the we farmhouse-POSS.1PL the Tisza-SUP this.side.of be.3SG
  ‘Our farmhouse is on this side of the Tisza river.’
(812) Mostan-tól kezdve egyedül élünk.
  now-ABL starting.from alone live-INDEF.1SG
  ‘Starting from now I’ll live alone.’
(813) Szentes-hez képest Szeged nagy város.
  Szentes-ALL compared.to Szeged big city
  ‘Compared to Szentes, Szeged is a big city.’
(814) Mostan-tól fogva barátok leszünk.
  now-ABL starting.from friend-PL be.FUT-1PL
  ‘We’ll be friends from now on.’
(815) A nagy hó ellenére László dolgozik men-t.
  the big snow despite László work-INF go-PAST.INDEF.3SG
  ‘Despite the great amount of snow, László went to work.’
Regarding Paul, this is very embarrassing.

2.1.6. Numerals and quantifiers
The Hungarian numerals used in counting are the cardinal numerals.

2.1.6.1. Cardinal numerals
Numerals are compounded in a regular fashion in Hungarian, with the exception that, while ‘ten’ and ‘twenty’ are tíz and húsz, respectively, other numerals in the teens and twenties are formed with the stems tizen- and huszon-.

All numerals are written in one word up to 2000; after that only numerals divisible by 1000 are written in one word, and the rest are hyphenated in three-digit units, e.g., kétszázhuszonháromezer-négyszázharmincegy ‘two hundred and twenty-three thousand, four hundred and thirty-one’ (223, 431).

egy
kettő
három
négy
óta
hat
hét
nyolc
kilenc
tíz
tizenegy
tizenkettő
húsz
huszonkettő
harminc
harmincegy
negyven
ötven
hatvan
hetven
nyolcvan
kilencven
száz

‘one’
‘two’
‘three’
‘four’
‘five’
‘six’
‘seven’
‘eight’
‘nine’
‘ten’
‘eleven’
‘twelve’
‘twenty’
‘twenty-one’
‘twenty-two’
‘thirty’
‘thirty-one’
‘forty’
‘fifty’
‘sixty’
‘seventy’
‘eighty’
‘ninety’
‘hundred’
százegy 'one hundred and one'
kétszáz 'two hundred'
háromszáz 'three hundred'
ezer 'thousand'
ezeregy 'one thousand and one'
kétezer 'two thousand'
kétezer-egy 'two thousand and one'
kétezer-száztizenhat 'two thousand one hundred and sixteen'
tízezer 'ten thousand'
húszszáz 'twenty thousand'
százezer 'one hundred thousand'
egymillió 'one million'
egymillió kétszázezer 'one million, two hundred thousand'
kétmillió 'two million'
milliard 'one billion (=1,000,000,000)'
bílió 'trillion (1,000,000,000,000)’ [little used]

Numerals, especially száz ‘hundred’, ezer ‘thousand’, tízezer ‘ten thousand’, százezer ‘one hundred thousand’, millió ‘million’, and milliard ‘billion (1,000,000,000,000)’, can occur in the plural and be marked for case if they refer to hundreds, thousands, etc., of people and units of currency.

(817) Ezr-ek meg-néz-t-ék a kiállítás-t.
thousand-PL PFX-see-PAST-DEF.3PL the exhibition-ACC
‘Thousands have seen the exhibition.’

(818) Az a férfi millió-k-at keres-ett az
that the man million-PL-ACC make-PAST.INDEF.3SG the
üzlet-en.
deal-SUP
‘That man made millions on the deal.’

Otherwise, numerals are marked for case when they are used in mathematical operations such as addition, subtraction, division, multiplication, etc.

(819) Ha a hat-hoz hozzá-ad-unk egy-et, az hét.
if the six-ALL to-add-INDEF.1PL one-ACC that seven
‘If we add one to six, that makes seven.’

(820) Hat-ból egy, az öt.
six-ELA one that five
‘Six minus one is five.’

(821) Hat-ban a kettő meg-van három-szor.
six-INE the two PFX-be.3SG three-MUL
‘Six divided by two is three.’
Page 343

(822) Ha a hat-ot el-oszt-juk három-mal, az kettő.
If the six-ACC PFX-divide-DEF.1PL three-INS that two
‘If we divide six by three, that’s two.’

(823) Két-szer három, az hat.
Two times three is six.
‘Two times three is six.’

2.1.6.2. Cardinal numerals as attributes
All cardinal numerals have the same forms as attributes, except for the numeral kettő ‘two’ (and other numerals compounded with it, e.g., tizenkettő ‘twelve’ and huszonkettő ‘twenty-two’). Its attributive form, két, is used when the numeral is used attributively and its head noun is expressed (although the form kettő is also sometimes used in such situations, especially when used emphatically or in spoken discourse to avoid misunderstandings due to the similarity of két and hét ‘seven’). The form kettő is used in attributive phrases when the numeral acts as a pro-form for a head noun which is not overtly expressed (825).
Attributive numerals are not inflected for case in Hungarian if they occur together with their head nouns, but they are inflected for case when they serve as pro-forms for the head nouns that are not overtly expressed.

(824) An-nak a három lány-nak szép ruhá-ja van.
That-DAT the three girl-DAT nice dress-POSS.3SG be.3SG
‘Those three girls have nice dresses.’

(825) Az-t a kettő-t kér-em.
That-ACC the two-ACC want-DEF.1SG
‘I want those two.’

2.1.6.4. Ordinal numerals
Ordinal numerals are derived from cardinals by the suffix -dik, which is connected to the stem by a linking vowel; the only exceptions are the numerals egy ‘one’ and kettő ‘two’, which have suppletive ordinal stems: első and második, respectively. Numerals compounded with egy and kettő, such as tizenegy ‘eleven’ and huszonkettő ‘twenty-two’, however, employ the regular numeral stems for ordinals: tizenegyedik ‘eleventh’ and huszon-kettedik ‘twenty-second’, respectively.
The basic ordinals are listed below.
első ‘first’
második ‘second’
harmadik ‘third’
egyedik ‘fourth’
The third person possessive forms of the ordinal numerals are used in naming dates: e.g., ötödike ‘the fifth’, május harmadika ‘the third of May’. The superessive is used in time adverbials containing dates.

(826) Április huszonhet-edik-é-n
szület-t-em.
be.born-PAST-INDEF.1SG
’I was born on April 27th.’

2.1.6.5. Other derivatives of numerals
Denominators of fractions are formed from numerals with the derivational suffix -d connected to the stem by a linking vowel. The forms of the fractions are the same as those of the ordinal numerals minus -ik (see above), except for the form for ‘two’, ketted ‘second’ (as in öt ketted ‘five seconds’). Numerators of fractions are cardinal numbers: három nyolcad ‘three-eighths’, hét kilenced ‘seven-ninths’ etc.

The names of the numbers, and also attributive adjectival forms of numerals, are derived with the derivational suffix -s/os/es/ös (see also section 2.2.3.5.1).

(827) a hat-os
the six-ADJDER
‘the number six’
Page 345

(828) a het-es busz
the seven-ADJ DER bus
‘bus number seven’

(829) egy 1987-es Honda
da 1987-ADJ DER Honda
‘a 1987 Honda’

(830) Nincs egy tíz-es-ed?
not.be.3SG a ten-ADJ DER-POSS.2SG
‘Do you have a ten (=a 10 forint coin, a $10 bill etc.)?’

Multiplicative forms of numerals are formed by attaching the multiplicative case suffix -szor/szer/ször to the cardinal numeral: egyszer ‘one time, once’, két-szor ‘two times, twice’, háromszor ‘three times’, négy-szor ‘four times’, ötször ‘five times’, etc. Such forms are used in multiplication and division (see examples (823) and (821) above), as well as to express the frequency of the occurrence of an action.

(831) Már három-szor csenget-t-em.
already three-MUL ring.bell-PAST-INDEF.1SG
‘I rang the bell three times already.’

Multiplicative forms of ordinal numerals express frequency in ‘for the second time’ types of phrases.

(832) Negy-ed-szor is csenget-t-em.
four-ORD-MUL also ring.bell-PAST-INDEF.1SG
‘I rang the bell for the fourth time, too.’

Multiplicative forms of both cardinals and ordinals can be made adjectival with the derivation suffix -i, while multiplicative forms of cardinals can also be further derived with -os/es (also see section 2.2.3.5.2).

(833) a három-szor-i csenget-és
the three-MUL-ADJ DER ring.bell-NML
‘the ringing of the bell three times’

(834) a negy-ed-szor-i csenget-és
the four-ORD-MUL-ADJ DER ring.bell-NML
‘the fourth ringing of the bell’

(835) a három-szor-os bajnok
the three-MUL-ADJ DER champion
‘the three-time champion’

For partitive numerals, see section 2.1.1.4.19.1.
Hungarian quantifiers are the following. There is a small group of closed-class quantifiers that are used only attributively with the head noun they modify or as pro-forms without it: sok ‘much, many’, kevés ‘few, little’, néhány and egynehány, both meaning ‘some (countable)’, pár and egy)pár, both meaning ‘a few’, számos ‘several’, and elég ‘enough’. (Also see sections 2.1.4.19.3–6.) As pro-forms they can be marked for case just like adjectives and numerals.

(836) Sok ember-t látt-ál vagy keves-et?
many person-ACC see-PAST-INDEF.3SG or few-ACC
‘Did you see many people or few?’

Universal and partitive pronominal quantifiers are the following:
- akárhány ‘whatever number’
- akármennyi ‘whatever amount’
- akámi ‘whatever (countable nonhumans)’
- akármilyen ‘whatever kind’
- bármennyi ‘whatever amount’
- bámi ‘whatever (countable nonhumans)’
- bármilyen ‘whatever kind’
- egyik ‘one’
- másik ‘other/another’
- minden ‘all (both count and noncount nouns)’
- mindkét ‘both’
- mind három ‘all three’
- semelyik ‘not one’
- semennyi ‘no amount’
- valahány ‘some number’
- valamelyik ‘any/either one’
- valamennyi ‘some amount’
- valamiféle ‘some kind’
- valamilyen ‘some kind’

The sets of quantifiers involving akár- and bár- are synonymous in several contexts; for details about the slight differences, see Hetzron (1991).

The quantifier egyik ‘one’ is used with sem ‘is not either’ to express ‘neither’ or ‘none (countable)’.

(837) Egyik fiú-t sem lát-n.
one boy-ACC is.not.either see-PAST-INDEF.1SG
‘I see neither/none of the boys.’
2.1.6.1. Quantifier compounds

The quantifier compounds in Hungarian are formed in a regular fashion with *vala- ‘some’, *se- ‘no’, *minden- ‘every’, *bár- ‘ever’, and *akár- ‘ever’, and the interrogative pronouns *ki ‘who’, *mi ‘what’, *hol ‘where’, *hova ‘to where’, *honnan ‘from where’, and *mikor ‘when’. The only irregular form is *minden ‘everything’, which does not contain *mi ‘what’. Forms containing *ki and *mi are marked for case.

The sets containing *akár- and *bár- are synonymous in several contexts; for a discussion of the slight differences, see Hetzron (1991).

\[
\text{akárhol} \quad \text{akárhonnan} \quad \text{akárhova} \\
\text{akárki} \quad \text{akámi} \quad \text{akámkor} \\
\text{bárhol} \quad \text{bárhonnan} \quad \text{bárhova} \\
\text{bárki} \quad \text{bámi} \quad \text{bármikor} \\
\text{minden} \quad \text{mindenhonnan} \quad \text{mindenho} \\
\text{mindenhova} \quad \text{mindenki} \quad \text{mindenkor} \\
\text{sehol} \quad \text{sehonnan} \quad \text{sehova} \\
\text{semmi} \quad \text{semmi} \quad \text{semmi} \\
\text{senki} \quad \text{valahol} \quad \text{valahonnan} \\
\text{valahova} \quad \text{valaki} \quad \text{valami} \\
\text{valamikor}
\]

- akárhol: ‘wherever’
- akárhonnan: ‘from wherever’
- akárhova: ‘to wherever’
- akárki: ‘whoever’
- akámi: ‘whatever’
- akámkor: ‘whenever’
- bárhol: ‘wherever’
- bárhonnan: ‘from wherever’
- bárhova: ‘to wherever’
- bárki: ‘whoever’
- bámi: ‘whatever’
- bármikor: ‘whenever’
- minden: ‘everything’
- mindenhonnan: ‘from everywhere’
- mindenho: ‘everywhere’
- mindenhova: ‘to everywhere’
- mindenki: ‘everybody’
- mindenkor: ‘at all times’
- seholt: ‘nowhere’
- sehonnan: ‘from nowhere’
- sehova: ‘to nowhere’
- semmi: ‘nothing’
- semmikor: ‘at no time’
- senki: ‘nobody’
- valahol: ‘somewhere’
- valahonnan: ‘from somewhere’
- valahova: ‘to somewhere’
- valaki: ‘somebody’
- valami: ‘something’
- valamikor: ‘sometime’
2.1.7. Adverbs


Adverbs of manner are of different types in Hungarian. Some are underived and uninflected, such as így ‘this way’, úgy ‘that way’, egyedül ‘alone’, veszteg ‘still’, hirtelen ‘suddenly’. Others evolved from case-marked nouns, for instance egyenest ‘straight’, vaktában ‘at random’, sutytyomban ‘secretly’, fehéren-feketén ‘in black and white’. A great number of manner adverbs are formed from adjectives marked for the modal-essive case -n/an/en: forrón ‘hotly’, drágán ‘expensively’, szomorúan ‘sadly’, szépen ‘nicely’, bátran ‘bravely’, éberen ‘watchfully’. A small number of adverbs are formed from adjectives with the modal case -lag/leg: helyeslőleg ‘approvingly’, békítőleg ‘pacifyingly’, szemrehányolag ‘disapprovingly’.

2.1.7.1. Kinds of comparison

In Hungarian the gradable adverbs are typically the ones employing adjectives with the modal-essive case.

2.1.7.1.1. Equality

Equality is expressed with the base forms of gradable adverbs.

(838) Ez az autó olyan gyors-an megy, mint a
this the car so fast-MOE go.INDEF.3SG as the
masik.
other.one

‘This car goes as fast as the other one.’

(839) Zsófia olyan szép-en énekel, mint a pacsiita.
Sophia so nice-MOE sing.INDEF.3SG as the lark

‘Sophia sings as nicely as a lark.’
2.1.7.1.2. Comparative
The comparative of gradable adverbs is formed by attaching the modalessive case ending -an/en to the comparative
form of adjectives: szebben ‘more nicely’, gyorsabban ‘faster’, lassabban ‘more slowly’, etc. (For comparative forms
of adjectives see section 2.1.4.4.2.)
(840)  Az en kutyá-m hangos-abb-an ugart, mint
the I dog-POSS.1SG loud-CMP-MOE bark.INDEF.3SG than
a tied.
the yours
‘My dog barks more loudly than yours.’

2.1.7.1.3. Superlative
The superlative of gradable adverbs is formed by attaching the modalessive case ending -an/en to the superlative
form of adjectives: legszebben ‘most nicely’, leggyorsabban ‘fastest’, leglassabban ‘most slowly’, etc. (For superlative
forms of adjectives see section 2.1.4.4.3.)
(841)  Az én kutyá-m ugar a
the I dog-POSS.3SG bark.INDEF.3SG the
leg-hangos-abb-an.
SPR-loud-CMP-MOE
‘My dog barks the loudest.’

2.1.7.1.4. Emphatic superlative
The emphatic superlative of gradable adverbs is formed by attaching the modal-essive case ending -an/en to an
emphatic superlative adjective: legeslegszebben ‘absolutely most nicely’, legesleggyorsabban ‘absolutely fastest’,
legesleglassabban ‘absolutely most slowly’, etc. (For emphatic superlative forms of adjectives see section 2.1.4.4.4.)
(842)  Az en kutyá-m ugar a
the I dog-POSS.3SG bark.INDEF.3SG the
leges-leg-hangos-abb-an.
EMS-SPR-loud-CMP-MOE
‘My dog barks absolutely the loudest.’
2.1.7.2. Degrees of quality
2.1.7.2.1. Large measure
Large measure of a quality in adverbs is expressed with the same intensifying adverbs as in the case of adjectives; see section 2.1.4.5.1.

2.1.7.2.2. Superabundance
The superabundance of a quality in adverbs is expressed with the same intensifying adverbs as in the case of adjectives; see section 2.1.4.5.2.

2.1.7.2.3. Small measure
Small measure of a quality in adverbs is expressed with the same intensifying adverbs as in the case of adjectives; see section 2.1.4.5.3.

2.1.8. Clitics
Hungarian has one clitic: the -e question particle, which is used:
(i) obligatorily in embedded yes-no questions (843)
(ii) obligatorily in yes-no echo-questions (844)
(iii) optionally, as a marker of emphasis, in nonembedded yes-no questions (845).
It is connected to its host with a hyphen in orthography.

(843) Tamás nem tud-ja, hogy otthon vol-t-am-e.
Thomas not know-DEF.3SG that at.home be-PAST-1SG-Q
‘Thomas doesn’t know whether I was at home.’

(844) Szeret-ek-e táncol-ni?
like-INDEF.1SG-Q dance-INF
‘Do I like to dance?’

(845) És ők-et meg-kérdez-t-ed-e?
and they-ACC PFX-ask-PAST-DEF.2SG-Q
‘And did you (SG) ask them?’
(emphatic)

The question clitic occupies a postverbal position when there is a verb or overt copula in the sentence (see examples above). When the copula is not expressed overtly, in the present tense third person existential copular construction, the clitic occupies the position immediately following the subject-complement.
Page 351

(846) Nem tud-öm, Zsolt boldog-e.
     not know-DEF.1SG Zsolt happy-Q
     ‘I don’t know whether Zsolt is happy.’

(847) Nem tud-öm, Zsolt orvos-e.
     not know-DEF.1SG Zsolt doctor-Q
     ‘I don’t know if Zsolt is a doctor.’

In nonstandard and dialectal Hungarian the question clitic can attach to a preverbal focussed constituent (848) or a negative particle before a preverbal focussed constituent as well (849)—such usage, however, is very strongly stigmatized as uneducated in Hungarian (Kontra 1995).

(848) Zsuzsa kérdez-t-e, hogy meg-e jön a
     Susan ask-PAST-DEF.3SG that PFX-Q come.INDEF.3SG the
     vonat.
     train
     ‘Susan asked whether the train was coming.’

(849) Zsuzsa kérdez-t-e, hogy nem-e holnap
     Susan ask-PAST-DEF.3SG that not-Q tomorrow
     jöv-ünk.
     come-INDEF.1PL
     ‘Susan asked whether it wouldn’t be tomorrow that we’d
     come.’

2.2. DERIVATIONAL MORPHOLOGY

Since Hungarian is an agglutinative language, it is small wonder that derivation has an important role in word formation processes. There are a large number of derivational suffixes, a fraction of which are completely productive; some are governed by various properties of the base, others are highly idiosyncratic. For a more complete discussion, see the relevant chapters in Tompa (1961) and Rácz (1968); for a more up-to-date presentation, cf. Kiefer (forthcoming).

Below primarily productive derivational affixes are listed in their most frequent allomorphs, usually without the epenthetic vowels necessary to resolve consonant clusters. To ascertain productivity, Papp (1969) was used.
2.2.1. Derived nouns

2.2.1.1. Nouns from nouns

A number of the devices discussed here are also used as deadjectival derivational affixes and will reoccur in the appropriate section.

2.2.1.1.1. -s

Its fundamental meaning is the essentially adjectival ‘provided with something’, from which it has come to mean (a) occupations, (b) collective nouns, and (c) nouns expressing units of measure.

(850)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Noun</th>
<th>Derivative</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>óra 'watch'</td>
<td>óra-s</td>
<td>'watchmaker'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fazék 'pot'</td>
<td>fazék-as</td>
<td>'potter'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kártya 'card'</td>
<td>kártyá-s</td>
<td>'card-player'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>autó 'car'</td>
<td>autó-s</td>
<td>'motorist'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gyümölcs 'fruit'</td>
<td>gyümölcs-ös</td>
<td>'orchard'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tölgy 'oak'</td>
<td>tölgy-és</td>
<td>'oak-wood'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>forint 'forint coin'</td>
<td>forint-os</td>
<td>'1 forint coin'</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

2.2.1.1.2. -ság/ség

It is in general applied to derive abstract nouns. When added to nouns, it can also form collective nouns.

(851)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Noun</th>
<th>Derivative</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>vezér 'leader'</td>
<td>vezér-ség</td>
<td>'leadership'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>igazgató 'director'</td>
<td>igazgató-ság</td>
<td>'directorate'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>katona 'soldier'</td>
<td>katona-ság</td>
<td>'army'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hegy 'mountain'</td>
<td>hegy-ség</td>
<td>'mountain range'</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

2.2.1.1.3. -ász/ész

This is almost exclusively used to produce names of occupation.

(851)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Noun</th>
<th>Derivative</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>jog 'law'</td>
<td>jog-ász</td>
<td>'lawyer'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kert 'garden'</td>
<td>kert-ész</td>
<td>'gardener'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>seb 'wound'</td>
<td>seb-ész</td>
<td>'surgeon'</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

2.2.1.1.4. -at/et

When added to the bases ending in the above mentioned affix -ász/ész, it serves to denote an institution or a profession.
2.2.1.1.5. Diminutive derivational affixes

Diminutive suffixes do not differ in meaning, though they can select their bases according to phonological and lexical properties.

-ka/ke can be added to stems ending in liquids, nasals and the vowels ó, ő, and i.

(854) asztal ‘table’ asztal-ka ‘little table’
     Péter ‘Peter’ Peter-ke ‘little Peter’

-cska/cske is the general diminutive suffix; it can occur on most bases listed above in addition to any others.

(855) asztal ‘table’ asztal-ocska ‘little table’

-i is the general diminutive for names; it is added to truncated stems, the morphophonology of which is an interesting issue.

(856) Full Diminutive
     Ferenc  Fer-i
     Gábor   Gab-i
     Mária   Mar-i

-i is also added to a limited class of nouns of “familiar” usage, such as names of institutions or school subjects, etc.

(857) Full Diminutive
     óv-oda  ‘care-NML, nursery’  ov-i  —
     mikrofon ‘microphone’  mik-i  ‘mike’
     csokoládé ‘chocolate’  csok-i  ‘choc(cy)’

2.2.1.1.6. -ék

It is usually added to nouns denoting persons—such as proper names or names of kinship or occupation—to form plural nouns meaning a group of people associated with the person referred to by the base. When on a common noun, it must be used with the definite article to guarantee referentiality. Its status as a derivational affix is questionable; it may well qualify as an inflectional affix.
Page 354

(858) Anna Anna (first name)
órás ‘watchmaker’
apá-m ‘father-1SG’
Anná-ék ‘Anna and her family/friends/etc.’
az örés-ék ‘the watchmaker and his/her family/friends/etc.’
(az) apám-ék ‘my father and his friends/family/etc.’

2.2.1.1.7. -né
This completely productive affix marks the female spouse of the person denoted by the base (it comes from the noun nő ‘woman’, still used in compounds), but has no independent status, which is why grammars treat it as an affix. The two sometimes differentiate, for example, female members of a profession from the wife of a male practitioner, as in orvosnő ‘female physician’ vs. orvos-né ‘(male) doctor’s wife’, gróf-nő ‘countess by birth’ vs. gróf-né ‘countess by marriage’. The form can be used in referring to, as well as (in some registers) addressing, people.

(859) Kovács ‘Kovács (surname)’ Kovács-né ‘Mrs. Kovács’

2.2.1.1.8. -ista
Although low on the productivity scale, this suffix, which has been “naturalized” from its Latin source, produces names of occupation.

(860) zongora ‘piano’
gimnázium ‘secondary school’
futball ‘football’
zongor-ista ‘pianist’
gimnáz-ista ‘student in secondary school’
futball-ista ‘football player’

2.2.1.2. Nouns from verbs
2.2.1.2.1. -as/és
This is the most productive deverbative affix, forming both process and result nominals of any verb (excepting auxiliaries only). It is this form that is used in action nominalizations, which preserve the argument structure of the verb.

(861) a. olt ‘extinguish’ olt-ás ‘extinguishing’
kér ‘request’ kér-és ‘requesting, request’
b. el-olt ‘PFX-extinguish (perfective)’
Page 355

Since action nominalization makes use of the possessive construction (see 1.10), in which there is only one slot (viz., for the possessor) open for noninherently case-marked constituents, this position is regularly occupied by subjects of intransitive verbs and objects of transitive verbs. Arguments with inherent cases (including the dative) are preserved usually in a quasi-adjectival or attributive construction formed by means of való ‘being’.

(862) a. a ló fut-ás-a
   the horse run-NML-POSS
   ‘the running of the horse’

b. a vadász le-lőv-és-e
   the hunter down-shoot-NML-POSS
   ‘the shooting of the hunter’
   (Patient/*Agent)

(863) a. a könyv Anná-nak való fel-olas-ás-a
   the book Anna-DAT being PFX-read-NML-POSS
   ‘the reading of the book to Anna’

b. Péter London-ból való távoz-ás-a
   Peter London-ELA being leave-NML-POSS
   ‘Peter’s departure from London’

2.2.1.2.2. -ó/ő

Another highly productive affix. Its form is identical to the one deriving active (present) participles and adjectives from verbs. It marks (a) the agent or (b) the regular location of the action.

(864) a. olvas ‘read’ olvas-ó ‘reader’
    nyomoz ‘detect’ nyomoz-ő ‘detective’

b. ebédel ‘have dinner’ ebédl-ő ‘dining room’
    olvas ‘read’ olvas-ő ‘reading room’
2.2.1.2.3. -at/et
Usually added to transitive verbs, it marks the result of the action. It is no longer productive on intransitive verbs.
(865) olvas ‘read’ olvas-at ‘reading, sense’
      idéz ‘quote’ idéz-et ‘quotation’

2.2.1.2.4. -mány/mény
This is another, though less frequently applied, affix producing result nominals from transitive verbs.
(866) olvas ‘read’ olvas-mány ‘reading matter’
      bővít ‘extend’ bővít-mény ‘complement’

2.2.1.3. Nouns from adjectives
The affix -ság/ség appears to be the only productive derivational device in this group; here, too, it signifies (a) abstract properties or (b) states.
(867) a. hasonló ‘similar’ hasonló-ság ‘similarity’
      erős ‘strong’ erős-ség ‘strength’
      beteg ‘ill, sick’ beteg-ség ‘illness, sickness’
      ijedt ‘frightful’ ijedt-ség ‘fright’

2.2.1.4. Nouns from adverbs
Although a few nouns are derived from adverbs—that is, postpositional nouns, such as dél-után ‘noon-after=afternoon [N]’ or postpositions, e.g., helyett-es ‘instead-AFX=deputy’, felett-es ‘above-AFX=superior’, ellenség ‘against-AFX=enemy’, since postpositions are a closed class, and, by all standards, these derivations are idiosyncratic—this group can be said to be unproductive.

2.2.1.5. Nouns from numerals
Numerals underlie nouns signifying the number itself or a person or persons in groups characterized by the cardinal or the ordinal numeral.
(868) a. négy ‘four’ négy-es ‘the number four’
      tiz ‘ten’
      tiz-es ‘the number ten, tenner (currency unit)’
    b. hat ‘six’ (a) hat-ok ‘(the) six-PL, the six’
    c. negy-edik ‘four-th’ negy-edik-es ‘fourth-grader’
2.2.2. Derived verbs

2.2.2.1. Verbs from nouns

It is important to note that derivation proper applies suffixes exclusively and that the resulting items are process or stative verbs. Momentary or perfective verbs are produced from the latter by prefixing them with one or more of the several verbal prefixes available, as is illustrated below.

Verbs are given in their base form, which is the third person singular, and glosses for verbs are given in the full form of the infinitive wherever forms are not unequivocal.

2.2.2.1.1. -z

It carries a sense of (a) ‘provide with N’, (b) ‘use N in some action’, (c) ‘take N as a means of traveling’, (d) ‘produce N’, (e) ‘call someone N’, (f) ‘deprive of N’, (g) ‘take part in N’. Intransitive forms often have the -ik reflexive or intransitive ending. (Transitive/intransitive verbs are indicated by the corresponding subscripts.)

(869)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Noun</th>
<th>Base Form</th>
<th>Infinitive</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>keret</td>
<td>keret-ezT</td>
<td>‘to frame’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>radio</td>
<td>rádió-zikI</td>
<td>‘listen to the radio’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>autó</td>
<td>autó-zikI</td>
<td>‘drive a car’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fal</td>
<td>fál-azl</td>
<td>‘build a wall’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bácsi</td>
<td>bácsi-2T</td>
<td>‘call x “uncle”’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>csont</td>
<td>csont-ozT/I</td>
<td>‘take bones out’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ülés</td>
<td>ülés-ezikI</td>
<td>‘have a session’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Note perfective versions, e.g., be-keretez ‘in-frame=frame’ or ki-csontoz ‘out-bone=take out bones (of meat)’.

2.2.2.1.2. -l

It, too, can mean (a) ‘provide with N’, (b) ‘use N’, but also (c) ‘works as/is an N’, among other (less frequent) uses.

(870)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Noun</th>
<th>Base Form</th>
<th>Infinitive</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>talp</td>
<td>talp-aiT</td>
<td>‘put a sole on’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kasza</td>
<td>kaszá-IT/I</td>
<td>‘to scythe’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>szónok</td>
<td>szónek-olI</td>
<td>‘give speeches/orations’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tank</td>
<td>tank-olI</td>
<td>‘put fuel in tank’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
This uniform transitive suffix is a version of the deadjectival affix -it (see section 2.2.2.3.1.), and has the sense of 'create an N, make x into N'.

(871) park 'park' park-osít 'create parks'
bála 'bale' bála-sit 'put x in bales'

2.2.2.1.4. -(s)kodik/(s)ködik
The intransitive ending means 'work/behave as/is an N', sometimes adding a disapproving tint, as in the last two derivations in the list below.

(872) szónok 'orator' szónok-oskodik 'work as an orator'
elnök 'chairperson' elnök-ösködik 'is chairperson'
tanár 'teacher' tanár-kodik 'work as a teacher'
atya 'father' atyá-skodik 'behave like a father'
hős 'hero' hős-ködik 'behave like a hero, brag'

Although it can in principle be claimed that in case of the longer version the base is a denominal adjective ending in -s (see section 2.2.3.1.1), the last examples have no adjectival bases, and the alleged adjectival bases of the others do not easily lend themselves to being interpreted as such. It may be the case that phonological conditioning underlies the choice of the allomorphs.

2.2.2.1.5. -(iz)ál
When the base is foreign, most often Latin or Latinized, this is the affix used, although purists have long discouraged speakers from applying it. The longer form is in part phonologically conditioned, probably due to the source language: in most cases stems end in liquids, nasals, or alveolar sounds. The mechanism of truncation is not discussed here, but note that several seemingly derived forms have no nominal or any other bases, since in Hungarian all (new) verbs must have verbal morphology, i.e., endings that unequivocally show them to be verbs. Since the suffix is usually transitive, only intransitive verbs are indicated.

(873) a. litográfia 'lithograph' litograf-ál 'to lithograph'
disszidens 'emigrant' disszid-ál 'emigrate'
kodifikáció 'codification' kodifik-ál 'codify'
b. atom 'atom' atom-izál 'atomize'
    bagatell 'trifle' bagatell-izál 'make look like a trifle'
    modern 'modern' modern-izál 'modernize'
    humor 'humor' humor-izál 'to joke'
    politika 'politics' polit-izáli 'be engaged in politics'
2.2.2.2. Verbs from verbs

2.2.2.2.1. Possibility/permission

Epistemic and deontic modalities corresponding to English *can* and *may* are expressed by the affixes -hat/het, which any verb can take. The preservation of the -ik form after the affix is limited to overly purist or literary uses.

(874) üt 'hit' üt-het 'can/may hit'
all 'stand' áll-hat 'can/may stand'
hull 'fall' hull-hat 'can/may fall'
történ-ik 'happen' történ-het(ik) 'can/may happen'

It is generally regarded as a derivational affix, although it can only occur if the verb is finite, as was alluded to in 1.1.2.2.6.1–7. In other words, since in contrast to other deverbal affixes it does not form bases for further derivation (though one apparent exception is noted below in 2.2.3.1), it is an inflectional rather than a derivational ending.

(875) üt 'hit'
üt-sz 'hit-2SG=you hit'
üt-és 'hit-NML=a hit'
üt-ni 'hit-INF=to hit'
üt-het-ett 'hit-POSS-PAST—she may have hit'
üt-het-sz 'hit-POSS-2SG=you can hit'
*üt-het-éss 'hit-POSS-NML'
*üt-het-ni 'hit-POSS-INF'

2.2.2.2. Causative

As is expected in an agglutinative language, causative forms are produced by a set of suffixes -at/et or -tat/tet; most monosyllabic verbs take the former, the rest the latter.

(876) ír 'write' ír-at 'have X write/written'
üül 'sit' üül-tet 'to seat'
olvas 'read' olvas-tat 'have someone read'

As regards the syntax of causatives, the causative of intransitives has the subject of the base form in their objects. The causative of transitive verbs has the subject in instrumental case and preserves the accusative of the object. Of course, if the transitive verb has an intransitive use as well, the pattern is the same as with intransitive verbs.
Page 360

(877) a. Péter ül.
Peter sits
‘Peter is sitting.’
b. Anna ül-tet-t Péter-t.
Anna sit-CAUS-3SG Peter-ACC
‘Anna is seating Peter.’
c. Péter köny-ét olvas.
Peter book-ACC reads
‘Peter is reading a book.’
d. Anna könyv-ét olvas-tat Péter-rel
Anna book-ACC read-CAUS Peter-INS
‘Anna has Peter read a book.’

2.2.2.2.3. Frequentative
There used to be several frequentative derivational affixes, most of which were built around the morpheme -g-; but only -gat/get has remained fully productive today.

(878) olvas ‘read’ olvas-gat ‘read from time to time’
főz ‘cook’ főz-öget ‘cook from time to time’
üt ‘hit’ üt-öget ‘hit repeatedly’
lép ‘step’ lép-öget ‘step repeatedly’

Note that wherever the verb takes the earlier, and no longer productive, form(s) of the frequentative affix, lexical blocking prevents it from being affixed by the productive morpheme.

(879) szalad ‘run’ szalad-gál ‘run around’ *szalad-gat
hull ‘fall’ hull-dogál ‘be falling’ *hull-ogat
hajl-ik ‘bend’ hajl-adozik ‘bend repeatedly’ *hajl-ogat

One peculiar device to express repeated actions, though one that does not make use of derivational affixes, is the reduplication of the preverbal prefix (see 2.2.6.3.5).

(880) meg-áll ‘PFX-stop, come to a halt’
ki-megy ‘out-go, go out, leave’
meg-meg-áll ‘stop repeatedly’
ki-ki-megy ‘go out repeatedly’

2.2.2.2.4. Reflexive
It is possible to have lexically produced reflexive forms of verbs, which are often middle or intransitive, rather than reflexive verbs proper,
especially if the base is transitive. The productivity of the suffix is questionable: -ődik/ődik is often found, but its interpretation as a reflexive is doubtful, while -közik/kezik/közik and -kodik/kedik/ködik, which are certainly reflexive affixes, are hardly productive.

(881) ismétel ‘repeat’ ismétl-ődik ‘repeat itself, be repeated’
út ‘hit’ út-ődik ‘hit against something (nonagentive)’
érez ‘feel’ érz-ődik ‘be felt’
törül ‘wipe’ törül-közik ‘wipe/dry self’
mos ‘wash’ mosa-kodik ‘wash self’

2.2.2.2.5. Passive
Interestingly, although morphological passive as such is all but obsolete in current Hungarian, the affixes themselves are not unproductive, that is, it is possible to derive new forms, even if they appear to be stilted and largely impossible in other than the third person. The affixes are the -ik suffixed forms of the causative, i.e., -atik/etik or -tatik/tetik, with the same distribution of use as above. Naturally, only transitive verbs undergo the process. This passive is again suspect of being an inflectional, rather than a derivational ending; but, due to its very limited productivity, tests are difficult to execute.

(882) ír ‘write’ ír-atik ‘be written’
gépel ‘type’ gépel-tetik ‘be typed’

2.2.2.3. Verbs from adjectives
2.2.2.3.1. -ít
Related to the affix -sít in 2.2.2.1.3, this one produces transitive verbs meaning ‘make something ADJ’.

(883) szép ‘beautiful’ szép-it ‘beautify’
kemény ‘hard’ kemény-it ‘make hard’
bolond ‘crazy’ bolond-it ‘make crazy’
erős ‘strong’ erős-it ‘strengthen’

2.2.2.3.2. -odik/edik/ödik
The intransitive counterpart of the above ending means ‘become ADJ’. In contrast with -it, it is not the only one in use in this sense, as seen further below. Most adjectives derived by -s, such as erős-s ‘strength-AFX’, take this affix.

< previous page  page_361  next page >
2.2.2.3.4. -kodik/kedik/kodik
This suffix is clearly related to its denominal counterpart, and has the meaning ‘behave as if s/he was ADJ/behave in an ADJ way’.

(885) kemény ‘tough’ kemény-kedik ‘behave as if s/he was tough’
erős ‘strong’ erős-ködik ‘behave as if s/he was strong’
lapos ‘flat’ lapos-odik ‘become flat’

2.2.2.3.5. -ul/ül
The other, less productive, version of the above intransitive suffix can no longer be added to derived adjectives.

(886) szép ‘beautiful’ szép-ül ‘become beautiful’
bolond ‘crazy’ bolond-ul ‘become crazy’
béna ‘lame’ ben-ul ‘become lame’

2.2.3. Derived adjectives
2.2.3.1. Adjectives from nouns
2.2.3.1.1. -s
This is one of the most frequent simple affixes, meaning ‘provided with N’, ‘like N’. It is the same as the one deriving nouns from nouns in 2.2.1.1.1.

(887) a. szerencse ‘luck’ szerencsé-s ‘lucky’
erő ‘strength’ erő-s ‘strong’
hatalom ‘power’ hatalm-as ‘powerful’
függöny ‘curtain’ függöny-ös ‘having curtains’
kažetta ‘cassette’ kažetta-s ‘having cassettes’
b. ezüst ‘silver’ ezüst-ös ‘silvery’
űveg ‘glass’ üveg-és ‘glassy’

This suffix allows its nominal base optionally to consist of an adjective/ numeral+noun construction.

(888) rövid függöny ‘short curtain’
két kažetta ‘two cassettes’
rövid függöny-ös ‘with short curtains’
két kažetta-s ‘with two cassettes’
Page 363

In another use, -s is added to expressions of time and converts them into prenominal attributes.

(889) a. három óra-kor
    three hour-at
    ‘at three o’clock’

   b. a három órá-s (előadás)
      the three hour-AFX show
      ‘the three o’clock show’

   c. a harminc-öt év-és háború
      the thirty-five year-AFX war
      ‘the thirty-five-year war’

2.2.3.1.2. -(j)ú/ű

This affix is much like English -ed in that it requires adjective/ numeral+noun constructions as its base, giving rise to a core case of bracketing paradoxes. In the simple instances, the suffix is added to inalienable possessions, such as parts of the body, in contrast to the suffix -s above, which can be used only on alienable possessions.

(890) láb ‘leg’ hosszú láb-ű ‘long-legged’
    fej ‘head’ három fej-ű ‘three-headed’
    haj ‘hair’ rövid haj-ű ‘short-haired’

What makes this affix even more problematic is the fact that the adjective can be a full adjectival phrase including intensifiers or comparative phrases. Since the affix -s is incapable of taking anything more complex than a single adjective, in such phrasal constructions this affix can be used with alienable possessions as well.

(891) a. nagyon rövid haj ‘very short hair’
    b. nagyon rövid haj-ű ‘with very short hair’
    c. Anná-é-nál rövid-ebb haj
       Anna-POSS-ADE short-CMP hair
       ‘hair shorter than Anna’s’
    d. Anná-é-nál rövid-ebb haj-ű
       ‘with hair shorter than Anna’s’

(892) a. három-nál keves-ebb lámpa
    three-ADE few-CMP light
    ‘lights fewer than three’
Page 364

b. három-nál keves-ebb lámpá-jú
   'with lights fewer than three'

2.2.3.1.3. -i

This is another affix of high frequency, generally meaning 'belonging to/from/in/...N', and in particular attaches to
(a) placenames, (b) names of institutions or locations, (c) nouns expressing professions, (d) personal relations, (e)
time or (f) abstract notions.

(893)
a. Budapest 'Budapest' budapest-i 'from/in/...Budapest'
   Anglia 'England' anglia-i 'of England'

b. egyetem 'university' egyetem-i 'of (a/the) university'
   bank 'bank' bank-i 'of (a/the) banking'
   mező 'field' meze-i 'of (a/the) field'

c. orvos 'doctor' orvos-i 'medical'
   katona 'soldier' katona-i 'military'

d. anya 'mother' anya-i 'motherly'
   barát 'friend' barát-i 'friendly'

e. tegnap 'yesterday' tegnap-i 'yesterday’s'
   május 'May' május-i 'of May'

f. gazdaság 'economy' gazdaság-i 'economic'
   zene 'music' zene-i 'musical'

This suffix, too, has an additional use when applied to complex expressions of time, in part similar to -s above in
2.2.3.1.1, but in part different, as seen below.

(894)
a. három óra-kor
   three clock-at
   'at three o’clock'

b. a három óra-i (előadás)
   the three clock-AFX show
   'the three o’clock show'

c. harminc-öt év-i távollét
   thirty-five year-AFX absence
   'thirty-five-year absence'
The same fully productive suffix is used to form denominal and deadjectival privative adjectives. See also the similar deverbative suffix in 2.2.3.2.

(895) könyv ‘book’ könyv-telen ‘bookless’
toll ‘feather’ toll-atlan ‘featherless’
óra ‘watch’ óra-tlan ‘without watches’
komoly ‘serious’ komoly-talan ‘lacking seriousness’

2.2.3.1.5. -nyi
This invariable suffix forms adjectives of measure out of any noun that can be understood as a unit of measure, whether permanent or occasional. Numerals can be used as counters, and in spite of the glosses the construction can be used predicatively as well as attributively.

(896) marok ‘hand’ (egy) marok-nyi ‘(a) handful’
láda ‘crate’ (három) ládá-nyi ‘(three) crates of…’
polc ‘shelf’ (négy) polc-nyi ‘four shelves of…’

2.2.3.1.6. -szerű and -szerű-tlen
This affix comes from a full word szer ‘tool’ affixed as in 2.2.3.1.1 above, meaning ‘like N’. The additional ending -tlen provides the occasional negative counterpart. This is the only such affix listed here, because other possible candidates do not behave as adjectives in every respect, i.e., they cannot have intensifies, a comparative degree form and/or are used only attributively.

(897) könyv ‘book’ könyv-szerű(tlen) ‘(un)like a book’
radio ‘radio’ rádió-szerű ‘characteristic of radios’
rádió-szerű-tlen ‘not characteristic of radios’

2.2.3.2. Adjectives from verbs
Here we will disregard the participial affixes -ő/ő (active) and -t(t) (passive), since wherever they are productive, they derive nonfinite verbs rather than adjectives, since all true adjectives derived by means of this affix are lexicalized. As before, tests to be used here examine whether or not they can occur in the predicate or can undergo further morphological processes, since the participial forms are restricted to prenominal positions and have no comparative forms, among others. For more, see 1.1.2.3.9.
2.2.3.2.1. -ható/hető

As one of the two most frequent deverbative affixes, it is equivalent to the English -able, and thus it can be attached to any transitive verb, in effect promoting their objects to subjects of the adjective derived. Some lexicalized -ható adjectives come from intransitive bases. The affix is clearly related to the permission/possibility affix -hat/het, cf. 2.2.2.2.1, but it is best regarded as an independent and simple affix, rather than one combining -hat/het and -ó/ő, in part for reasons given there, but also because, while both the possibility and the participial affixes can be attached to any verb (whether transitive or intransitive), -ható/hető is in general restricted to transitive verbs. Exceptions to this generalization are few and far between and, what is more significant, they are not productive.

(898)

a. olvas 'read' olvas-ható 'readable'
   nyit 'open' nyit-ható 'openable'
   említ 'mention' említ-hető 'mentionable'
   hozzáfér NP-hez 'access (to) NP' hozzáfér-hető 'accessible'

b. megbíz NP-ben 'trust in NP' megbíz-ható 'trustworthy'
   hozzáfér NP-hez 'access (to) NP' hozzáfér-hető 'accessible'

2.2.3.2.2. -hatatlan/hetetlen

The opposite of the above, i.e., the negation of possibility or capability, is expressed with similar restrictions as before by this complex affix, apparently composed of the potential/possibility infix -hat/het and the privative affix -atlan/etlen. Note that there are a number of idiosyncratic derivations without positive counterparts.

(899)

a. olvas 'read' olvas-hatatlan 'unreadable'
   említ 'mention' említ-hetetlen 'unmentionable'

b. megbíz 'trust' megbíz-hatatlan 'untrustworthy'
   hozzáfér 'access' hozzáfér-hetetlen 'inaccessible'

c. *él-hető 'live-AFX' *él-hetetlen 'helpless (person)'
   *nyug-ható 'rest-AFX' *nyug-hatatan 'restless'

2.2.3.2.3. -atlan/etlen

This is the negative form of the passive (or past) participle, but, unlike the participle, which cannot be used with intensifiers or predicatively, it is a true adjective. Although lexicalized forms coming from intransitive bases exist, its productive form takes only transitive verbs as bases.
The adjectives in this group have the meaning 'usually V-ing'.

(901) viszket 'itch' viszket-ős 'itchy'
kacsint 'wink' kacsint-ős 'winking'

This is a completely productive suffix, though it has an official or literary flavour. Its meaning is 'to be V-ed', thus it can be attached to transitive achievement verbs.

(902) elvégez 'carry out' elvégez-endő 'to be carried out'
kinyit 'open' kinyit-andó 'to be opened'

Adjectives from adjectives

2.2.3.3.1. -s
This affix reoccurs here meaning (a) 'more or less ADJ' when attached to root adjectives, especially those marking colors, and 'like ADJ' when added to -i-suffixed ones.

(903) a. ősz 'grey (of hair)' ősz-és 'greyish'
türkiz 'turquoise (ADJ)' türkiz-és 'turquoise-ish'
öreg 'old' öreg-és 'oldish'
b. városi 'of town' városi-as 'like townspeople'
családi 'familial' családi-as 'as in a family'
költői 'poetic' költői-és 'like poets'
üzleti 'of business' üzleti-es 'businesslike'

2.2.3.3.2. -tlan/tlen (privative)
In addition to its occurrence on adjectives derived by -szerű (see above), this negative affix can be attached to the second group of adjectives immediately above, giving the opposite sense of the base.

(904) költői 'poetic' költői-etlen 'unpoetic'
üzleti 'of business' üzleti-etlen 'unbusinesslike'
2.2.3.3. Negated adjectives

One subtype of adjectival derivation makes use of what appears to be the equivalent of a syntactic negation, since the negation word *nem* ‘not’ occurs in it. However, the process must be regarded as derivational, especially because it is restricted to adjectives, and it fills (a) the gap between the positive sense of the base form of the adjective and its privative-affixed counterpart or (b) the one created by adjectives without privative forms. (Spelling rules require spaces between the negative and the stem. Tests to show that derived adjectives are involved make use of postverbal syntactic positions, inaccessible to phrases containing syntactic negation, see 1.4.)

(905)

a. **érdekes** ‘interesting’  
   *nem érdekes* ‘not interesting’
   
   **érdek-telen** ‘uninteresting’

b. **félémes** ‘frightening’  
   *nem félémes* ‘not frightening’
   
   *félem-etlen* ‘not frightening’

c. **vonzó** ‘attractive’  
   *nem vonzó* ‘unattractive’
   
   *vonz-atlan* ‘unattractive’

Adjectives that have the form of participles (active or passive) are indistinguishable from nonfinite clauses. Note that the preverbal prefix can be separated from the verb stem.

(906)

a. **észlel-t** ‘perceive-PPRT’  
   *nem észlelt* ‘unperceived’
   
   *ír-ott* ‘write-PPRT’  
   *nem írott* ‘not read’

b. **le-ír-t** ‘PFX-write-PPRT’  
   *nem le-írt* ‘not written down’
   
   *le nem írt* ‘not written down’

It is here that mention must be made of apparently nominal derivations which in fact go back to similar negated adjectives (or attributes) converted into nouns. Nouns as such cannot undergo the process (pace E.Kiss 1994:35).

(907)

a. (a) **nem külföld-i-ek=a nem külföldi személy-ek**
   *the not abroad-AFX-PL the not foreign person-PL*
   
   *the non-foreigners* ‘non-foreign persons’

b. **a nem egyetem-ista (diáko)-k**
   *the not university-AFX student-PL*
   
   ‘non-university students’
2.2.3.4. Adjectives from adverbs

2.2.3.4.1. -i

This versatile adjectival affix can be freely attached to various (a) place and (b) time adverbs, recalling its locational and temporal senses, and (c) to postpositions, forming attributive (i.e., prenominal) adverbial phrases, cf. 1.2.5.2.7. Note that -i cannot attach to postpositions expressing direction toward some object.

(909) a. ott(an) ‘there’ ottan-i ‘of there’
bent ‘inside’ bent-i ‘of inside’
közel ‘near’ közel-i ‘near, proximate’
b. most(an) ‘now’ mostan-i ‘of now’
ma ‘today’ ma-i ‘of today’
mikor ‘when?’ mikor-i ‘of when?’
idé-n ‘this year’ ide-i ‘of this year’
c. mögött ‘behind’ mögött-i ‘behind (ATTR)’
által ‘by’ által-i ‘by (ATTR)’
mögül ‘from behind’ mögül-i ‘from behind (ATTR)’
mögé ‘to behind’ *mögé-i

(910) a. *(Péter) mögött-i ház
the Peter behind-AFX house
‘the house behind Peter’
b. a ház *(Anna) által-i felépítés-e
the house Anna by-AFX construction-POSS
‘the construction of the house by Anna’

2.2.3.4.2. -beli

This is probably an exclusively locative version of -i, attached to (a) common nouns, (b) noun phrases having locative senses, and (c) complex placenames, which cannot take the shorter -i affix. Its literal use is more restricted than that of -i, since it comes from the word bel meaning ‘inside’.

(911) a. ház ‘house’ ház-beli ‘in house’
izlés ‘taste’ izlés-beli ‘of taste’
b. ház-unk ‘house-POSS.1PL’ ház-unk-beli ‘in/from our house’
Postpositions can take the suffix -s to make adjectives, but it is suspect of not being productive, not only because postpositions are a closed class, but also because it cannot be attached to every one of them.

(912) helyett 'instead' helyett-es 'substitute'
mögött 'behind' mögött-és 'latent'
mellett 'beside' *mellett-es

2.2.3.5. Adjectives from numerals
Although numerals are a closed class in a grammatical, though not in a lexical, sense, they can be freely affixed by a few endings.

2.2.3.5.1. -s
Another use of this adjectival suffix helps numerals occur in prenominal attributive positions, whether independently or in compounds.

(913) a. hat 'six' hat-os (láda) '(crate) for six'
száz 'hundred' száz-as (köteg) '(bundle) of one hundred'

b. három 'three' hárm-as-verseny 'triple concerto'
négy 'four' négy-es-ikrek 'quadruplets'

2.2.3.5.2. -szor/szer/ször-i and -szor-os/szer-es/ször-ös
These complex affixes help express numerical frequency of occurrences in a prenominal attribute.

(914) a. hat 'six' hat-szori (kísérlet) 'a sixth-time (attempt)'
b. öt 'five' öt-szörös (elnök) 'five-time (president)'

2.2.4. Derived adverbs

2.2.4.1. Adverbs from nouns
No adverbs are productively derived from nouns, although a few affixes generally classified in the Hungarian literature as case suffixes may be regarded as adverbial derivative endings. Examples are the non-harmonizing -ként 'as' and -kor 'at (the hour)'. Note that both can undergo
Page 371

further derivation, notably by the adjectivalizer -i, corroborating the view of regarding them as derivative affixes. The true derivative affix -lag/leg is also added in a few lexicalized cases.

(915) a. orvos-ként (dolgozott).
   ‘doctor as (he-worked)’
   ‘(He worked) as a doctor.’

b. négy-kor/négy óra-kor (érkezett)
   four-at/four clock-at arrived.3SG
   ‘he arrived at four/at four o’clock’

c. név-leg ‘name-AFX=nominally’
   tett-leg ‘action-AFX=physically’

2.2.4.2. Adverbs from verbs
As mentioned in 1.1.2.4.3, in connection with nonfinite adverbial clauses, the affix -va/ve serves to form so-called adverbial participles or converbs from verbs, which are usually rendered as present or past participles in English, but a number of them behave as true adverbs, although they are highly suspect of being lexicalized.

(916) a. áll-va ‘stand-ing’
   meglep-ve ‘surpris-ed’

b. fordít-va ‘turn-SCVB=conversely’
   kivé-ve ‘out.take-SCVB=excepting’

2.2.4.3. Adverbs from adjectives
The only undoubtedly productive derivation of adverbs is from adjectives.

2.2.4.3.1. -an/en
This suffix (and its lexically restricted allomorph -ul/ül) can be added to almost all adjectives, whether root or derived, including even comparative and superlative forms. The only exceptions are adjectives ending in -i, but relational and abstract adjectives in -i can take the adverbial suffix. The privative affix -tlan/tlen (and its allomorphs) can only take -ul/ül, which is why the latter is listed as a productive affix.

(917) a. szép ‘beautiful’ szép-en ‘beautifully’
    alap-os ‘thorough’ alapos-an ‘thoroughly’
Page 372

b. gyors-abb ‘quick-er’ gyors-abb-an ‘quicker (ADV)’
    alapos-abb ‘more thorough’ alapos-abb-an ‘more thoroughly’

c. anya-i ‘motherly’ anyai-an ‘in a motherly way’
    zene-i ‘musical’ zenei-en ‘musically’

d. rossz ‘bad’ rossz-ul ‘badly’
    rút ‘ugly’ rút-ul ‘in an ugly way’

e. alap-talan ‘unfounded’ alap-talan-ul ‘without reason’
    olvas-atlan ‘unread’ olvas-atlan-ul ‘without reading’

2.2.4.3.2. -ul/ül

When added to adjectives denoting languages, -ul/ül derives adverbs meaning ‘(speaking, understanding, etc.) in that language’. Here even adjectives ending in -i can serve as bases.

(918) angol ‘English’ angol-ul ‘in English’
    malta-i ‘Maltese’ malta-i-ul ‘in Maltese’

2.2.4.3.3. -lag/leg

This suffix, whose meaning is basically the same as that of -an/en, is spreading in its use, and is attached to the same adjectives ending in -i that can have adverbial forms or to those suffixed by -ú/ű, and also to bases in -ó/ő, originally the suffix of the active/present participle.

(919) egyhang-ú-lag ‘unanim-ous-ly’
    kép-i-leg ‘picture-ATTR-AFX=pictorially’
    gazdaság-i-lag ‘econom-ical-ly’
    visszamen-ő-leg ‘return-APRT-AFX=retroactively’

Sometimes some difference is maintained or claimed to exist between the -an/en and the -lag/leg forms of the adverb, cf. egyhangú-an ‘monotonously’.

2.2.6. Complex and derived postpositions

2.2.6.1–2. The formation of complex and derived postpositions

Since Hungarian does not apply conversion in its derivational processes, simple derived postpositions cannot be a productive class. Moreover, since in contrast to simple or “real” postpositions (cf. 1.2.4), the postpositions discussed here always govern oblique cases, the types that are found are given below in a uniform group.
2.2.6.1–2.2. Postpositional formations

There are no complex postpositions constructed of two or more postpositions in present-day Hungarian, although a number of postpositions and case suffixes derive from such constructions. The highest degree of complexity a postpositional phrase can exhibit is an (oblique) case suffix on a phrase headed by a “real” postposition, cf. 1.2.4.4.

(920) a ház-on túl-ról
the house-SUP beyond-DEL
‘from beyond the house’

Another group of complex postpositions goes back to a possessive-marked postposition ending in an oblique case suffix, which thus is reclassified as, or converted into, a noun.

(921) a felfedezés ellen-é-re
the discovery against-POSS-SUB
‘in spite of the discovery’

2.2.6.1–2.2. Nominal formations

The majority of simple postpositions derive from (originally possessive and) locative-marked nouns, cf. kör-ül ‘circle-AFX=around’, mell-ett ‘breast-AFX=beside’. It is therefore not surprising to see that most new or transitional postpositions arise from possessive constructions. The first group below illustrates items “higher” on the postposition scale, with their literal meanings practically lost, while the second group contains items regarded as more nominal or construction-like, since they can be interpreted in their literal senses. Note that the “longer” dative possessive construction is possible all through.

(922) a. Anna rész-é-re
Ann part-POSS-SUP
lit. ‘onto Anna’s part=for Anna’
b. a felfedezés(-nek a) rév-é-n
the discovery-DAT the ferry-POSS-SUP
‘through/owing to the discovery’

(923) a. hajó segítség-é-vel
ship help-POSS-INS
lit. ‘with the help of a ship=by means of a ship’
b. Szeged irány-a-ban/ba
Szeged direction-POSS-INE/ILL
‘in the direction of Szeged/toward Szeged’
Page 374

2.2.6.1-2.3. Verbal formations
The postpositional constructions in this class come from participles, in particular converbs in -va/ve.

(924) a. e pillanat-tól kezd-ve/fog-va
   from this moment
   begin-SCVB/begin-SCVB
   ‘from this moment’

b. három or a múl-va
   three hour pass-SCVB
   ‘after/in three hours’

c. az ügy-re néz-ve
   the matter-SUP look-SCVB
   ‘as regards the matter’

2.2.6.1-2.4. Adjectival formations
Since adjectives can be suffixed for manner adverbial functions, postposition-like derivatives are not impossible to find. A frequent source of such postposition-forming processes is by suffixing an active participle, as in the (c) example below.

(925) a. Péter-hez hasonló-an
   Peter-ALL similar-ADV
   ‘similarly/like Peter’

b. Anná-hoz méltó-(a)n
   Anna-ALL worthy-ADV
   ‘(as) worthy of Anna’

c. az igények-nek megfelel-ő-en
   the demands-DAT correspond-APRT-ADV
   ‘corresponding to the demands’

2.2.6.3. Compound morphology
As is to be expected, compounds come in two types: exocentric and endocentric. The former are unpredictable, idiosyncratic, and in general unproductive (but see also 2.2.6.3.5), while the latter are as a rule right-headed. Note that short compounds are written as single words without
hyphens or spaces between constituents according to current Hungarian orthography. Long compounds or
exocentric compounds that have inflection on both constituents are spelled with a hyphen.

(926) a. nyak-ig-láb ‘neck-TER-leg=long legs’
   kék-szakáll ‘blue-beard’
   hir-név ‘news-name=fame’
   fúr-farag ‘drill-carve=engaged in related manual work’
   b. hó-fehér ‘snow-white=white as snow’
   hó-kotró ‘snow-plower’
   kis-madár ‘little-bird’

In this section, we will follow Kiefer’s (1992b, 1993) analyses.

2.2.6.3.1. Compound nouns

2.2.6.3.1.1. Noun+noun The two subtypes in this subgroup are distinguished according to whether (a) the head is
derived from a verb, inheriting and satisfying one of its arguments in the compound, or (b) it is a noun with no
(apparent) argument structure.

(927) a. levél-[ír-ás] ‘letter-writ-ing’
   gyerek-[ellát-ás] ‘child-car-ing=child-care’
   darázs-[csip-és] ‘wasp-bit-ing=wasp sting’
   hamu-[tart-ó] ‘ash-hold-er=ashtray’
   újság-[ír-ó] ‘news-writ-er=journalist’
   arc-kép-[festő] ‘portrait-paint-er’
   b. tök-mag ‘pumpkin-seed’
   szén-bánya ‘coal-mine’
   arc-kép ‘face-image=portrait’

Whereas objects (as in levél-ír-ás above) regularly occur in compounds formed of deverbal nominals, subject
arguments (as in darázs-[csip-és]) are generally not allowed in a number of languages. In Hungarian both
intransitive and transitive verbs may underlie compounds containing the subject of the corresponding verb in the
nonhead position (or “subject compounds” for short). In the examples below, we will show (a) compounds formed of
the transitive counterparts of intransitive verbs, as well as (b) an alternative compound formed with the object-
argument in the nonhead position, wherever available.
In Kiefer's analysis, it is not subjects, or Agents in general, but intentional "Actors" that are forbidden to fill the nonhead positions of these subject compounds. Moreover, in addition to objects (whether Theme or Patient), as in the first column below, instruments are also possible in nonhead positions. The following illustrate.

a. fal-festés 'wall-painting' olaj-festés 'oil-painting'
   haj-festés 'hair-dyeing' zománc-festés 'enamel-painting'
b. gyomor-mérgezés 'stomach-poisoning'
   gomba-mérgezés 'mushroom-poisoning'
   patkány-mérgezés 'rat-poisoning'
   gáz-mérgezés 'gas-poisoning'

As regards the compounds corresponding to English 'er' nominals, they can contain the Theme/Patient but never the Agent or the Instrument argument of the verb in the nonhead position, as is illustrated below.

a. gyomor-mérgező 'stomach-poisoner'
   *gomba-mérgező 'mushroom-poisoner'
   *patkány-mérgező 'rat-poisoner'
   *gáz-mérgező 'gas-poisoner'

2.2.6.3.1.2. Verb+noun Apart from fossilized compounds like lát-cső ‘see-tube=field glasses’, lép-cső ‘step-tube=staircase’, verbs cannot occur in the nonhead position of compounds.

2.2.6.3.1.3. Adjective+noun This is a fully productive type of compounding. One subtype contains a lexical adjective in the nonhead position, whether (a) root or (b) derived.
Page 377

(931) a. zöld-hályog ‘green-cataract; glaucoma’
   kék-festés ‘blue-dyeing’
   magas-ház ‘tall-house=high-rise’
   gyors-vonat ‘fast-train’

b. [kép-es]-könyv ‘picture-book’
   [érő-s]-paprika ‘hot-pepper’
   [ég-i]-test ‘heaven-ly-body=planet’
   [ház-i]-asszony ‘house-AFX-wife’

In the other subtype the adjective is in fact an active participle (ending in -ó/ő), modifying the head noun much as it does in a prenominal nonfinite clause (cf. 1.1.2.3.9), with a variety of semantic relations, such as agent, instrument, location.

(932) a. takarító-nő ‘cleaning-woman=charwoman’
   hűtő-szekrény ‘cooling-box=refrigerator’

b. evező-lapát ‘rowing-shovel=oar’
   belépő-jegy ‘entering-ticket=ticket for admission’

(933) a. ház-hoz szállít
   house-ALL deliver
   ‘deliver (to houses)’

b. [ház-hoz]-szállít-ás
   house-ALL-deliver-NML
   ‘house delivery’

2.2.6.3.14. Adverb+noun All apparent examples for adverb+noun compounds are actually derived from complex adverb+verb compounds, such as illustrated below.

2.2.6.3.2. Compound verbs

2.2.6.3.2.1. Noun+verb Nouns unmarked for cases do not productively combine with verbs, thus no compounds are possible of this kind. However, case-marked “bare” nouns (but not noun phrases) occur in an immediately preverbal position, which, together with a number of semantic considerations, has led some researchers, most notably Kiefer (1991, 1992b), to suppose that accusative-marked nouns form compounds with their verbs.
Since, however, accusative is a truly syntactic (or “structural”) case, it is difficult to see how it could be assigned in
the lexical process of compound formation. Others, in particular E.Kiss (1987, 1994), argue that the constructions in
question arise through a syntactic operation of object incorporation, which is corroborated by the absence of nominal
compounds containing accusative-marked nonheads (cf. 2.2.6.3.1.1).

2.2.6.3.2.2. Verb+verb
Unproductive, exocentric compounds are the only possible examples, e.g., súg-búg
‘whisper-murmur=talk in a low voice incessantly’. Note that both verbs are inflected and that the hyphen between
them is required by spelling rules.

2.2.6.3.2.4. Adverb+verb
This is a fully productive type of compounding, where verbs take postpositions/adverbs
or (oblique) case-marked nouns (whether in literal or idiomatic senses) as nonheads and form complex forms
referred to in this Grammar as “prefixed verbs”. The adverb is thus a preverbal prefix.

(935) a. ki-megy ‘out-go’
    el-repül ‘away-fly’
    be-sétál ‘in-walk’
    előre szalad ‘forward run’
    fel-mond ‘up-say=recite, dismiss’
    ki-fecseg ‘out-chat=disclose (secret)’
    be-lát ‘in-see=understand’

b. fel-mond ‘up-say=recite, dismiss’
    ki-fecseg ‘out-chat=disclose (secret)’
    be-lát ‘in-see=understand’

(936) a. ház-hoz szállít ‘house-ALL deliver’
    város-ba utazik ‘town-ILL travel’

b. tönk-re meggy ‘trunk-SUB go=go bankrupt’
    fej-ben tart ‘head-INE keep=keep in mind’
    ut-at nyit ‘road-ACC open=initiate’

Verbal prefixes formed of postpositional or case-marked personal pronouns form a separate class in this group.
Since these prefixed verbs can take full NP complements, in spite of the person-marking, they are lexically derived,
and only if the person-marking suffix is in its referential sense can they be claimed to emerge through some
syntactic operation.
Finally, some verbs take oblique case-marked adjectives as object-complements in a resultative or stative sense.

(938) *apró-ra tör* ‘tiny-SUB break=break to pieces’
*okos-nak tart* ‘smart-DAT hold=consider smart’

Note that all the compounds reviewed here undergo nominalization, i.e., further lexical processes, unlike the case of object incorporation discussed above in 2.2.6.3.2.1.

2.2.6.3.3. Compound adjectives

2.2.6.3.3.1. Noun+adjective

This is another highly productive construction-type. In the first subtype, the noun stands for the standard of the quality denoted by the root adjective.

(939) *kő-kemény* ‘stone-hard’
*vak-sötét* ‘blind-dark=pitch dark’
*méreg-drága* ‘poison-expensive=extremely expensive’

In the other subtype the adjective is an active participle derived from a transitive verb, and the nonhead is usually the theme or patient argument of the verb. Note that these compounds are formally identical to those discussed under the noun+noun compounds in 2.2.6.3.1.1.

(940) *hajó-tisztító* (folyadék) ‘ship-cleaning (liquid)’
*óra-javító* (kisiparos) ‘watch-repairing (artisan)’

Another possible, though not fully productive, subtype is formed of oblique case-marked adjectival complement constructions, which have their arguments in the nonhead position. Passive participial heads with argument noun nonheads are probably related to the subgroup containing root adjectives in the head.

(941) a. *munka-képes* ‘work-capable=able to work’
*munká-ra képes* ‘work-SUB able=able to work’
*hiba-mentes* ‘error-free’
*hiba-tól mentes* ‘error-ABL free=free from error’
*tudás-bűszke* ‘knowledge-proud’
*tudás-ra bűsze* ‘proud of knowledge’
Page 380

b. jog-foszt-ott ‘right-depriv-ed=deprived of one’s rights’
jog-tól foszt ‘right-ABL deprive=deprive of rights’
cél-téveszt-ett ‘mark-miss-ed=missing marks (ADJ)’
cél-t téveszt ‘mark-ACC miss’
por-lepett ‘dust-cover-ed’

2.2.6.3.3. Adjective+adjective

This is another fairly productive type, although within a limited class, since the
constituent adjectives express colour.

(942) kék-és-zöld ‘blue-AFX-green=bluish green’
zöld-és-kék ‘green-AFX-blue=greenish blue’
sötét-barna ‘dark-brown’
világos-piros ‘light-red’

When, however, two colour adjectives are placed side by side without the first being derived, the resulting
construction is exocentric meaning ‘ADJ and ADJ’. Note that when used adverbially both constituents have to be
suffixed, unlike endocentric compounds. (Note that here and below dashes indicate hyphens required by
orthography wherever short hyphens are necessary to illustrate morphological structure.)

(943) a. fekete-fehér ‘black-white=black-and-white’
kék-zöld ‘blue-green=blue-and-green’

b. feketé-n-fehér-en ‘black-ADV-white-ADV=clearly (said)’
kék-re-zöld-re ‘blue-SUB-green-SUB=(beat) black and blue’

2.2.6.3.4. Compound adverbs

In general no productive formations are found, since examples like minden-ár-on ‘every-price-SUP=at any price’are
idiosyncratic.

2.2.6.3.4.1. Noun+adverb

There is, however, one exception: when the adverb is a (simple) converb or adverbial
participle derived from an active transitive or an unagentive intransitive verb, it can take the object or the subject,
respectively (i.e., the theme argument), as its nonhead constituent.

(944) a. szem-lesüt-ve ‘eye-cast.down-SPRT=with eyes cast down’
kék-tördel-ve ‘hand-wring-SPRT=with one’s hands wrung’
b. arc-pirul-va ‘face-blush-SPRT=with one’s face blushed’
szív-dobog-va ‘heart-throb-SPRT=with one’s heart throbbing’

Note that in both subtypes the argument has to be a body part and that the second subgroup is somewhat more
limited in its scope than the first, which is fully productive.
2.2.6.3.5. Other possibilities

One type of exocentric compound is quite productive. It is based on a reduplication process and is in force with verbal prefixes, where it expresses repetition or durative/incomplete actions, cf. 2.2.2.2.3. Note that accomplishment verbs cannot undergo the process. (Meg is a perfectivizer prefix.)

(945)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Prefix</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>meg-áll</td>
<td>‘PFX-stop=come to a halt’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>meg-meg-áll</td>
<td>‘stop repeatedly’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ki-megy</td>
<td>‘out-go=go out, leave’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ki-ki-megy</td>
<td>‘go out repeatedly’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>meg-ért</td>
<td>‘PFX-understand’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>*meg-meg-ért</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>meg-jön</td>
<td>‘PFX-come=arrive’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>*meg-meg-jön</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

2.2.6.3.6. Multiple compounding

A number of types of compounds can undergo further compounding, in particular nominal ones. Examples abound in length and complexity.

(946)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Compound</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>[rend-őr]- [fő-[törzs-[őr-mester]]]</td>
<td>order-guard- main-major-guard-master</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>‘police sergeant-major’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>négy-hengeres-autó-vezető</td>
<td>four-cylinder car-driver</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>arany-műves alap-képzés</td>
<td>gold-smith basic-instruction</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>‘basic course for goldsmiths’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ház-tartás-i-gép-javit-ás</td>
<td>house-hold-ATTR-machine- repair-NML</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>‘home equipment repair’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Chapter 3
Phonology

Information on the phonological structure of Hungarian can be found in the seminal works of Tompa (1961), Vago (1980), and Kiefer (1994), respectively representing the major theoretical assumptions of traditional phonology, classical generative phonology, and nonlinear phonology. The contributions in Kiefer (1994) are especially noteworthy in their richness of depth, breadth, and bibliography: Nádasdy and Siptár on vowels, Siptár on consonants, Törkenczy on syllables, Kálmán and Nádasdy on stress, Varga on intonation, and Kassai on phonetics.

3.1. PHONOLOGICAL UNITS (SEGMENTAL)

3.1.1. Distinctive segments
The distinctive phonological units of Hungarian will be listed in terms of their principal place and manner of articulation. With respect to voicing, obstruents contrast fully voiced and voiceless unaspirated elements, while sonorants (nasals, glides, liquids, vowels) are predictably voiced. The airstream mechanism is uniformly pulmonic egressive; distinctive secondary articulations are not found.

3.1.2. Nonsyllabics
3.1.2.1. Plosives and affricates
/p/ voiceless unaspirated labio-labial plosive.
/t/ voiceless unaspirated lamino-dental plosive.
/c/ voiceless unaspirated dorso-palatal plosive. However, according to some, e.g., Kassai (1994), the manner of articulation of /c/ and its voiced counterpart /ɟ/ (see below) is more characteristic of affricates than plosives.
/k/ voiceless unaspirated dorso-velar plosive.
Page 383
/ts/ voiceless unaspirated lamino-alveolar affricate. On the view that the affricate [dz] is predictable from the plosive-fricative sequence /d/+/z/ (cf. below), /ts/ has the allophone [dz] before voiced obstruents as a consequence of a general voicing assimilation process (cf. 3.4.1.1): e.g., tány-ban [tányzbɒn] ‘dance-INE’=‘in dance’.

/č/ voiceless unaspirated lamino-postalveolar affricate.
/b/ voiced labio-labial plosive.
/d/ voiced lamino-dental plosive.
/ɗ/ voiced dorso-palatal plosive. See /c/ above.
/g/ voiced dorso-velar plosive.
/dz/ voiced lamino-alveolar affricate (occurs rarely). The phonemic status of /dz/ is controversial. The traditional view assumes /dz/ to be a phoneme. Siptár (1994), on the other hand, gives excellent reasons for deriving this affricate from a sequence of /d/+/z/; see further 3.3.1.7.
/i/ voiced lamino-postalveolar affricate (occurs rarely).

3.1.2.1.2. Fricatives
/f/ voiceless labio-dental fricative.
/s/ voiceless lamino-alveolar fricative.
/ʃ/ voiceless lamino-postalveolar fricative.
/h/ voiceless glottal fricative. Kassai (1994) mentions the possibility that, contrary to the conventional view, it might be more appropriate to consider /h/ to have basic radico-pharyngeal articulation. Traditionally, the phoneme /h/ is described as having three allophonic variants: voiceless glottal fricative [h] between sonorant segments and vowels (cf. irha [irʰɔ] ‘pelt’, konyha [koɲʰɔ] ‘kitchen’, tehén [teʰɛn] ‘cow’), voiceless dorso-velar fricative [x] after back vowels in the coda of a syllable, that is either wordfinally or before consonants (cf. doh [dox] ‘mustiness’, jacht [jɔxt] ‘yacht’), and voiceless dorso-palatal fricative [ç] after front vowels in coda positions (cf. ihlet [içlɛt] ‘inspire’, pech [pɛçç] ‘bad luck’). Nádasdy and Siptár (1994), however, claim that in the coda of syllables /h/ is realized uniformly as [x].
/v/ voiced labio-dental fricative.
/z/ voiced lamino-alveolar fricative.
/ʒ/ voiced lamino-postalveolar fricative.

3.1.2.1.3. Nasals
/m/ voiced labio-labial nasal, changing to labio-dental articulation before the labio-dental fricatives /f/ and /v/, as in words like hamv-as ‘bloom-ADJ DER=’bloomy’ and baromfi ‘poultry’.
Page 384

/n/ voiced lamino-dental nasal. The place of articulation of /n/ adjusts as follows: labio-dental before the labio-dental fricatives /f/ and /v/ (as in szenv ð ‘suffer’ and ellenfél ‘adversary’), laminopostalveolar before the lamino-postalveolar affricates cs [ć] and dzs [dź] (as in nincs ‘is not’ and findzsa ‘cup’), and dorso-velar before the dorso-velar plosives /k/ and /g/ (as in szánkó ‘sled’ and ing ‘shirt’).

/ñ/ voiced dorso-palatal nasal.

3.1.2.1.4. Liquids

/l/ voiced lamino-dental lateral.

/r/ voiced lamino-dental trill.

3.1.2.1.5. Glides

/j/ voiced dorso-palatal glide. Two allophones are associated with /j/: voiceless dorso-palatal fricative [ç] in wordfinal position following a voiceless consonant, and voiced dorso-palatal fricative [¿] in wordfinal position following a voiced consonant, e.g.,

(1) a. j=[ç]
   kap-j ‘receive-IMP.INDEF.2SG’
   döf-j ‘stab-IMP.INDEF.2SG’
   lök-j ‘shove-IMP.INDEF.2SG’

(1) b. j=[¿]
   szomj ‘thirst’
   fürj ‘quail’
   ésj-j ‘burn-IMP.INDEF.2SG’

3.1.2.2. Syllabics

3.1.2.2.1. Vowels

Hungarian contrasts seven short and seven long vowels; see 3.3.1.1. Of the possible secondary articulations, slight degrees of nasalization are found before nasal consonants.

/i/ short high front unrounded.

/iː/ long high front unrounded.

/y/ short high front rounded.

/yː/ long high front rounded.

/u/ short high back rounded.

/uː/ long high back rounded.
Page 385

/ε/ short low front unrounded. (Some dialects distinguish two short front unrounded vowels: low /ɛ/ and mid /e/.)

/eː/ long mid front unrounded. The qualitative (height) difference notwithstanding, /eː/ is customarily paired as the long counterpart of /ɛ/. The phonological classifications generally respect the phonetics, i.e., /ɛ/ is set up as low, /eː/ as mid; see however Nádasdy and Siptár (1994), who classify /eː/ as low phonologically.

/ø/ short mid front rounded.

/oː/ long mid front rounded.

/øː/ long mid back rounded.

/oː/ long mid back rounded.

/aː/ short low back (slightly) rounded.

/aː/ long low central unrounded.

3.1.2.2.2. Consonants

As a rule, consonants are nonsyllabic. Exceptions do occur in marginal categories of the vocabulary; cf. 3.1.2.4.

3.1.2.3. Loanwords

The voiced labio-velar glide [w] occurs only in loanwords as a constituent of the falling diphthong [ɔw]. Nádasdy and Siptár (1994) suggest that [w] is not phonemic, but rather is derived from /u/ following a stressed /ʌ/. The apparently exhaustive list of entries containing [ɔw], represented orthographically as au, is as follows (Nádasdy and Siptár 1994):

(2)  aútó 'auto(mobile)'
    auguszttus 'August'
    bauxit 'bauxite'
    kaucszuk 'caoutchouc'
    maüzóleum 'mausoleum'
    tautológia 'tautology'
    trauma 'trauma'
    autó- e.g., automatizálás 'automatization'

3.1.2.4. Wordclass restrictions

Syllabic consonants are found in the interjections hm ‘ahem’, pszt ‘psst’ and the reduced conjunction s ‘and’, where m [m], sz [s], and s [ʃ], respectively, are syllable peaks.
3.2. PHONOTACTICS

3.2.1. Wordfinal consonants
All consonants are admissible wordfinally, save /h/: with few exceptions, /h/ is deleted at the end of syllables (see 3.4.4.1). In the exceptional cases where /h/ resists deletion, it has the regular allophonic realizations as described in 3.1.2.1.2.

3.2.1.2. Wordinitial consonants
All consonants may occur in wordinitial position, freely, with three noteworthy exceptions:
(a) Wordinitial ty=/c/ appears only in the noun tyúk ‘hen’ and the interjection tyüh ‘phew’.
(b) Wordinitial dz=/dz/ does not occur. This observation is relevant only under the traditional view which holds /dz/ to be monophonematic (see 3.1.2.1.1).
(c) Wordinitial dzs=/l/ is found only in some twenty or so loanwords.

3.2.2. Consonant clusters
Consonant clusters are admitted wordinitially, wordfinally, and wordmedially. On the whole, the descriptions below rely on the classifications and use the data of Törkenczy’s (1994) thorough analysis.

3.2.2.1. Wordinitial consonant clusters
Words with initial consonant clusters are of foreign origin, basically all across the board. Two distinct classes can be distinguished: those that begin with two consonants (CC-initial), and those that begin with three consonants (CCC-initial). It should be noted that geminates are prohibited wordinitially.

3.2.2.1.1. CC-initial clusters
The possible wordinitial clusters are sub-categorized below for major classes. These may be construed as regular, even though some of the clusters are found only in a very small number of words: speakers exhibit no discernible tendency to simplify them.
Page 387

(3) Obstruent+obstruent

/tv/ tviszt  
/kv/ kvarc  
/qv/ gvárdián  
/tv/ cvekedli  
/sp/ szpíker  
/st/ sztár  
/sc/ sztyeppe  
/sk/ szkíta  
/sf/ szféra  
/sv/ szvit  
/šp/ spanyol  
/št/ steril  
/šk/ skála  
/šv/ svéd

(4) Obstruent+liquid

/pl/ plakát  
/bl/ blúz  
/kl/ klór  
/gl/ gladiator  
/fl/ flotta  
/vl/ vlach  
/zl/ zloty  
/sl/ szláv  
/šl/ slukk  
/pr/ prém  
/br/ bronz  
/tr/ tréfa  
/dr/ drága  
/kr/ krém  
/gr/ gróf  
/fr/ francia  
/zr/ zri  
/šr/ srőf

(5) Obstruent+nasal

/sm/ szmoking  
/šm/ smaragd  
/sn/ sznob  
/šn/ snapsz

(6) Obstruent+glide

/fj/ fjord
Marginal cases of wordinitial CC-clusters are of two kinds. The following clusters are found only in interjections:

(7) /pf/ pfúj ‘phooey’
    /ph/ phú ‘phew’
    /hj/ hja! ‘well!’

In addition, the following wordinitial CC-clusters may be classified as exceptional in that they are susceptible to cluster simplification (through eliding the initial consonant) in substandard dialects and in fast speech styles:

(8) /pt/ ptózis ‘ptosis’
    /ps/ pszichológia ‘psychology’
    /pn/ pneumatikus ‘pneumatic’
    /ks/ xilofon ‘xylophone’
    /kn/ knédli ‘dumpling’
    /gn/ gnóm ‘gnome’
    /ft/ ftálsav ‘phthalic acid’
    /mn/ mnemotechnika ‘mnemonic technique’
    /ng/ nganaszán ‘Nganasan’
    /hr/ Hradzsin ‘Hradzsin’ (proper name, castle in Prague)
    /št/ szcéna ‘scene’
    /šč/ scsí ‘Russian cabbage soup’

3.2.2.2.2. CCC-initial clusters The following wordinitial CCC-clusters are countenanced:

(9) /str/ sztrájk ‘strike’
    /skl/ szklerózis ‘sclerosis’
    /špr/ spriccer ‘wine and soda’
    /štr/ strand ‘beach’
    /škr/ skrupulus ‘scruple’

3.2.2.2. Wordfinal consonant clusters Hungarian admits both CC-clusters and CCC-clusters in wordfinal position; more than three consonants are disallowed. Some of these clusters are exclusive to monomorphemic (underived) words, others are exclusive to polymorphemic (derived) words, while others occur in both types of words.

3.2.2.2.1. CC-final clusters The clusters listed below occur either only in monomorphemic words (single example) or both in monomorphemic and polymorphemic words (two examples). Polymorphic words may
have undergone morphophonological changes that are not reflected in the orthography; in these cases the relevant phonetic values are indicated.

(10) Geminates

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Cluster</th>
<th>Word</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>/pp/</td>
<td>csepp</td>
<td>‘drop’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/tt/</td>
<td>ott</td>
<td>‘there’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/cc/</td>
<td>pötty</td>
<td>‘spot’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/kk/</td>
<td>sakk</td>
<td>‘chess’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/bb/</td>
<td>több</td>
<td>‘more’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/dd/</td>
<td>kedd</td>
<td>‘Tuesday’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/zz/</td>
<td>méggy</td>
<td>‘sour cherry’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/gg/</td>
<td>agg</td>
<td>‘aged’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/tsts/</td>
<td>vicc</td>
<td>‘joke’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/čč/</td>
<td>cccs</td>
<td>‘trash’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/dzdz/</td>
<td>edz</td>
<td>‘strengthen’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/ff/</td>
<td>treff</td>
<td>‘club (card)’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/ss/</td>
<td>klassz</td>
<td>‘classy’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/šš/</td>
<td>friss</td>
<td>‘fresh’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/mm/</td>
<td>stramm</td>
<td>‘strapping’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/nn/</td>
<td>könny</td>
<td>‘tear’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/řř/</td>
<td>men-j (nj=[řř])</td>
<td>‘go-IMP.INDEF.2SG’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/řř/</td>
<td>orr</td>
<td>‘nose’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/ll/</td>
<td>hall</td>
<td>‘hear’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/ij/</td>
<td>uij</td>
<td>‘finger’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

It should be appended that /zz/ is also a possible wordfinal cluster, but in derived context only; see (19).

(11) Obstruent+obstruent

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Cluster</th>
<th>Word</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>/ps/</td>
<td>bicepsz</td>
<td>‘biceps’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/ks/</td>
<td>kap-sz</td>
<td>‘receive-INDEF.2SG’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/rr/</td>
<td>rak-sz</td>
<td>‘put-INDEF.2SG’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/st/</td>
<td>paraszt</td>
<td>‘peasant’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>tavasz-t</td>
<td>‘spring-ACC’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Page 390

'evening'
'ram-ACC'
'moisture'
'emerald'
'hold-IMP.DEF.2SG'
'slice'
'see-IMP.DEF.2SG'
'Whitsun'
'chisel-IMP.DEF.2SG'

Other wordfinal obstruent-obstruent clusters occur exclusively in polymorphemic words; see (20) and (22).

(13) Liquid-obstruent

'table'
'patch'
'live-PAST'
'send'
'kill-IMP.DEF.2SG'
Page 391

/lőj/ hölgy (ldj=[lő]) 'lady'
/lh/ halk 'soft voice'
/lq/ rivalg 'yell'
/lt/ polc 'ledge'
/lč/ kulcs 'key'
/olt-s (lts=[lč]) 'extinguish-IMP.INDEF.2SG'
/lq/ golf 'golf'
/lv/ nyelv 'tongue'
/ls/ fals 'false'
/rp/ szörp 'syrup'
/rb/ szerb 'Serb'
/rt/ tart 'hold'
/rv/ vár-t 'wait-PAST'
/rd/ kald 'soft voice'
/rv/ rivalg 'yell'
/lt/ polc 'ledge'
/lč/ kulcs 'key'
/olt-s (lts=[lč]) 'extinguish-IMP.INDEF.2SG'
/rf/ kard 'sword'
/rv/ vár-d 'wait-IMP.DEF.2SG'
/rc/ koryt 'lip'
/rč/ tárty 'subject'
/hord-s (rdj=[rč]) 'wear-IMP.DEF.2SG'
/rr/ park 'park'
/rq/ dramaturg 'dramaturge'
/rt/ tart-s (rts=[rč]) 'hold-IMP.INDEF.2SG'
/rf/ tur 'turf'
/rv/ érv 'reason'
/rr/ konszern 'concern'
/rş/ fals 'false'
/rč/ korcs 'half-breed'
/rt/ tart-s (rts=[rč]) 'hold-IMP.INDEF.2SG'
/rz/ borz 'badger'
/rş/ sors 'fate'
/rž/ törzs 'trunk'

The cluster /ls/ occurs in polymorphemic words only; see (22).

(14) Liquid+nasal
/lm/ film 'film'
/mv/ reform 'reform'
/ml/ konszern 'concern'
/mv/ árny 'shade'

(15) Glide+obstruent
/jt/ ejt 'drop'
/jd/ majd 'then'
/üb-d 'blow-IMP.DEF.2SG'

< previous page  page_391  next page >
Other wordfinal clusters occur only in polymorphemic words. These are formed by the four inflectional suffixes listed below (also responsible for the derived contexts in the clusters given above):

(16) Glide+nasal
/slejm/ ‘phlegm’
/kombájn/ ‘combine’

(17) Nasal+glide
/szomj/ ‘thirst’
/nyom-j/ ‘press-IMP.INDEF.2SG’

(18) Liquid+glide
/furj/ ‘quail’
/vár-j/ ‘wait-IMP.INDEF.2SG’
Page 393

(21) Accusative
   /ñt/ leány-t ‘girl-ACC’

(22) 2sg indefinite
   /cs/ vágy-sz (gysz=[cs]) ‘desire-INDEF.2SG’
   /ts/ dőf-sz ‘stab-INDEF.2SG’
   /ms/ nyom-sz ‘press-INDEF.2SG’
   /ñs/ hány-sz ‘vomit-INDEF.2SG’
   /Is/ él-sz ‘live-INDEF.2SG’

As with wordinitial clusters, there exists a set of wordfinal clusters whose occurrence may properly be considered to
be irregular or exceptional. These clusters are marginal in that they are found only in a limited number of words
(including borrowed words, placenames, and acronyms). For all intents and purposes, the following list should be
exhaustive:

(23) /pt/ recept
   ‘recipe’
   korrupt
   ‘corrupt’
   kopt
   ‘Coptic’
   /pf/ copf
   ‘braid’
   /ps/ taps
   ‘clap’
   /tk/ Detk (placename)
   ‘Arabian’
   /ck/ Batyk (placename)
   /kt/ defekt
   ‘defect’ (plus ca. 9 others)
   /kč/ Szakcs (placename)
   /kš/ voks
   ‘vote’
   /uk/ barack
   ‘apricot’ (plus 2 others)
   /čk/ Recsk (placename)
   /ťť/ MAFC
   (acronym)
   /ťt/ lift
   ‘elevator’ (plus 4 others)
   /sf/ NOSZF
   (acronym)
   /sk/ burleszk
   ‘burlesque’ (plus ca. 9 others)
   /mt/ teremt
   ‘create’
   /mř/ tromf
   ‘trump’
   /mž/ tömzs
   ‘lode’
   /nh/ enyh
   ‘abatement’
   /ht/ jacht (ch=/h/=[x])
   ‘yacht’
   /hh/ pech (ch=/hh/==[çç] or [xx])
   ‘bad luck’
   /ip/ selyp
   ‘lisping’
   /kj/ sztrájk
   ‘strike’ (plus 3 others)
   /jg/ cajg
   ‘stuff’
Two additional wordfinal clusters are created through suffixation: /žb/, occurring only in the unproductive, archaic expressions idős-b ‘old-CMP’ and keves-b ‘few-CMP’ (sb=[žb]), and /mč/, occurring only in teremt-s (mts=[mč]) ‘create-IMP’.

### 3.2.2.2.2. CCC-final clusters

The set of monomorphemic words in which three consonants occur finally is very small and is limited to obvious loans. The following list is reasonably exhaustive:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Cluster</th>
<th>Word</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>/kst/</td>
<td>szext</td>
<td>sixth (interval)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/nks/</td>
<td>szfinx</td>
<td>skunk</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/nst/</td>
<td>dunszt</td>
<td>notion</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/mps/</td>
<td>mumpsz</td>
<td>mumps</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/rst/</td>
<td>karszt</td>
<td>karst</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/ršt/</td>
<td>verszt</td>
<td>‘Russian measure of length’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/ršč/</td>
<td>borscs</td>
<td>borscht</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/jšt/</td>
<td>lejszt</td>
<td>hard work</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/jšt/</td>
<td>mihelyst</td>
<td>‘as soon as’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

CCC-final clusters in polymorphemic words derive from three sources:

(25) **Accusative**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Cluster</th>
<th>Word</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>/rlt/</td>
<td>görl-t</td>
<td>‘chorus girl-ACC’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/rnt/</td>
<td>konszern-t</td>
<td>‘concern-ACC’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/jšt/</td>
<td>pajzs-t</td>
<td>‘shield-ACC’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/knt/</td>
<td>kombján-t</td>
<td>‘combine-ACC’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/nst/ or /ntst/</td>
<td>pénz-t</td>
<td>‘money-ACC’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/nst/</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/nšt/</td>
<td>brilliáns-t</td>
<td>‘brilliant-ACC’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/jšt/</td>
<td>fédervejsz-t</td>
<td>‘talcum powder-ACC’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(26) **2SG indefinite**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Cluster</th>
<th>Word</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>/nks/ leng-sz</td>
<td>leng-sz</td>
<td>‘swing-INDEF.2SG’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Page 395

(27) Imperative definite
/dz/ edz-d 'train-IMP.DEF.2SG'
(if /dz/=/d/+z/) (mtds=[m/d])
/mid/ teremts-d 'create-IMP.DEF.2SG'
/nid/ bonts-d 'take apart-IMP.DEF.2SG'
/ngd/ zeng-d 'sing-IMP.DEF.2SG'
/lid/ tölts-d 'fill-IMP.DEF.2SG'
/id/ tarts-d 'hold-IMP.DEF.2SG'
/id/ hajs-d 'drive-IMP.DEF.2SG'

3.2.2.3. Wordmedial consonant clusters

This section lays out the possible wordmedial clusters in terms of taxonomic phonemes. The lists, in particular, are not to be construed as statements about underlying structure, nor do they take into account the allophonic variations of the individual contrastive segments. Compounds are excluded from consideration, since their internal structures often fly in the face of otherwise valid wordinternal phonotactic constraints. For a detailed discussion of wordmedial consonant clusters in Hungarian, cf. Törkenczy (1994).

In the vast majority, unlisted clusters are ruled out by morphophonological constraints/processes; see 3.4 for details. For now, the following overview will suffice:

(28) a. Obstruent clusters agree in voicing (except before /v/).
(00) b. Dental plosives and nasals become palatal before palatal plosives and nasals.
(00) c. Dental plosives plus (post)alveolar affricates and fricatives become geminate affricates.
(00) d. Dental and palatal plosives/nasals plus /j/ become geminate palatal plosives/nasals.
(00) e. Adjacent nonlabial strident consonants have the same place of articulation.
(00) f. /j/ fully assimilates to a preceding nonlabial strident consonant.
(00) g. /l/ fully assimilates to a following /r/ or /j/.
(28) h. /n/ becomes labio-labial before labio-labials.

3.2.2.3.1. CC-medial clusters
Nearly all wordmedial consonant clusters consisting of two members occur tautomorphemically as well as heteromorphemically (at morpheme junctures). For this reason, whenever possible, each occurring cluster will be instantiated with two examples: one in intramorphemic position, and
the other across morpheme junctures (disregarding unproductive affixation).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Geminates</th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>/pp/ szappan</td>
<td>‘soap’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kép-pel</td>
<td>‘picture-INS’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/tt/ suttog</td>
<td>‘whisper’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kút-tól</td>
<td>‘well-ABL’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/cc/ háttú</td>
<td>‘swan’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>báty-já (tyj=[cc])</td>
<td>‘elder brother-POSS.3SG’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/kk/ csökken</td>
<td>‘decrease’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sok-kal</td>
<td>‘many-INS’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/bb/ zisibbon</td>
<td>‘become numb’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dob-ban</td>
<td>‘drum-INE’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/dd/ meddő</td>
<td>‘infertile’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rúd-dal</td>
<td>‘bar-INS’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>i poggyásh</td>
<td>‘luggage’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ad-ja (dj=11)</td>
<td>‘give-DEF.3SG’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/gg/ aggat</td>
<td>‘hang up’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ég-gel</td>
<td>‘sky-INS’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/tsts/ icce</td>
<td>‘0.88 liter (measure)’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/čč/ gleccser</td>
<td>‘glacier’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ráccsal (=rács-csal)</td>
<td>‘grid.INS’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/dzdz/ madzag (dz=[dzdz])</td>
<td>‘twine’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sárjad-z-ás (dz=[dzdz])</td>
<td>‘sprout-VBL-NML’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/íí/ hodzá (dzs=[ií])</td>
<td>‘Muslim teacher of religion’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/ff/ affér</td>
<td>‘affair’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sórf-fal</td>
<td>‘screw-INS’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/ss/ asszony</td>
<td>‘woman’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hússzor (=húsz-szor)</td>
<td>‘twenty.MUL’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/šš/ tessék</td>
<td>‘(would you) please’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vas-sal</td>
<td>‘iron-INS’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/vv/ szív-vel</td>
<td>‘heart-INS’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/zd/ bezzeg</td>
<td>‘to be sure’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>méz-zel</td>
<td>‘honey-INS’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/žž/ rizzsel (=rízs-zsel)</td>
<td>‘rice.INS’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/mm/ cammog</td>
<td>‘trudge along’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>szám-mal</td>
<td>‘number-INS’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/nn/ kanna</td>
<td>‘can’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>szín-nek</td>
<td>‘color-DAT’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/ňň/ dinnye</td>
<td>‘melon’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bán-ja (nj=[ňň])</td>
<td>‘regret-DEF.3SG’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Note that the geminates /vv/ and /žž/ are not found tautomorphemically. The geminate /hh/ also occurs, but it requires comment. It occurs finally in the stem pech ‘bad luck’ and wordmedially, though still tautomorphemically, in derived words like pech-es ‘unlucky’ (‘bad luck-ADJ DER’), where ch=/hh/ shows up predictably as [xx] or [çç] (see 3.1.2.1.2). For heteromorphemic /hh/, cf. doh-hal ‘mustiness-INS’, where hh=[xx], the automatic reflex of /hh/.

(30) Obstruent+obstruent

| /ll/ | csillag | ‘star’ |
| /rr/ | berreg | ‘buzz’ |
| /jj/ | zsölye | ‘armchair’ |

Page 397

Note that the geminates /vv/ and /žž/ are not found tautomorphemically. The geminate /hh/ also occurs, but it requires comment. It occurs finally in the stem pech ‘bad luck’ and wordmedially, though still tautomorphemically, in derived words like pech-es ‘unlucky’ (‘bad luck-ADJ DER’), where ch=/hh/ shows up predictably as [xx] or [çç] (see 3.1.2.1.2). For heteromorphemic /hh/, cf. doh-hal ‘mustiness-INS’, where hh=[xx], the automatic reflex of /hh/.

(30) Obstruent+obstruent

| /pt/ | kaptafa | ‘shoemaker’s last’ |
| /pk/ | csipke | ‘lace’ |
| /ptʃ/ | kapca | ‘foot clout’ |
| /pʃ/ | kapcs-ol | ‘connect’ (‘link-VBL’) |
| /pf/ | copf-os | ‘braided’ (‘braid-ADJ DER’) |
| /ps/ | apszis | ‘apsis’ |
| /ptʃ/ | kapca | ‘foot clout’ |
| /pʃ/ | kapcs-ol | ‘connect’ (‘link-VBL’) |
| /pf/ | copf-os | ‘braided’ (‘braid-ADJ DER’) |
| /ps/ | apszis | ‘apsis’ |
| /ptʃ/ | kapca | ‘foot clout’ |
| /pʃ/ | kapcs-ol | ‘connect’ (‘link-VBL’) |
| /pf/ | copf-os | ‘braided’ (‘braid-ADJ DER’) |
| /ps/ | apszis | ‘apsis’ |
| /tt/ | nátha | ‘(common) cold’ |
| /tv/ | ótvar | ‘eczema’ |
| /ct/ | fütty-től | ‘whisper-ABL’ |
| /ck/ | pletyka | ‘gossip’ |
| /cf/ | fityfene | ‘heck’ |
| /cs/ | egy-szer | ‘once’ (‘one-MUL’) |
/cš/ nagy-ság (gys=[cs])  
‘largeness’ (‘large-NML’)
/ch/ petyhüdt  
‘flaccid’
/cv/ hagy-hat (gyh=[ch])  
‘can allow’ (‘allow-POT’)
/kv/ kotyvaszt  
‘concoct’
/kf/ bakter  
‘watchman’
/sz-k-tol  
‘chair-ABL’
/kń/ akció  
‘action’
/kč/ petyhüdt  
‘flaccid’
/kł/ petyhüdt  
‘heron’
/kf/ baktr  
‘young miss’
/ks/ buksza  
‘purse’
/sok-szor  
‘many-MUL’
/kš/ taksz  
‘charge’
/ch/ petyhüdt  
‘baker-NML’
/ch/ nyílkaj  
‘scamp’
/szék-hez  
‘chair-ALL’
/kr/ frekvencia  
‘frequency’
/szk-vány  
‘usage’ (‘get used to-NML’)
/labda  
‘ball’
/kőp-dös (pd=[bd])  
‘spit about’ (‘spit-VBL’)
/bv/ szubvenció  
‘subvention’
/szab-vány  
‘standard’ (‘set conditions-NML’)
/bz/ tobzód-ık  
‘live in luxury-INDF.3SG’
/hab-z-ás  
‘foaming’ (‘foam-VBL-NML’)
/habzel  
‘devour’
/csöd-be  
‘bankruptcy-ILL’
/szalad-gál  
‘run around’ (‘run-VBL’)
/dv/ dudva  
‘weed’
/szalad-va  
‘running’ (‘run-SCVB’)
/tl/ ágy-ba  
‘bed-ILL’
/fegyver  
‘weapon’
/hagy-va  
‘left’ (‘leave-SCVB’)
/jegy-z-ész  
‘marking’ (‘mark-VBL-NML’)
/eg-be  
‘sky-ILL’
/Magdolna  
‘Magdalene’
/vág-dal  
‘cutup’ (‘cut-VBL’)
/dug-va  
‘secrectly’ (‘hide-SCVB’)
/laži  
‘wedding party’
/vég-z-és  
‘finishing’ (‘end-VBL-NML’)
/ketrec-től  
‘cage-ABL’
/mackó  
‘bear’
/ketrec-ke  
‘little cage’ (‘cage-DIM’)
/malac-ság  
‘smut’ (‘pig-NML’)
/racs-tól  
‘grid-ABL’
bicska ‘carpenter-FOR’
ác-ként ‘pocket knife’
ác-hoz ‘carpenter-ALL’
bridzs-ben ‘bridge-INE’
aftalin ‘naphtalene’
gróf-tól ‘count-ABL’
szfád ‘offside’
caféka ‘screw-FOR’
szf-ként ‘screw-FOR’
av-szerű (vsz={fs}) ‘belt-like’ (‘belt-ADJDER’)
gróf-ság ‘countship’ (‘count-NML’)
gróf-hoz ‘count-ALL’
aszöpik ‘strumpet’
mész-től ‘lime-ABL’
deszka ‘board’
húsz-ként ‘twenty-FOR’
disziplina ‘discipline’
aszfalt ‘asphalt’
egétség ‘health’ (‘whole-NML’)
rész-hez ‘part-ALL’
köszvény ‘gout’
mész-va ‘climbing’ (‘climb-SCVB’)
ispán ‘bailiff’
kastély ‘manor’
más-tól ‘other-ABL’
östya ‘wafer’
iskolá ‘school’
más-kor ‘other-TEM’
kis-szerű ‘on a small scale’ (‘small-ADJDER’)
kushad ‘lie low’
kész-hez ‘knife-ALL’
fősvény ‘miser’
ás-va ‘digging’ (‘dig-SCVB’)
potroh-tól (ht=[xt]) ‘insect’s abdomen-ABL’
shah-ként (hk=[xk]) ‘shah-FOR’
potroh-ban (hb=[xb]) ‘insect’s abdomen-INE’
sah-szerű (hs=[xs]) ‘shah-like’ (‘shah-ADJDER’)
szív-ben ‘heart-INE’
afgán (fg=[vg]) ‘Afghan’
üzbége ‘Uzbek’
ház-ban ‘house-INE’
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Page 400</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>/zd/ gazdag</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/zg/ izgága</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/zv/ özvegy</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/žb/ garázs-ban</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/žd/ rozsda</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/žg/ vízsga</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(31) Obstruent+liquid

| /pl/ gyeplő | 'rein' |
| /pr/ apró | 'nourish' ('food-VBL') |
| /tl/ ötlet | 'idea' |
| /tr/ ketrec | 'cage' |
| /cl/ lapát-ról | 'shovel-DEL' |
| /cr/ petty-re (ttyr=[cr]) | 'spot-SUB' |
| /čl/ cékla | 'red beet' |
| /kr/ bokréta | 'shove-1SG.20BJ' |
| /bl/ szék-re | 'chair-SUB' |
| /br/ ábra | 'illustration' |
| /dl/ nudli | 'noodles' |
| /dr/ család-ról | 'trousers' |
| /vl/ kagyló | 'shell' |
| /vr/ ágy-ra | 'bed-SUB' |
| /gl/ nyégle | 'arrogant' |
| /gr/ bőgre | 'mug' |
| /tl/ spicli | 'informer' |
| /tr/ léc-ről | 'grid-SUB' |
/br/ bridzs-ről 'bridge-DEL'
/fl/ kifli 'croissant'
/fř/ döf-lek 'stab-1SG.2OBJ'
/fr/ cifra 'adorned'
/sř/ zászló 'flag'
/sř/ basz-lak 'fuck-1SG.2OBJ'
/sř/ észrevesz 'perceive'
/sř/ ösz-re 'autumn-SUB'
/sř/ pislog 'blink'
/šř/ keres-lek 'search-1SG.2OBJ'
/šř/ más-ra 'other-SUB'
/šl/ ihlet (hl=[č]) 'inspiration'
/hr/ potroh-ra (hr=[xr]) 'insect’s abdomen-SUB'
/vř/ bůvli 'junk'
/vř/ hiv-lak 'call-1SG.2OBJ'
/vř/ sevrů 'kidskin'
/žř/ ov-re 'belt-SUB'
/žř/ víz-re 'water-SUB'
/žř/ varázs-lat 'witchcraft' ('magic-NML')
/žř/ parázs-ről 'embers-DEL'

(32) Obstruent+nasal
/pr/ hipnózis 'hypnosis'
/tn/ atmoszféra 'atmosphere'
/tn/ etnológia 'ethnology'
/tn/ alkot-mány 'constitution' ('create-NML')
/tn/ út-ni 'hit-INF'
/čn/ petty-nek (ttyn=[cn]) 'spot-DAT'
/čn/ satnya (tny=[čn]) 'stunted'
/čn/ pitnyat-nyi (tny=[čn]) 'momentary' ('moment-ADJ DER')
/km/ lakmusz 'litmus'
/km/ ok-mány 'document' ('reason-NML')
/kn/ teknő 'trough'
/kn/ lak-nak 'inhabit-INDEF.3PL'
szoknya
marok-nyi
'l'skirt'
'handful' ('hollow of the
hand-ADJ DER')

abnormális
láb-nak
'abnormal'
'foot-DAT'

admárlis
ered-mény
'admiral'
'result' ('originate-NML')

bodnár
ad-nak
'cooper'
'give-IND DEF 3PL'

hagyma
'handful' ('hollow of the
hand-ADJ DER')

egy-nek
narodnyik (dny=[i űj])
'Narodnik'
'tip-sized' ('tip-ADJ DER')

dogma
'cooper'
'give-INDEF.3PL'

dogma
'dogma'

bognár
ég-ni
'cartwright'
'burn-INF'

kemnerég
feccni
'crouch'
'scrap of paper'

ketréc-nek
'cage-DAT'

ocsmáZhny
'ugly'

plecsni
'carpenter-ADE'

ács-nál
'carpenter-ADE'

bridz-sél
'bridge-ADE'

sufni
'lean-to'

gróf-nál
'count-ADE'

röf-nyi
'ell-sized' ('ell-ADJ DER')

pöszmáte
'gooseberry'

disznó
'pig'

úsz-ni
'swim-INF'

arasz-nyi
'satchel'

'hand-span-sized' ('hand-span-ADJ DER')

ismer
'be acquainted with'

keres-mény
'earnings' ('earn-NML')

masni
'bow of ribbon'

mos-nak
'wash-IND DEF 3PL'

harisnája
'sock'

rés-nák
'hole-sized' ('hole-ADJ DER')

technika (chn=[cz])
'technology'

sah-nak (hn=[xn])
'shah-DAT'

hiv-ni
'call-INF'

kozma
'burn'
Page 403

| /zn/ | parázna | ‘lecherous’ |
| /húz-nak | pull-INDEF.3PL |
| /žm/ | zsolozsma | ‘chart’ |
| /alámizsna | ‘alms’ |
| /darázsnak | ‘wasp-DAT’ |
| /pj/ | lop-juk | ‘steal-DEF.1PL’ |
| /csuklyá | ‘cowl’ |
| /rak-ják | ‘place-DEF.3PL’ |
| /bibélye | ‘rake’ |
| /dob-játok | ‘throw-DEF.2PL’ |
| /mag-ja | ‘bonfire’ |
| /máglya | ‘seed-POSS.3SG’ |
| /lifjú | ‘youngster’ |
| /döf-jük | ‘stab-DEF.1PL’ |
| /szovjet | ‘Soviet’ |
| /hív-játok | ‘call-DEF.2PL’ |

(34) Nasal+obstruent

| /mp/ | sorompó | ‘rail barrier’ |
| /tamtam | ‘tom-tom’ |
| /szám-tól | ‘number-ABL’ |
| /tómkeleg | ‘abundance’ |
| /három-kor | ‘three-TEM’ |
| /szombat | ‘Saturday’ |
| /szám-ból | ‘number-ELA’ |
| /dumdum | ‘dum-dum’ |
| /nyom-da | ‘printing works’ (‘print-NML’) |
| /csámcso | ‘champ’ |
| /Tom-csi | ‘Tommy’ (diminutive of Tamás ‘Thomas’) |
| /kámför | ‘camphor’ |
| /szomszé | ‘neighbor’ |
| /három-szor | ‘three-MUL’ |
| /húres | ‘sow’ |
| /három-ság | ‘trinity’ (‘three-NML’) |
| /lomha | ‘sluggish’ |
| /három-hoz | ‘three-ALL’ |
| /hamv-az | ‘sprinkle with ashes’ (‘ashes-VBL’) |
| /nyom-va | ‘pressed’ (‘press-SCVB’) |
| /nemz-és | ‘begetting’ (‘beget-NML’) |
| /elemzés | ‘analysis’ (‘element-VBL-NML’) |
| /tömzsi | ‘stocky’ |
/nt/  tinta  ‘ink’
/nk/  mánkó  ‘crutches’
/nd/  szán-dék  ‘intention’ (‘intend-NML’)
/ng/  tenger  ‘sea’
/ntʃ/  kanca  ‘mare’
/nɛ/  kancsó  ‘jug’
/nːj/  Jan-csi  ‘Johnny’ (diminutive of János ‘John’)
/nf/  fanfár  ‘fanfare’
/ns/  vánszorog  ‘trudge’
/ŋ/  nőny-töl  ‘finch-ABL’
/ŋk/  pinty-ek  ‘finch-PL’
/ŋb/  aranyak  ‘gold-INE’
/ŋɛ/  angyal  ‘angel’
/ŋɛ/  kenyszer  ‘compulsion’
/ŋɛ/  hany-szor  ‘how many-MUL’
/ŋɛ/  manyi  ‘Vogul’
/ŋɛ/  ocsmanny-ság  ‘ugliness’ (‘ugly-NML’)
/ŋɛ/  konyha  ‘kitchen’
/ŋɛ/  aranyszág  ‘gold-ALL’

(35) Nasal+nasal
/mɛ/  amnesztia  ‘amnesty’
/mɛ/  cím-nél  ‘address-ADE’
/ntʃɛ/  nyimnyám  ‘milksop’
/ntʃɛ/  okl-óm-nyi  ‘fist-sized’ (‘fist-POSS.1SG-ADJ DER’)
/ŋɛ/  meny-nek  ‘daughter-in-law-DAT’
Page 405

(36) Nasal+liquid
/ml/ komló 'hop'
/mr/ kamra 'pantry'
/nl/ ajándék 'recommendation' ('recommend-NML')
/nr/ szén-re 'coal-SUB'
/nl/ arany-lag 'proportionately' ('proportion-ADV')
/nr/ arany-ra 'gold-SUB'

(37) Nasal+glide
/ml/ tömjén 'incense'
/ml/ nyom-juk 'press-DEF.1PL'

(38) Liquid+obstruent
/lp/ alpinista 'mountaineer'
/lv/ fal-tól 'wall-ABL'
/lw/ küld-jük (ldj=[l]) 'send-DEF.1PL'
/lg/ szolga 'servant'
/lt/ balta 'hatchet'
/lk/ Adélka 'Adela-DIM'
/lb/ kolbácsz 'sausage'
/lc/ kopoltyú 'gill'
/ld/ példa 'example'
/lj/ szölget 'dry (dishes)' ('wipe-VBL')
/lj/ délec 'splendid'
/lj/ olcsó 'cheap'
/lf/ csalfa 'false'
/ls/ alsz-ol 'sleep-INDEF.2SG'
/lš/ fél-szer 'half-MUL'
/lš/ fals-ak 'false-PL'
/lš/ fél-só 'upper' ('up-ADJ DER')
/lhv/ bolha 'flea'
/lhv/ fal-hoz 'wall-ALL'
/lv/ olvas 'read'
/lv/ ül-ve 'sitting' ('sit-SCVB')
/lz/ pulzus 'pulse'
/lž/ jel-z-és 'signal' ('sign-VBL-NML')
/lzp/ balzsam 'balsam'
/lzp/ korpa 'bran'
Page 406

/rt/  körte  'pear'
  madár-tól  'bird-ABL'
/rc/  gyertya  'candle'
  árt-ja=[rc]  'harm-DEF.3SG'
/rk/  márka  'trademark'
  madár-ka  'bird-DIM'
/rt/  csorda  'country tavern'
/r/  jár-da  'sidewalk' ('walk-NML')
  bárgyú  'imbecile'
/rj/  kard-ja  (rdj=[rj])  'sword-POSS.3SG'
/rg/  spárga  'asparagus'
  kavar-gat  'stir repeatedly' ('stir-VBL')
/rt/  herceg  'prince'
/r/  Mar-cí  'Marty' (diminutive of Márton 'Martin')
/rč/  harcsa  'catfish'
  Kar-csi  'Charlie' (diminutive of Károly 'Charles')
/rí/  karfiol  'cauliflower'
/rs/  ország  'country'
  kor-szerű  'modern' ('era-ADJDER')
/rš/  borsó  'pea'
  tér-ség  'open area' ('area-NML')
/rh/  marha  'cattle'
  bor-hoz  'wine-ALL'
/rv/  márvány  'marble'
  kér-ve  'asking' ('ask-SCVB')
/rz/  kurzus  'course'
  vér-z-és  'bleeding' ('blood-VBL-NML')
/rž/  persza  'Persian'

(39) Liquid+nasal

/ln/  alma  'apple'
  talál-mány  'invention' ('discover-NML')
/ln/  bálna  'whale'
  él-ni  'live-NF'
/m/  érme  'coin'
  takar-many  'fodder' ('harvest-NML')
/m/  barna  'brown'
  ír-nak  'write-INDEF.3PL'
/n/  emyő  'umbrella'
  kar-nyi  'arm's length' ('arm-ADJDER')
(40) Liquid+liquid
/rl/ korlát
vár-lak
‘limit’
‘await-1SG.2OBJ’

(41) Liquid+glide
/rj/ borjú
mér-jük
‘calf’
‘weigh-DEF.1PL’

(42) Glide+obstruent
/jp/ selypit
ajtó
száj-tól
dajka
buj-kál
lajbi
tel-ben
‘lisp’
‘door’
‘mouth-ABL’
‘nursemaid’
‘lie in hiding’ (‘hide-VBL’)
‘vest with metal button’
‘milk-1NE’

(43) Glide+nasal
/jm/ majm-ol
ajnároz
füj-ni
ejnye
ujj-nyi (jjny=[jñ])
‘imitate’ (‘ape-VBL’)
‘fondle’
‘blow-INF’
‘damn it!’
‘finger-sized’ (‘finger-ADJ DER’)
3.2.2.3.2. CCC-medial clusters

The majority of three-member intervocalic (word-medial) consonant clusters arise as a result of suffixation. The most productive contexts involve nominal stems that end in two consonants followed by a CV-initial case suffix; as a rule, at such junctures the resultant CCC-clusters are not broken up by vowel epenthesis or consonant deletion. One further proviso is that the CCC-cluster cannot contain geminates; that is, the stem cannot end in a geminate and the suffix-initial consonant cannot be identical to the stem-final consonant. The reason for this is that geminates generally undergo degemination next to another consonant; see 3.4.4.1.

Derived word-medial CCC-clusters, therefore, are not hard to find. One needs only to append a CV-initial case suffix to one of the CC-final nominal stems listed in 3.2.2.2.2 (avoiding geminates); paraszt-nak ‘peasant-DAT’ is as good an example as any.

Monomorphemic word-medial CCC-clusters, on the other hand, are relatively restricted; just about all of them occur in loanwords (though, obviously, this information is not necessarily psychologically real to all speakers). The individual phoneme combinations are instantiated generally only by one or two examples. Only the following clusters seem to occur in ten or more monomorphemic words (Törkenczy 1994):

(45) /str/ osztrák ‘Austrian’ (ca. 27)
/ntr/ antropológia ‘anthropology’ (ca. 19)
/mpl/ szimpla ‘simple’ (ca. 15)
/ksp/ expedíció ‘expedition’ (ca. 10)
/mpr/ kompresszor ‘compressor’ (ca. 10)
/nšt/ konstelláció ‘constellation’ (ca. 10)
/str/ alabástrom ‘alabaster’ (ca. 10)

3.2.2.3.3. CCCC-medial clusters

As might be expected, word-medial four-member consonant clusters are even rarer than three-member ones. There are two sources for such sequences. The first case is when one of the few CCC-final nominal stems is followed by a CV-initial (case) suffix (disregarding derived geminates). A list of such stems is found in 3.2.2.2.2; a relevant example is borscs-nak ‘borscht-DAT’. Second, there occur a handful of monomorphemic words
Page 409

that contain four consecutive consonants intervocalically: e.g., *gengszer* ‘gangster’, *menstrual* ‘menstruate’.

3.2.2.3.4. CCCCC-medial clusters

In Hungarian words the maximum number of consecutive consonants is five. Only one case is countenanced:

\[(46) /nkʃtr/ \quad \text{angström} \quad \text{‘angstrom’}\]

3.2.3.1. Wordfinal vowels

Of the fourteen distinctive vowels, twelve can occur in wordfinal position. E.g:

\[(47) /iː/ \quad \text{bicikli} \quad \text{‘bicycle’}\]
\[ /i/ \quad \text{sí} \quad \text{‘ski’}\]
\[ /y/ \quad \text{eskü} \quad \text{‘oath’}\]
\[ /yː/ \quad \text{fű} \quad \text{‘grass’}\]
\[ /u/ \quad \text{falu} \quad \text{‘village’}\]
\[ /uː/ \quad \text{szú} \quad \text{‘deathwatch beetle’}\]
\[ /ε/ \quad \text{fekte} \quad \text{‘black’}\]
\[ /eː/ \quad \text{lé} \quad \text{‘liquid’}\]
\[ /øː/ \quad \text{nő} \quad \text{‘woman’}\]
\[ /oː/ \quad \text{hajó} \quad \text{‘ship’}\]
\[ /aː/ \quad \text{katoná} \quad \text{‘soldier’}\]
\[ /aː/ \quad \text{hoz-ná} \quad \text{‘bring-CON.DEF.3SG’}\]

The vowels /o/ and /ø/ are systematically excluded from wordfinal position; see 3.2.3.1.1.

3.2.3.1.1. Restrictions on wordfinal vowels

There are three generalizations to be made concerning the occurrence of wordfinal vowels (Nádasdy and Siptár 1994, Törkenczy 1994).

First, in underived root morphemes wordfinal /aː/ is prohibited, save for a very small number of cases (e.g., *burzsoá* ‘bourgeois’, *hajrá* ‘final spurt’). In nonmajor lexical categories wordfinal /aː/ is allowed; see 3.2.6.7.

Second, in polysyllabic words the length of wordfinal high vowels is constrained as follows: unrounded /i/ is uniformly short, while rounded /u/ and /y/ tend to be short, even if spelled long. The short pronunciation of /u/ and /y/ is especially true in standard varieties; of course, in spelling pronunciations wordfinal ú and ű may retain their length. Thus for instance, *szomorú* ‘sad’ and *gyűrű* ‘ring’ have stylistically conditioned variable pronunciations as regards the length of the final vowels.
And thirdly, in monosyllabic major lexical categories wordfinal short vowels are disallowed, except for the nouns fa ‘wood’ and ma ‘today’. Other wordclasses are not subject to this constraint; see 3.2.6.7.

The mid rounded short vowels /o/ and /ø/ obey a more general constraint: they are prohibited, without exception (save one minor case mentioned in 3.2.6.7), from occurring at the end of any morpheme.

3.2.3.2. Wordinitial vowels

All vowels are allowed in wordinitial position, without restriction. Note the following (near) minimal pairs for each of the seven short/long oppositions:

(48) /i/ irt ‘exterminate’
    /iː/ ír-t ‘Irish-ACC’
    /yː/ ür-öm ‘wormwood’
    /uː/ uszít ‘instigate’
    /eː/ él-em ‘live-DEF.1SG’
    /øː/ őrül-t ‘mad’ (‘become mad-PCVB’)
    /aː/ ar-a ‘price-POSS.3SG’

3.2.3.3. Sequences of vowels

Vowels may be adjacent to each other both as a result of morpheme concatenation (derivation, inflection, compounding) and as a consequence of lexical representation (basic root morphemes). Some morphophonological processes operate to eliminate vowel sequences; see 3.4.4. The cases that are not subject to morphophonologically motivated deletion are either broken up phonetically by an intrusive /j/ (see 3.2.3.3.1) or else have hiatus on the surface (discussed in this section).

Morphophonologically derived vowel sequences are found mostly at the internal juncture of compounds if the first component ends and the second one begins with a vowel, between a vowel-final preverbal prefix and a vowel-initial verbal root, and in postvocalic occurrences of the following suffixes: plural possessive -ai/ei/i (e.g., ház-ai-m ‘house-POSS.PL-POSS.1SG’=‘my houses’, szőlő-i-m ‘grape-POSS.PL-POSS.1SG’=‘my grapes’), -a/e ‘POSS.3SG’ and -uk/ük ‘POSS.3PL’ following infinitival -ni.
(e.g., tanul-ni-a/uk kell ‘study-INF-POSS.3SG/POSS.3PL must’=‘he/they must study’), attributive adjectival -i (e.g., buda-i ‘Buda-ADJ DER’=‘of Buda’), causal-final -ért (e.g., mi-ért ‘what-CAU’=‘what for, why’), terminative-ig (e.g., öt órá-ig ‘five hour-TER’=‘until five o’clock’), essive -ul/ül (e.g., hajó-ul ‘ship-ESS’=‘as ship’), and, following vowel-final adjectives, adverbial -an/en (e.g., szomorú-an ‘sad-ADV’=‘sadly’), adjectival -as/ és (e.g., üzlet-i-es ‘business-ATTR-ADJ DER’=‘businesslike’), and plural -ak/ek (e.g., szomorú-ak ‘sad-PL’).

Whether a basic or derived vowel sequence is pronounced with an intrusive /j/ or with hiatus is phonologically conditioned; in particular, it is a function of vowel quality. According to Nádasdy and Siptár (1994), the following combinations are true vowel sequences:

(49) Low vowel+low vowel

Root    ideális    ‘ideal’
Compound hazaenged   ‘let go home’ (haza ‘home’+enged ‘let’)
Prefix    be-ad    ‘give in’ (be ‘in’+ad ‘give’)

(50) Low vowel+rounded vowel

Root    fáraó    ‘pharaoh’
Compound kutyaöl    ‘dog-kennel’ (kutya ‘dog’+öl ‘kennel’)
Prefix    oda-ül    ‘sit there’ (oda ‘there’+ül ‘sit’)
Suffix    mintá-ul    ‘sample-ESS’

(51) Rounded vowel+low vowel

Root    oázis    ‘oasis’
Compound kapualj    ‘doorway’ (kapu ‘door’+alj ‘bottom’)
Prefix    elő-áll    ‘step forward’ (elő ‘forward’+áll ‘stand’)
Suffix    hű-ek    ‘loyal-PL’

(52) Rounded vowel+rounded vowel

Root    fluor    ‘fluorine’
Compound műút    ‘highway’ (mű ‘artificial’+út ‘road’)
Prefix    elő-ugr-ik    ‘jump forward’ (elő ‘forward’+ugr-ik ‘jump-INDEF.3SG’)
Suffix    nő-ül    ‘woman-ESS’

In addition, hiatus obtains between two identical vowels, with the exception of /i/ and /eː/ (see 3.2.3.3.1), e.g.,

(53) Identical vowels

Root    vákuum    ‘vacuum’
Compound faarc    ‘wooden face’ (fa ‘wood’+arc ‘face’)
Prefix    alá-as    ‘undermine’ (alá ‘under’+as ‘dig’)
Suffix    hindu-ul    ‘Hindi-ESS’
3.2.3.3.1. Restrictions on sequences of vowels

Depending on the nature of the vowels involved, the hiatus between two vowels may be filled with the glide /j/, a somewhat weaker and shorter version of phonemic /j/. In the following contexts it is customary, though not mandatory, to have an intrusive /j/ (symbolized as ‘-[j]-’) between adjacent vowels (Nádasdy and Siptár 1994):

(54) i, i+mid vowel
Root     di-[j]-éta                ‘diet’
Compound éjjel-[j]-őr                ‘night-watchman’ (éjjel- i ‘night-ATTR’
Prefix    ki-[j]-őnt                ‘pour out’ (ki ‘out’+őnt ‘pour’)
Suffix     si-[j]-ért                ‘ski-CAU’
(55) i, i+low vowel
Root      pi-[j]-ac                 ‘market’
Compound   nap[ jj]ár              ‘market price’ (nap-i ‘day-ATTR’+ár
Prefix     ki-[j]-állo                ‘stand out’ (ki ‘out+all ‘stand’)
Suffix      si-[j]-el                  ‘ski-VBL’
(56) Mid vowel+i, í
Root       ki-[j]-ét              ‘coitus’
Compound   kutató-[j]-intézet      ‘research institute’ (kutat-ó
Prefix     elő-[j]-ír           ‘prescribe’ (elő- ‘pre+ír ‘write’)
Suffix      tető-[j]-i-m           ‘roof-POSS.PL-POSS.1SG’
(57) Low vowel+i, í
Root        la-[j]-ikus            ‘layman’
Compound   munka-[j]-idő          ‘working hours’ (munka ‘work’+idő
Prefix     le-[j]-ír             ‘write down’ (le ‘down’+ír ‘write’)
Suffix       iskola-[j]-i           ‘school-ATTR’
(58) Rounded high vowel+unrounded high vowel
Root       altru-[j]-izmus        ‘altruism’
Compound   mű-[j]-ipar           ‘applied art’ (mű ‘work’+ipar
Prefix     –                        ‘craft’)
Suffix       fű-[j]-ig              ‘grass-TER’
In general, [j] appears between /i/ or /iː/ sequences and between /eː/ sequences: cf. for example bicikli-[j]-ig ‘bicycle-TER’, ki-[j]-ír ‘transcribe’ (ki ‘out’+ír ‘write’), feketé-[j]-ért ‘black-CAU’, elé-[j]-ér ‘reach in front’ (élé ‘in front’+ér ‘reach’). Also, mention should be made of the fact that sequences containing /eː/ and vowels other than /i/, /iː/, or /eː/ show a good deal of instability and variation as to whether they are broken up with [j] or are pronounced with hiatus.

3.2.4. Lexical structure vs. word structure

Since root morphemes occur independently as words, the allowed structures at the lexical level also hold at the word level. The converse, however, is not true: some structures are possible at the word level but not at the lexical level. For instance, at the word level affixation can bring about adjacent consonants that differ from the lexical level in terms of number and/or phonemic composition. Such differences are established in 3.2.2.2.2 for wordfinal clusters and in 3.2.2.3 for wordmedial clusters.

Other generalizations are valid for lexical structure but not for wordstructure. A case in point is the fact that, while lexical items do not end in /aː/, function words and affixes do; cf. 3.2.6.7. Likewise, in monosyllabic lexical categories, but not necessarily in derived words, only /eː/ and /aː/ can precede two consonants; cf. 3.2.6.2.

3.2.5.1. Medial syllabification

In Hungarian, the syllabification of vowels as well as consonants at word edge positions is relatively straightforward. Each vowel constitutes a separate syllable peak (nucleus), except for the marginal cases of /ɔu/ sequences that are pronounced as the diphthong [ɔː] (see 3.1.2.3). As regards consonants, clusters at the beginning of words are syllable-initial (onset), those at the end of words are syllable-final (coda), disregarding theory-dependent analyses in which some consonant types and clusters may be appendices to syllables (Törkenczy 1994, among others). However, the syllabification of intervocalic consonants deserves closer scrutiny.
3.2.5.1. VCV syllabification

Following the universal pattern, in word-internal positions a single intervocalic consonant is gathered into the onset of the following syllable, rather than into the coda of the preceding syllable: VCV is syllabified as V.CV, where \( \cdot \) symbolizes syllable boundary. This generalization holds true also across word-internal (suffix) boundaries. Thus for instance, in \( \text{nő-höz 'woman-ALL'} \) the suffix initial /h/ is not syllabified into coda position, while in \( \text{cseh-ek 'Czech-PL'} \) the stem final /h/ is syllabified into onset position: /nő:höz/ but /čt.hek/.

In contrast, the syllabification of a single intervocalic consonant respects higher-level morphological junctures. In particular, onset syllabification is blocked both by internal word boundaries that separate compound constituents and prefixes, and by external word boundaries that mark word edges. Accordingly, in the compound \( \text{Csehország 'Czech Republic'} \) (cseh ‘Czech’+ország ‘country’) and the phrase \( \text{cseh anya 'Czech mother'} \) stem-final /h/ does not receive onset syllabification across compound and word boundaries; rather, it stays in coda position and undergoes deletion (see 3.4.4.1).

3.2.5.1.2. VCCV syllabification

Intervocalic consonant clusters are broken up under syllabification: VC.CV. In the case of geminate consonants, ambisyllabicity results: e.g., tonna ‘ton’ is syllabified as /ton.n\( \cdot \)/. In fact, the second timing component of a prevocalic geminate always occupies the onset position of the following syllable. This holds true both word- internally and across word boundaries, as seen in the following examples:

(60) /sɔn.ko/ asszony ‘woman’
    /mɛl.ɛk/ meggy-ek ‘sour cherry-PL’
    /kɔr.ɾa/ kar-ra ‘arm-SUB’
    /sɛk.kɔr.ɾa/ sakkóra ‘chess clock’ (sakk ‘chess’+óra ‘clock’)
    /kɛd.dɔt.ɛ/ kedd ŏta ‘since Tuesday’ (kedd ‘Tuesday’, ŏta ‘since’)

In nongeminate clusters, VC.CV is the only possible syllabification in case the cluster is illicit syllable-initially: e.g., /sa:n.ko/ szánkó ‘sled’ (nk is a possible coda and an impossible onset), /sɔk.ɾə szoknə ‘skirt’ (kny is impossible in both coda and onset positions). The same is observed across morpheme boundaries:

(61) Morphology Syllabification Example
    VCC+V VC.CV könyv-ek ‘book-PL’
    VC+CV VC.CV ház-ban ‘house-INE’
    V+CCV VC.CV idő-nként ‘time-DIS’
Clusters are not resyllabified above the word level. Thus, in the compound könyvüzlet ‘bookshop’ (könyv ‘book’+üzlet ‘shop’) and in the sentence A könyv izgalmas ‘The book (is) exciting’ the stem-final nyv cluster stays entirely within coda position. Similarly, in blúz ‘blouse’ the initial cluster stays in onset position even if a vowel-final word precedes: e.g., fekete blúz ‘black blouse’.

On the other hand, for intramorphemic VCCV sequences V.CV syllabification is possible as an alternative to VC.CV in case the cluster is admissible syllable-initially: e.g., /pr.oː/ or /pr.oː/ apró ‘tiny’, where /pr/ is a possible onset cluster (cf. próba ‘test’). But, significantly, V.CCV syllabification is not possible in derived contexts, including suffixation. Thus for instance, nap-ól ‘day-DEL’ can only be syllabified as /nап.oːl/.

3.2.5.1.3. VCCC(C)(C)V syllabification

The syllabification of intramorphemic VCCCV sequences follows four different paths. First, VCC.CV is the only solution in case CC is not a permissible onset: /pr.tnεr/ partner ‘partner’ (no /tn/ onsets) is a relevant example. Second, V.C.CV is the only possibility if CC is not a permissible coda: e.g., /kon.flik.tuʃ/ konfliktus ‘conflict’ (no /nf/ codas). Third, V.C.CV alternates with VC.CCV in case the first CC-cluster is a possible coda and the second CC-cluster is a possible onset: e.g., /simp.lεr/ or /sim.plεr/ szimpla ‘simple’ (cf. komp ‘ferry’ and pléh ‘tin’). And fourth, three possibilities exist if all three consonants are allowed in the onset: e.g., /ošt.rom/, /oš.trom/, or /o.štrom/ ostrom ‘siege’. As with VCCV sequences, heteromorphemic VCCCC sequences can only yield a single consonant in onset position, even when a given cluster is permissible syllable-initially. Accordingly, Budapest-re ‘Budapest-SUB’ can only be syllabified as /bʊd.pεšt.re/, even though both /tr/ and /štr/ are licit syllable-initial clusters (cf. trombita ‘trumpet’, strand ‘beach’).

The above patterns are valid as well for intervocalic clusters containing four or five consonants. Hence, while the stem extrém ‘extreme’ can be syllabified as /εkst.reːm/, as /εks.treːm/, or as /εk.streːm/, the suffixed form szfinx-től ‘sphinx-ABL’ cannot have /st/ in the onset of the final syllable. Similarly, the final syllable of angström ‘angstrom’ can begin with /str/, /tr/, or /r/.

The generalizations concerning intervocalic consonant syllabification may be summed up as follows.

(i) At least one consonant must be in onset position,
(ii) Onset clusters are allowed only intramorphemically and only if they are independently attested,
(iii) Syllabification across morpheme boundaries is blocked, save that of a single consonant.
(iv) Syllabification across word boundaries is blocked, except that of geminates.
3.2.5.2. Canonical syllables

Leaving aside theory-dependent analyses, Hungarian syllables may contain either a short vowel or a long vowel, zero to three consonants in syllable-initial position, and zero to three consonants in syllable-final position: (C)(C)(C)(V)(C)(C)(C)(C). Of these, two types have restricted distribution. First, a syllable ending in a short vowel generally does not constitute an independent word. Exceptions to this generalization are limited to two nouns and to function words, grammatical categories, and interjections (cf. 3.2.3.1 and 3.2.6.7). Secondly, syllables ending in three consonants are either derived through suffixation or else occur in a small number of (historically foreign) words. Only the following types seem to occur:

(62) CCC-final syllables

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Type</th>
<th>Example</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>VCCC</td>
<td>ejts-d (jtsd=[jtd])</td>
<td>‘drop-IMP.DEF.2SG’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CVCCC</td>
<td>kunszt</td>
<td>‘wizardry’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CWCCC</td>
<td>pénz-t</td>
<td>‘money-ACC’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CVCVC</td>
<td>szfinx</td>
<td>‘sphinx’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Syllables ending in more than three consonants are practically non-extant. The following two are likely to exhaust the list: szfinx-t ‘sphinx-ACC’, angst.röm ‘angstrom’. Below, the remaining canonical syllable types are identified individually and instantiated in wordinitial position.

(63) V(V)-final syllables

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Type</th>
<th>Example</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>V</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>‘the’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CV</td>
<td>ma</td>
<td>‘today’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CVV</td>
<td>no</td>
<td>‘woman’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCV</td>
<td>pla.fon</td>
<td>‘ceiling’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCVV</td>
<td>zrí</td>
<td>‘chaos’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCCV</td>
<td>stra.pa</td>
<td>‘drudgery’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCCVV</td>
<td>strá.zsa</td>
<td>‘guard’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(64) C-final syllables

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Type</th>
<th>Example</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>VC</td>
<td>öt</td>
<td>‘five’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VWC</td>
<td>ég</td>
<td>‘burn’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CVC</td>
<td>fal</td>
<td>‘wall’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CVVC</td>
<td>rim</td>
<td>‘rhyme’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCVC</td>
<td>pleť.ka</td>
<td>‘gossip’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCVVC</td>
<td>sроf</td>
<td>‘screw’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCCVC</td>
<td>struktúra</td>
<td>‘structure’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCCVVC</td>
<td>stráf</td>
<td>‘stripe’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
(65) CC-find syllables
VCC       olt      ‘extinguish’
VVCC      ét       ‘understand’
CVCC      cseng    ‘ring’
CVWCC     ránt     ‘yank’
CCVCC     bronz    ‘bronze’
CCWCC     spájz    ‘pantry’
CCCVCC    strand   ‘beach’
CCCVVCC   sztrájk  ‘strike’

It should be borne in mind that syllable-initial and syllable-final consonant clusters are not restricted to word edge positions. Wordmedially, clusters occur in both monomorphemic words (cf. for example the variant syllabifications in oszt.rák, osz.trák, o.sztrák ‘Austrian’) and in polymorphemic words, in particular when a CV-initial syllable (in a suffix or series of suffixes) follows a cluster final morpheme (e.g., bolt-ban ‘shop-INFL’, csüng-t-ünk ‘hang-PAST-INDEF.1PL’).

It may be pertinent at this point to establish that Hungarian places no restrictions on vocalic quality in canonical syllables. That is, all vowel phonemes occur in the allowed major syllable types, at least as far as the structure of the rhyme is concerned, as seen in the following wordinitial syllables (disregarding triliteral codas and variations in onset structure):

(66) CV syllables
bi.ka    ‘bull’
hü.lye   ‘stupid’
gye.rek  ‘child’
szo.veg  ‘text’
ku.tya   ‘dog’
szo.ba   ‘room’
ma.gyar ‘Hungarian’

(67) CW syllables
sí        ‘ski’
tű       ‘needle’
lé        ‘liquid’
kő       ‘stone’
bú       ‘sorrow’
tó       ‘lake’
há.rom   ‘three’
The items chosen above reflect the phonotactic restrictions that monosyllabic lexical root morphemes do not end in a short vowel (cf. 3.2.6.7), that lexical roots do not end in /aː/ (cf. 3.2.3.1.1), and that monosyllabic root morphemes ending in VVCC contain only /eː/ or /aː/ (cf. 3.2.6.2).

3.2.6.1. Onset-nucleus restrictions
Hungarian lacks any significant restrictions that hold exclusively between syllable-initial or word-initial units and following vowels.
3.2.6.2. Nucleus-coda restrictions
In syllable-final position, the clusters /mp/ and /mb/ can only be preceded by rounded vowels: e.g., gomb 'button',
komp 'ferry', tömb 'block', lump 'carouser', galamb 'pigeon'. This is a tautosyllabic restriction: if the final consonant of
/mp/ and /mb/ is gathered into the following syllable, then unrounded vowels can precede as well (cf. em.ber 'man',
lám.pa 'lamp').
Another rhyme internal constraint applies to monosyllabic root morphemes that end in a long vowel followed by two
consonants:
In underived monosyllables ending in VVCC
(72) a. VV can only be /eː/ or /aː/
b. CC cannot be geminate.
For example, márt 'dip', pénz 'money'. Five exceptions occur: áll 'stand', váll 'shoulder', száll 'fly', épp 'just', and tószt
'toast', although final /ll/ in these words is often pronounced as short (nongeminate). The above stated restrictions
on VVCC-final monosyllabic root morphemes do not hold at the word level, in particular if the word contains affixes:
in derived contexts /eː/ and /aː/ can be followed by geminate codas (e.g., ás-s 'dig-IMP.INDEF.2SG'), and the long
vowel can be other than /eː/ or /aː/ (e.g., nőtt 'grow-PAST.INDEF.3SG').
3.2.6.3. Onset-coda and onset-onset restrictions
Hungarian places no restrictions on either tautosyllabic onset-coda combinations or on the initial consonants of
successive syllables.
3.2.6.4. Nucleus-nucleus restrictions: Vowel harmony
Undoubtedly, the best studied, most well-known and central aspect of Hungarian phonology is the process of vowel
harmony, which places restrictions on the vowels of successive syllables. Detailed descriptions within various
theoretical frameworks can be found in the works of Vago (1976, 1980), van der Hulst (1985), Kornai (1990), and
Nádasdy and Siptár (1994), among many others dealing with selected aspects of the system (see the references in
the cited studies). To be sure, and more specifically, the term “vowel harmony” refers to a widespread, word level
prohibition on the cooccurrence of back vowels and front vowels, affecting root vowels, affix vowels, and epenthetic
vowels (3.2.6.4.1); there is, in addition, a much less general system that governs the rounding of short mid vowels
(3.2.6.4.2).
3.2.6.4.1. Backness harmony

Within the domain of a simplex word, the generalities of backness harmony dictate that back vowels and rounded front vowels do not mix. Unrounded front vowels are neutral in the sense that they may freely cooccur with either back vowels or rounded front vowels. Accordingly, the vowel system of Hungarian may be classified into the following three sets:

**Vowel harmony sets**

(73) a. Back harmonic vowels u ú o ó a á (back vowels)
   b. Front harmonic vowels ü ű ö ő (front rounded vowels)
   c. Neutral vowels i í e é (front unrounded vowels)

The cooccurrence restrictions of vowel harmony are evident in lexical (root) morphemes and are reinforced for suffixes in the form of active vowel alternations: suffixes containing harmonic vowels have both front vowel and back vowel variants. The choice is governed by the harmonic constitution of the root, as discussed below.

The basic phonotactic restrictions of vowel harmony are systematically violated by complex words, i.e., compounds and words containing preverbal elements: the constituents of these constructions define their own individual harmonic domains. Therefore, the fact that back vowels and front rounded vowels cooccur in cases like könyvtár ‘library’ (könyv ‘book’ + tár ‘storage’), százöt ‘one hundred and five’ (száz ‘one hundred’+öt ‘five’), átüt ‘hit over’ (át ‘over’+üt ‘hit’), and föláll ‘stand up’ (föl ‘up’+áll ‘stand’) is perfectly expected. So is the fact that suffixes harmonize to the last morphological component: cf. könyvtár-ban ‘library-INE’, százöt-ben ‘one hundred and five-INE’, átüt-ök ‘hit over-INDEF.1SG’, föláll-ök ‘stand up-INDEF.1SG’.

3.2.6.4.1.1. Front vowel roots

Front vowel roots contain either only front harmonic vowels or front harmonic vowels together with neutral vowels, in any order. Such roots govern front harmony in suffixes: e.g., tükör-nek ‘mirror-DAT’, kövér-nek ‘fat-DAT’, fenyő-nek ‘fir tree-DAT’.

3.2.6.4.1.2. Back vowel roots

Back vowel roots contain back vowels exclusively and select back harmonic suffixes: e.g., szamár-nak ‘donkey-DAT’.

3.2.6.4.1.3. Mixed vowel roots

If the last syllable contains a neutral vowel, then three different harmonizing patterns can be identified: back harmonic, front harmonic, and vacillating.

Back harmonic mixed vowel roots take back vowel suffixes: e.g., forintnak ‘forint-DAT (Hungarian currency)’, radírnak ‘eraser-DAT’, haver-nak ‘pal-DAT’, tányér-nak ‘plate-DAT’. These roots illustrate the transparency of neutral vowels: they do not undergo alternation, yet allow the backness value of a preceding vowel to pass through to a following harmonic vowel. It should be mentioned that very few mixed vowel roots ending in e are back harmonic. Front harmonic mixed vowel roots take front vowel suffixes. They either contain an e in the final syllable, or else they contain any neutral vowel in the penultimate syllable and e or é in the final syllable: e.g., Józsefné ‘Joseph-DAT’, operett-nek ‘operetta-DAT’, oxigén-nek ‘oxygen-DAT’.

Vacillating mixed vowel roots allow both back harmonic and front harmonic suffixes, which are in free variation. Most roots with a back vowel in the penultimate syllable and e in the final syllable exhibit this behavior: e.g., Ágnes-nek/Ágnes-nak ‘Ágnes-DAT’. Other roots that pattern similarly contain a back vowel in the penultimate syllable and é in the final syllable, or contain any neutral vowel in the penultimate syllable and i or í in the final syllable: e.g., afférnek/affér-nak ‘affair-DAT’, analízis-nek/analízis-nak ‘analysis-DAT’, progresszív-nek/progresszív-nak ‘progressive-DAT’.

The harmonizing behavior of mixed vowel roots ending in a neutral vowel is unquestionably the most complicated aspect of the entire vowel harmony system. The above descriptions lay out the most general patterns, but it should be understood that individual lexical items are subject to a fair amount of variation as concerns suffix harmony. This is not unexpected, in the light of the fact that factors other than pure phonological conditioning are at play. In other words, it is not possible to explain by phonological means alone why, for instance, haver ‘pal’ should be back harmonic, kódex ‘codex’ front harmonic, and hotel ‘hotel’ vacillating.

### 3.2.6.4.1.4. Neutral vowel roots

Neutral vowel roots contain only neutral vowels. In the great majority of the cases, suffixes are front harmonic, as expected (neutral vowels are front): e.g., kicsi-nek ‘small-DAT’, víz-nek ‘water-DAT’, tenger-nek ‘sea-DAT’, férfi-nek ‘husband’. Exceptionally, some sixty or so neutral vowel roots are back harmonic; cf. Vago (1980:8–12) for discussion. On the whole, this is a closed, historically old, unproductive set, nearly all containing monosyllabic roots with i or í, a few with é: e.g., fing-nak ‘fart-DAT’, híd-nak ‘bridge-DAT’, cél-nak ‘aim-DAT’.

### 3.2.6.4.1.5. Disharmonic roots

In exceptional cases, mostly in unassimilated loanwords, back vowels and front rounded vowels are
found tautomorphemically. Although these words do not follow the general patterns of root harmony, they are regular with respect to suffix harmony in that it is the last harmonic vowel that determines the harmony of suffixes: e.g., kosztűm-nek ‘costume-DAT’, bűrő-nak ‘bureau-DAT’.

3.2.6.4.1.6. Suffix harmony The complete set of suffix vowel alternations are as follows:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Suffix vowel alternations</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>(74) a. u/ü</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>könyv-ünk</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>b. ú/ü</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fej-ú</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>c. o/ö/e</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bolt-hoz</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fej-hez</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>d. ö/ö</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bolt-tól</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>e. a/e</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bolt-nak</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>f. á/é</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bolt-nél</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The three-way alternation of o/ö/e shows the effects of both backness harmony (o vs. ö/e) and roundness harmony (ö vs. e).

Suffix harmony is iterative and unbounded, in that backness propagates from the root outward to the end of words, through any number of suffixes containing harmonic vowels: cf. ad-omány-om-nak ‘to my gift’ (‘give-NML-POSS.1SG-DAT’) vs. nyer-emény-em-nek ‘to my prize’ (‘win-NML-POSS.1SG-DAT’) by the way of example. Some suffixes are invariable: they have the same harmonic shapes in both front harmonic and back harmonic domains.

Nonalternating suffixes fall into four categories—cf. Vágó (1980:15–18) and Nádasdy and Siptár (1994:97–98) for details and discussion:

**Invariant suffixes**

(75) a. Suffixes containing i or í (e.g., infinitive -ni: üt-ni 'to hit', hoz-ni ‘to bring’)

b. Suffixes containing é (e.g., causal -ért: mi-ért 'for what', az-ért 'for that')
c. Suffixes containing back vowels (e.g., temporal -kor: nyolc-kor ‘at eight (o’clock)’, öt-kor ‘at five (o’clock)’)
   d. Suffixes containing i or í followed by a back vowel (e.g.,
      agentive -ista: csell-ista ‘cellist’, szlav-ista ‘Slavicist’).

The vowels i, í, e, and é are characterized as neutral from the point of view of root harmony: they cooccur with both
front harmonic and back harmonic vowels. In invariable suffixes, i, í, and é exhibit transparency effects in that they
allow harmony to pass through to a following harmonic vowel: cf. for example kutyá-i-val ‘with his dogs’ (‘dog-
POSS.PL-INS’), cipő-i-vel ‘with his shoes’ (‘shoe-POSS.PL-INS’). In fact, in suffixes the vowels i and í never alternate
harmonically, since Hungarian lacks back counterparts to these phonetically front vowels. In contrast, e always
alternates (with a or o/ö) in suffixes. As regards é, it may occur in suffixes as invariable or as the front harmonic
variant of ā.

To be sure, the neutral/transparent classification of e is not as well-established as that of i, í, and é. On the one
hand, e cooccurs with back vowels and exhibits transparency effects in roots, on a par with the other three
unrounded front vowels. But mitigating factors that set e apart are the following:
   (a) There are no invariant suffixes with e.
   (b) There are no back harmonic neutral vowel roots with e.
   (c) Mixed vowel roots containing e in the final syllable are especially unstable with respect to selecting the harmonic
classes of suffixes.

The back vowels which fail to undergo harmonic alternations in suffixes may be considered exceptional. These
vowels display the effects of opacity: they arrest the rightward iteration of backness harmony and define their own
harmonic domains instead. Accordingly, a following harmonic vowel is invariably back: cf. for example the shape of
dative -nak/nek in csell-istá-nak ‘to (the) cellist’.

3.2.6.4.2. Roundness harmony

Suffixes with short mid vowels have three shapes, as seen with the allative case suffix:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Short mid vowel harmony</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>hid-hoz ‘bridge-ALL’, tányér-hoz ‘plate-ALL’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

< previous page page_423 next page >
Page 424

b. ö in front harmony contexts, after rounded vowels:
tűz-höz ‘fire-ALL’
c. e in front harmony contexts, after unrounded vowels:
kés-hez ‘knife-ALL’

The choice between o and ö/e is determined under backness harmony; the difference between ö and e is due to
roundness harmony. The latter, in effect, prohibits the vowel ö from immediately following an unrounded front
vowel. (The vowel e can follow front rounded vowels as the front counterpart of low /-y/: e.g., könyv-ünk-et ‘book-
POSS.1PL-ACC’, arc-unkat ‘face-POSS.1PL-ACC’.) Both root and suffix morphemes obey this restriction, save for the
agentive suffix -nok/nök, which lacks the expected third variant:

(77) a. -nok
   gond ‘care’  gond-nok ‘caretaker’
   parancs ‘command’  parancs-nok ‘commander’

b. -nök
   ügy ‘matter’  ügy-nök ‘agent’
   fő ‘head’  fő-nök ‘boss’
   hír ‘message’  hír-nök ‘messenger’
   mér ‘measure’  mér-nök ‘engineer’

As in the case of backness harmony, roundness harmony is inapplicable across the constituents of complex words. Hence, words like bejön ‘come in’ (be ‘in’+jön ‘come’) and szívgörcs ‘heart attack’ (szív ‘heart’+görcs ‘spasm’) are
well-formed.

Roundness harmony operates between strictly adjacent syllables, with no transparencies allowed: cf. szem-ünk-höz
‘eye-POSS.1PL-ALL’, fül-ém-hez ‘ear-POSS.1SG-ALL’. It is also unbounded: e.g., kar-od-hoz ‘arm-POSS.2SG-ALL’,

3.2.6.6. Other restrictions

Monosyllabic root morphemes that begin with more than one consonant and contain a short vowel obey the
following constraints on syllable-final consonants:
Page 425

(78) a. In monosyllabic (C)CCVC(C) root morphemes a final single consonant can only be a voiced obstruent.
    b. a final geminate consonant cannot be a voiced obstruent.

The above constraints hold only for monosyllables that both begin with more than one consonant and contain a
short vowel; hence, roots such as bot ‘stick’, meggy ‘sour cherry’ (CV-initial), and drot ‘wire’ (CCV-initial) are well-
formed. The following (historically foreign) roots are exceptions: kvasz ‘kvas’, prof ‘prof(essor)’, and klub [klubb]
(variant of standard [kluːb]) ‘club’.

3.2.6.7. Wordclass restrictions

With very few exceptions, in monosyllabic underived major lexical categories wordfinal vowels cannot be short.
Function words, closed grammatical categories, interjections, and letters of the alphabet constitute exceptions. The
following is a reliably exhaustive list, disregarding names of letters (Nádasdy and Siptár 1994, Törkenczy 1994):

(79) Wordfinal short vowels in monosyllabic nonmajor categories
    /o/  no(no) ‘well (well)’
         te ‘you.SG’
    /ɜ/  ha ‘if’, ja ‘oh’, na ‘well?’

Similarly, in 3.2.3.1.1 mention was made of the fact that, with hardly any exceptions, underived major lexical
categories do not end in /aː/. However, wordfinal /aː/ is found freely in interjections, function words, names of
letters, and affixes (e.g., hurrá ‘hooray’, ad-ná ‘give-CON.DEF.3SG’).

3.3. SUPRASEGMENTALS

3.3.1. Length

Length is distinctive for both vowels and consonants. The fourteen vowel phonemes listed in 3.1.2.2.1 split into two
sets of seven short and seven long, each short vowel having a long opposition. All of the consonant phonemes occur
both short and geminate, save /dz/ and /l/ (see 3.3.1.7), nearly all in basic as well as in derived contexts. For these,
minimal or near minimal pairs will be listed using underived contexts whenever possible, keeping in mind that exact
minimal pairs are not that common. In this way the distinctiveness of consonantal length will be established.
3.3.1.1. Vowels

The distinctive nature of vowel length can be established by minimal pairs such as the following:

(80) Short  Long
/i/ irt 'exterminate'  /iː/ ír-t 'write-PAST'
/y/ üröm 'wormwood'  /yː/ űr-öm 'vacuum-POSS.1SG'
/u/ szur-ok 'tar'  /uː/ szúr-ok 'stab-POSS.1SG'
/e/ vesz 'take'  /eː/ vész 'plague'
/o/ tőr 'break'  /øː/ tőr 'dagger'
/u/ kor 'age'  /oː/ kör 'disease'
/i/ hat 'six'  /aː/ hát 'back'

In the case of the high vowels /iː yː uː/, the durational differences are accompanied by negligible qualitative differences; the long vowels have slightly higher articulations than their short counterparts. The same is true for the rounded mid vowels /ø øː o oː/, although here the height difference is somewhat greater. With respect to the /ε eː/ pair, /ε/ is low while /eː/ is mid. The low vowels /ø/ and /a / are the least alike: /ø/ is rounded, back, and is less open (i.e., higher) than the unrounded, central /aː/. Notwithstanding the qualitative differences, if any, the seven short/long vowel pairs pattern exactly the same way with respect to morphophonological alternations in length; see 3.4.1.3. Finally, mention should be made of the fact that in low level (postlexical) lengthening processes /ε/ and /ø/ have the nondistinctive long reflexes [εː] and [øː], respectively; see 3.4.4.1.

3.3.1.3. Glides

(81) /j/ lebuj 'dive (place)'  /uː/ ujj 'finger'

3.3.1.4. Liquids

(82) /l/ hal 'die'  /h/ hall 'hear'
/r/ bor 'wine'  /orr/ 'nose'

3.3.1.5. Nasals

(83) /m/ program 'program'  /g/ gramm 'gram'
/n/ len 'flax'  /l/ lenn 'below'
/ñ/ meny 'daughter-in-law'  /menny/ 'heaven'
3.3.1.6. Fricatives

(84) /f/ döf ‘stab’ blöff ‘bluff’

/s/ kasza ‘scythe’ kassza ‘cash register’

/ʃ/ mőkus ‘squirrel’ kuss ‘shut up!’

/z/ rezev ‘vibrate’ bezzeg ‘to be sure’

Geminate /v/ and /z/ occur only in derived contexts. For example:

(85) /v/ szaval ‘recite’ av-val ‘that-INS’

/z/ mázsa ‘weighing machine’ varázsval ‘magic-INS’

Short and geminate /h/ also contrast with each other, although not in a straightforward manner. Stem-final /h/ is deleted if it is gathered into the coda of a syllable (see 3.4.4.1). Thus, even though the stem cseh ‘Czech’ is pronounced without /h/ as [čε], phonologically it has a final /h/ since this consonant shows up in the onset of a following syllable: e.g., cseh-ünk [čεňyk] ‘Czech-POSS.1PL’. Short /h/ as in /čεh/ contrasts with geminate /h/ in pech= /pεh/= [pεçç] ‘bad luck’, where /h/ exceptionally resists deletion and survives as [ç]; for the [ç] allophone of /h/, see 3.1.2.1.2.

3.3.1.7. Stops and affricates

(86) /p/ ép ‘intact’ épp ‘just’

/t/ bot ‘stick’ ott ‘there’

/c/ kátyú ‘pothole’ hattyú ‘swan’

/k/ sok ‘many’ sokk ‘shock’

/ts/ lazac ‘salmon’ zacc ‘coffee grounds’

/č/ papucs ‘slipper’ puccs ‘putsch’

/b/ köb ‘cube’ több ‘more’

/d/ reked ‘get stuck’ kedd ‘Tuesday’

/l/ meggy ‘sour cherry’

/g/ mag ‘seed’ agg ‘aged’

Length is not contrastive for the affricates /dz/ and /ť/. In underived words, phonemic /dz/ (that is, when it does not arise as a result of morphophonemic alternation) has the following distribution: it does not occur wordinitially and adjacent to consonants, while wordfinally and intervocally it is always long. This skewed distribution, among other things, leads Siptár (1994) to suggest that /dz/ has no phonemic status; rather, it is derived from the sequence /d/+/ż/ via an independently justified affrication process (see 3.4.3).

As far as /ť/ is concerned, its length is predictable: wordinitially and adjacent to consonants it is short; intervocally and wordfinally it is long. Examples are provided below.
Stress does not play a significant role in the word level phonology of Hungarian. For one thing, its occurrence within words is predictable (see 3.3.2.4). For another, it does not interact with the segmental phonology of the language in any important way (see, however, Vogel and Kenesei 1987). For the role of stress at the phrasal and higher levels of structure, see sections 1.11–1.14, Fónagy and Magdics (1967), Sende (1976), Hetzron (1992), and Kálmán and Nádasdy (1994), among others. The present description of word internal stress is based on and examples are taken from Kálmán and Nádasdy (1994). Primary stressed vowels are boldfaced.

3.3.2.2. Phonetic correlates of stress
Increased levels of intensity and/or pitch are the two most significant factors in the phonetic realization of stress. In general, stressed syllables exhibit the effects of both. For example:

(88) szombat-on
Saturday-SUP
'on Saturday'
(o=stressed, raised pitch, raised intensity)

Under certain circumstances, as in the case of the interrogative construction below, stress is interpreted in terms of an increase in loudness, but not in pitch:

(89) szombat-on?
'on Saturday?'
(o=stressed, raised intensity; a=unstressed raised pitch)

In other situations, the stressed syllables of words may exhibit an increase in pitch level, but not in intensity.

3.3.2.3. Levels of stress
Hungarian words normally contain one primary stressed vowel; other vowels, if any, are unstressed. This basic generalization is violated under two well-defined conditions. The first one concerns function words, which are systematic exceptions—they lack stress. Observe for example the article az ‘the’ and the conjunction vagy ‘or’ in the following phrases:
Page 429

(90) a. az űr
the gentleman
‘the gentleman’

b. Május vagy június elsején nyitunk.
May or June first-sup open-INDEF.1PL
‘We (will) open on May 1st or June 1st.’

The second condition actually is comprised of a number of distinct processes, but they all have in common the fact that they are syntactic constructions where higher level stress rules operate to override the otherwise straightforward patterns of lexical stress. Most importantly, a slew of syntactic structures define a prosodic domain within which the first (primary) stressed word causes destressing in the following words; see Kálmán and Nádasdy (1994) for detailed descriptions. Emphatic stress (see 3.3.4.3) and contrastive stress (see 3.3.4.4) exhibit this pattern. Instead of complete destressing, a primary stress may optionally be reduced to secondary stress (indicated with italics).

(91) a. Az úr jött.
the gentleman come-PAST
‘The gentleman came.’

b. Jött az űr./Jött az űr.
‘The gentleman came.’

In the first case, the NP VP sequence evidences the expected stress pattern. In the second case, the VP requires destressing in the following NP; an acceptable alternative is weakening the primary stress to secondary stress. The phonetic correlates of secondary stress are the same as those of primary stress (see 3.3.2.2); the difference is relative degree. It should be emphasized that secondary stress is derived by stress rules that operate above the word level; in particular, secondary stress does not cooccur with primary stress within words.

Still other constructions allow free variation with respect to the presence vs. absence of primary stress—cf. the stress pattern of előtt in the following sentence:

(92) A ház előtt találtam/A ház előtt találtam.
the house in front find-PAST-DEF.1SG
‘I found (him/her/it/them) in front of the house.’

Mention should also be made of the fact that in the context of sentences, the relative pitch levels of successive primary stresses (each of which defines its own tone group domain) may be subject to downdrift or updrift; see Varga (1985, 1994) and Hetzron (1992).
3.3.2.4. **Position of stress**

Stress predictably falls on the first syllable; see the examples in 3.3.2.3 above. There are only two exceptional circumstances when stress may be placed on a noninitial syllable. One is the case of rhythmic stress, whereby (under strong emotive content) primary stress falls on every odd syllable in the sentence. Thus, in the following case of rhythmic stress two of the words have stress on the second syllable:

(93)  \[ \text{jáj isten-em, mi-t csinál-j-ak?} \]

\[ \text{oh God-POSS.1SG what-ACC do-IMP-INDEF.1SG} \]

\[ \text{‘Oh my God, what should I do?’} \]

The other context for noninitial primary stress is provided by contrastive stress. One such case is when noninitial morphemes are contrasted, as in the following example (Szende 1976, Varga 1985).

(94)  \[ \text{Nem London-ból, London-ba} \]

\[ \text{not London-ABL London-ILL} \]

\[ \text{‘Not from London, (but) to London’} \]

Another situation when noninitial syllables may receive primary stress obtains when the contrasted item is not expressed explicitly. By way of example, consider the following question:

(95)  \[ \text{Az öccs-e katona volt?} \]

\[ \text{the younger brother-POSS.3SG soldier was} \]

\[ \text{‘Was his younger brother a soldier?’} \]

Now, if the respondent wishes to convey the message that the younger brother not only was, but still is, a soldier, the present tense copula van ‘is’ would be expected to be expressed, with contrastive stress, in comparison to the past tense copula volt ‘was’. However, the syntax of Hungarian precludes van from occurring in the sentence. To compensate, the syllable immediately preceding the missing element receives the contrastive primary stress:

(96)  \[ \text{Nem, katona van → Nem, katona} \]

\[ \text{no, soldier is no, soldier} \]

\[ \text{‘No, he \textbf{is} a soldier’} \]
3.3.4.1. Major intonation patterns

The present characterization and exemplification of some of the salient aspects of intonation in Hungarian are based on the thorough study of Varga (1994); further details and references can be found in that work.

3.3.4.1.1. Steady patterns

Steady intonational patterns have an implicational function: they point to independent phrases whose identity can be inferred from the syntactic or situational context. Broken questions are good cases in point. If someone pays a visit to Aunt Angela’s house and someone else answers the door, it is not necessary to ask the question “Is Aunt Angela here?” Rather, the truncated or broken question “Aunt Angela?” suffices to impart an answer that will establish the whereabouts of Aunt Angela. In Hungarian, such questions must have steady intonational melodies. Three classes are distinguished:

(97) Ascending
    An gé la né ni?
    x

(98) Descending
    An gé la né ni?
    x

(99) Level (high)
    An gé la né ni?
    x
Intonational figures like those above contain information about the relative pitch levels of vowels within the intonational tone group; (primary) stressed vowels are represented with boldfaced \textbf{x}, unstressed vowels with \textit{x}. Ascending melodies are associated with high emotive content, such as a sense of excitement or tension; descending melodies with a sense of “business as usual”, i.e., expected, or natural; high melodies are neutral with respect to these meanings. Thus for instance, the truncated question \textit{Angela néni (itt van)?} ‘(Is) Aunt Angela (here)? receives an ascending intonational pattern if it is asked upon being greeted at Aunt Angela’s home by a physician, whose presence was not expected (surprise/excitement). On the other hand, the same question has descending intonational pattern if the physician’s presence is expected or customary (routine). A steadily high level intonational pattern is employed if neither interpretation obtains (neutral).

3.3.4.1.2. Falling-Initial Breaking Patterns

Declarative sentences, imperatives, \textit{wh}-questions (containing interrogative pronouns), and exclamations generally exhibit an intonational pattern in which the high pitch of the stressed initial syllable falls off. Three distinct categories are countenanced:

\begin{enumerate}
\item \textit{Falling-descending}
\begin{verbatim}
An gé la né ni.
\end{verbatim}
\item \textit{Falling-ascending}
\begin{verbatim}
An gé la né ni.
\end{verbatim}
\end{enumerate}
Melodies with initial falling contours signify self-contained, relatively independent semantic units. The falling-descending pattern indicates completion of the message, that no further communication is necessary or expected. Thus, the phrase Angéla néni as a simple statement to a question inquiring as to the identity of the babysitter would carry falling-descending intonation. Falling-ascending melodies, on the other hand, convey some kind of conflict with the situational context or previous assumptions. For example, Angéla néni with falling-ascending melody as an answer to the question Ki fog a gyerekekre vigyázni? ‘Who is going to babysit for the children?’ would generally be followed by a phrase like de csak nyolc óráig ‘but only until eight o’clock’. Falling-low level melodies have neither of these characteristics: they allow for possible further comment, though not of a conflicting kind.

3.3.4.1.3. Falling-Final Breaking Patterns

Most types of interrogatives other than wh-questions—such as yes-no questions, echo-questions, and repetitive questions—exhibit a sharp drop in pitch between the penultimate and ultimate syllables. Again, three types are differentiated:

(103) Ascending-falling
An gé la né ni?

Melodies with initial falling contours signify self-contained, relatively independent semantic units. The falling-descending pattern indicates completion of the message, that no further communication is necessary or expected. Thus, the phrase Angéla néni as a simple statement to a question inquiring as to the identity of the babysitter would carry falling-descending intonation. Falling-ascending melodies, on the other hand, convey some kind of conflict with the situational context or previous assumptions. For example, Angéla néni with falling-ascending melody as an answer to the question Ki fog a gyerekekre vigyázni? ‘Who is going to babysit for the children?’ would generally be followed by a phrase like de csak nyolc óráig ‘but only until eight o’clock’. Falling-low level melodies have neither of these characteristics: they allow for possible further comment, though not of a conflicting kind.

3.3.4.1.3. Falling-Final Breaking Patterns

Most types of interrogatives other than wh-questions—such as yes-no questions, echo-questions, and repetitive questions—exhibit a sharp drop in pitch between the penultimate and ultimate syllables. Again, three types are differentiated:

(103) Ascending-falling
An gé la né ni?
Although grammatically all three falling-final patterns function as questions that require a choice in the response, only the ascending-falling type is used as a true question, i.e., as eliciting information—to be sure, it is the pattern of yes-no questions. The descending-falling contour is used for exclamatory questions in response to information that is in strong contrast to the speaker's expectations or experience. Finally, the level-falling melody has the nuance of mild surprise.

3.3.4.2. Intonation peak

Leaving aside intonational patterns that have special characteristics, such as emotive, emphatic, or contrastive intent, the intonational peak in Hungarian falls on either the initial syllable or on the penultimate syllable. The majority of sentence-types, e.g., in declaratives, imperatives, exclamations, wh-questions, have intonational peaks localized on the initial syllable of the prosodic domain; cf. the patterns in 3.3.4.1.2. Yes-no questions, on the other hand, have their intonational peaks on the penultimate syllable of the prosodic domain; cf. the ascending-falling pattern in 3.3.4.1.3.

3.3.4.3. Emphasis

Emphatic intonational/stress patterns have two major characteristics: (a) the stressed initial syllable of the emphasized element, which must be in focus position, receives high pitch; and (b) primary stress is suppressed for the words that follow within the phrase. There is thus a sharp fall in pitch following emphatic focus. Compare for instance the following two structures:
Page 435

(106) a. **Nonemphatic**
   
   Kati fel-hoz-t-a a szen-et.
   Cathy up-bring-PAST-DEF.3SG the coal-ACC
   ‘Cathy brought up the coal.’

(106) b. **Emphatic focus (=verb)**
   
   Felhozta Kati a szenet
   ‘Cathy brought up the coal.’

3.3.4.4. **Contrast**

Contrastive stress has the same traits as emphasis/focus: falling intonation is ensured by placing higher pitch on the stressed syllable of the contrasted element, which also has to be in focus position, and stress is eradicated to the right. For example,

(107) **Contrastive focus (=subject)**
   
   Kati hozta fel a szenet.
   ‘It is **Cathy** who brought up the coal.’

In both emphatic and Contrastive patterns, the stressed, high-pitched vowel in focus position is not necessarily realized in terms of extra loudness; rather, it is the loss of stress in the following words which signals contrast. Since the contrasted element must be in focus position, and since there is only one such position within a simple sentence, it follows that only one element can be contrastively stressed per simple sentence.

3.3.4.5. **Minor variations**

Of the major intonational patterns described in 3.3.4.1, three have slightly different alternatives. Each of these variants preserves the basic make-up of the melodies, with no semantic or syntactic relevance.

(108) **Ascending (cf. 3.3.4.1.1)**

(108) a. An gé la né ni?  
   
   x x x x x x

< previous page  page_435  next page >
3.4. MORPHOPHONOLOGY (SEGMENTAL)

3.4.1.1. Assimilation

Hungarian has a rich variety of assimilation phenomena affecting contiguous consonants. Some apply to individual sounds only, others to classes of sounds. The major assimilation processes are laid out in that order. Except for /v/-assimilation (see 3.4.1.1.1), /z/-assimilation (see 3.4.1.1.2), and /t/-palatalization (see 3.4.1.1.5), all are productive in the sense that they apply to loanwords and are not restricted to or are conditioned by specific morphemes; rather, their application is governed strictly by phonological information. Not treated here systematically are fast speech phenomena; for discussion, see Ács and Siptár (1994).
3.4.1.1.1. /v/-assimilation

The instrumental and translative case suffixes begin with the consonant /v/ if a vowel precedes: e.g., nő-vel ‘woman-INS’, őn-vé ‘woman-TRA’. However, the initial consonant of these suffixes fully assimilates to a preceding consonant, as the examples below demonstrate.

(111)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Instrumental</th>
<th>Translative</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>kalap</td>
<td>kalap-pal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rab</td>
<td>rab-bal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kert</td>
<td>kert-fel</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>család</td>
<td>család-dal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ponty</td>
<td>ponty-tyal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ágy</td>
<td>ágy-gyal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>szük</td>
<td>szük-kel</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ég</td>
<td>ég-gel</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gróf</td>
<td>gróf-fal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ov</td>
<td>ov-vel</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>orosz</td>
<td>orosz-szal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gríz</td>
<td>gríz-zel</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>piros</td>
<td>piros-sal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>darázs</td>
<td>darázs-zsal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sah</td>
<td>sah-hal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ketréc</td>
<td>ketréc-cel</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>narancs</td>
<td>narancs-csal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>orom</td>
<td>örom-mel</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>szén</td>
<td>szén-nel</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>arany</td>
<td>arany-nyal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fél</td>
<td>fél-lel</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>por</td>
<td>por-rál</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>baj</td>
<td>baj-jal</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The instrumental, though not the translative, inflection of the demonstratives az ‘that’ and ez ‘this’ has free variant forms, suggesting that the /v/-assimilation of the instrumental suffix and the /z/-assimilation of the demonstratives (see 3.4.1.1.2) may take place in either order: cf. az-zal/ av-val ‘that-INS’, ez-zel/ev-vel ‘this-INS’, but az-zá (*av-va) ‘that-TRA’, ez-zé (*ev-vé) ‘this-TRA’. /v/-assimilation is unproductive: it is restricted exclusively to the instrumental and translative suffixes. Note for instance the absence of assimilation in the following /v/-initial suffixes: kilenc-ven ‘nine-ty’, lát-va ‘see-ing’. 
3.4.1.1.2. /z/-assimilation
The final consonant /z/ of the demonstrative pronouns ez ‘this’ and az ‘that’ (including compounded versions like mindez ‘all this’ and mindaz ‘all that’; cf. mind ‘all’) is retained wordfinally, before the accusative suffix -t (where /z/ devoices to [s] under a regular process of voicing assimilation; see 3.4.1.1.8), and before vowel-initial suffixes generally. However, before suffixes beginning with an onset consonant, i.e., before CV-initial suffixes, /z/ undergoes full regressive assimilation. This rule is wholly unproductive; no other morpheme is subject to /z/-assimilation. Note the following paradigms:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Nom</th>
<th>Acc</th>
<th>Sup</th>
<th>Dat</th>
<th>INE</th>
<th>SUB</th>
<th>ABL</th>
<th>TEM</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ez</td>
<td>az-t</td>
<td>az-en</td>
<td>en-nek</td>
<td>eb-ben</td>
<td>er-re</td>
<td>et-től</td>
<td>ek-kor</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘this’</td>
<td>‘that’</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

In the allative inflections, the derived geminate /hh/ is reduced to /h/ by a rule which drops syllable-final /h/; see 3.4.4.1.2. The terminative suffix -ig is set up as /-dig/ before the demonstratives: cf. ed-dig ‘until this’, addig ‘until that’. For the facts before /v/-initial inflectional suffixes, cf. 3.4.1.1.1.

3.4.1.1.3. /l/-assimilation
The liquid /l/ assimilates to a following /r/ or /j/: e.g., bal-ról [b:rrroːl] ‘left-DEL’, tél-re [te:rrε] ‘winter-SUB’; ül-j [yjj] ‘sit-IMP.INDEF.2SG’, tol-juk [tojjuk] ‘push-DEF.1PL’, gól-ja [go:jjɔ] ‘goal-POSS.3SG’. In faster speech tempos /l/-assimilation may apply between words, as in fél rág-fi ‘is afraid to chew’ (afraid-INDEF.3SG chew-INF) and reggel jön ‘comes in the morning’ (morning come-INDEF.3SG), where /l/ may be pronounced as /r/ and /j/, respectively.

3.4.1.1.4. /n/-assimilation
/n/ becomes labial before the labial consonants /p b m/ within words as well as between words, including compound constituents. Thus, in each of the following cases n=[m]: szín-be ‘color-ILL’, szénpor ‘coal dust’ (szén ‘coal’+por ‘dust’), van más ‘there is another’ (van ‘is’, más ‘other’). In slower speech tempos, /n/-assimilation may be suppressed.
3.4.1.5. /t/-palatalization

Exclusively before the imperative suffix -j, a stem-final /t/ undergoes a series of changes:

(i) /t/ deletes if preceded by an obstruent (see 3.4.4.1.1).
(ii) /t/ palatalizes to /š/ if preceded by a short vowel (e.g., kös-s ‘tie-IMP.INDEF.2SG’, where the stem is köt ‘tie’, and, following the palatalization of /t/ to /š/, imperative /j/ assimilates (see 3.4.1.1.6.1)).
(iii) /t/ palatalizes to /č/ if preceded by a sonorant consonant (e.g., önt-s ‘pour-IMP.INDEF.2SG’, tölt-s ‘fill-IMP.INDEF.2SG’, tart-s ‘hold-IMP.INDEF.2SG’, hajt-s ‘drive-IMP.INDEF.2SG’, where the sequence ts is realized as [čč], derived from /t/ plus /j/ through /t/-palatalization and /j/-assimilation (for the latter, see 3.4.1.1.6)).

If stem-final /t/ is preceded by a long vowel, then the palatalization of /t/ splits between /š/ and /č/ as follows, /t/ becomes /č/ in stems derived by the transitive suffix -ít (see 2.2.2.3.1) and in the underived stems fűt ‘heat’, hűt ‘cool’, műt ‘operate’, szűt ‘stir up’, tát ‘open wide’, and vét ‘err’: cf. for example nagy-ít-s ‘make big-IMP.INDEF.2SG’ and fűt-s ‘heat-IMP.INDEF.2SG’ (ts=[čč]). These stems pattern together with those whose stem-final /t/ is preceded by a sonorant consonant; see above. In the remaining attested verbal stems that end in a long vowel plus /t/, palatalization results in /š/: cf. the second person singular indefinite imperatives lás-s (lát ‘see’), bocsás-s (bocsát ‘let go’), and lős-s-fus-s (lót-fut ‘run about’). These stems pattern together with those whose stem-final /t/ is preceded by a short vowel; cf. above.

In standard varieties of Hungarian, /t/-palatalization is conditioned by the glide /j/ if and only if it signifies the imperative morpheme; significantly, /t/-palatalization is inapplicable in the context of the glide /j/ which shows up in the present definite declarative paradigms of back harmonic verbal stems (cf. 3.4.4.2.3). Consequently, the respective paradigms contrast, as seen with the representative verb lát ‘see’:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Imperative</th>
<th>Present declarative</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>lás-s-am</td>
<td>lát-om</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lás-s-ad</td>
<td>lát-od</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lás-s-a</td>
<td>lát-ja</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lás-s-uk</td>
<td>lát-juk</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lás-s-átok</td>
<td>lát-játok</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lás-s-ák</td>
<td>lát-ják</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

However, in nonstandard varieties /t/-palatalization is generalized to apply in the context of both glides, resulting in cases of homonymy. For example,
### Imperative Present declarative

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Imperative</th>
<th>Present declarative</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>lás-s-am</td>
<td>lát-om 'see-DEF.1SG'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lás-s-ad</td>
<td>lát-od 'see-DEF.2SG'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lás-s-a</td>
<td>lás-sa 'see-DEF.3SG'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lás-s-uk</td>
<td>lás-suk 'see-DEF.1PL'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lás-s-átok</td>
<td>lás-sátok 'see-DEF.2PL'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lás-s-ak</td>
<td>lás-sák 'see-DEF.3PL'</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### 3.4.1.1.6. /j/-assimilation

The glide /j/ undergoes two distinct progressive assimilation processes.

#### 3.4.1.1.6.1. Sibilant+/j/-assimilation

In suffixes, /j/ fully assimilates to a preceding sibilant consonant. The suffixes exhibiting this process are as follows: 
- /j/ 'IMP', -ja 'DEF.3SG', -juk/jük 'DEF.1PL', -játok 'DEF.2PL', -ják 'DEF.3PL':

| /j/ 'IMP.INDEF.2SG'/j/ 'DEF.3SG' |
| masz(ik) 'climb' mássz mássza |
| hoz 'bring' hozza hozza |
| mos 'wash' mossa mos mossa |

#### 3.4.1.1.6.2. Palatal+/j/-assimilation

In suffixes, /j/ fully assimilates to a preceding palatal ty, gy, or ny; this assimilation may be suppressed in very slow speech tempos or in spelling pronunciations, /j/-initial suffixes subject to this change are the verbal suffixes listed above in 3.4.1.1.6.1, as well as the nominal suffixes -ja/je 'POSS.3SG', -juk/jük 'POSS.3PL', and -ja/je 'PL.POSS', e.g., báty-ja (tyj=[cc]) 'elder brother-POSS.3SG', hagy-juk 'allow-DEF.1PL', hány-játok (nyj=[ññ]) 'throw-DEF.2PL'.

### 3.4.1.1.7. Palatalization

The dental stops /t d n/ become palatal /c ň ň/, respectively, before the palatals /c ň j/. Within words, morphophonemic alternations can be adduced with a few derivational suffixes: cf. pillanat-nyi (nty=[cñ]) 'momentary', billen-tyű (nty=[ñc]) 'valve' (billen 'tip over'). Much stronger evidence comes from inflectional suffixes beginning with /j/. In these cases mutual assimilation obtains: /j/ first induces a preceding /t d n/ to palatalize to /c ň/, respectively, then it undergoes the palatal+/j/- assimilation process described in 3.4.1.1.6.2. Note the following examples: bot-ja (tj=[cc]) 'stick-POSS.3SG', ad-j (dj=[ññ]) 'give-IMP.INDEF.2SG', bán-ják (nj=[ññ]) 'regret-DEF.3PL'. Palatalization can also take place between words and compound constituents: e.g., ŏt tyúk
3.4.1.1.8. Voicing assimilation

Adjacent obstruent consonants must have the same values for voicing. This restriction has wide scope: it holds equally for tautomorphemic clusters (initial, medial, and final positions), morpheme concatenations within words, compounds, and word combinations. In the last three contexts, the morphophonemic alternations evidence regressive assimilation: obstruents assimilate in voicing to an immediately following obstruent. Representative examples are cited below.

(116) Voicing

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Cluster</th>
<th>Inessive</th>
<th>Phonetics of cluster</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>kalap 'hat'</td>
<td>kalap-ban</td>
<td>[bb]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kút 'well'</td>
<td>kút-ban</td>
<td>[db]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>konty ‘bun (hair)’</td>
<td>konty-ban</td>
<td>[tb]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zsák ‘sack’</td>
<td>zsák-ban</td>
<td>[gb]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sróf ‘screw’</td>
<td>sróf-ban</td>
<td>[vb]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>más ‘other’</td>
<td>más-ban</td>
<td>[zb]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ketrec ‘cage’</td>
<td>ketrec-ben</td>
<td>[dzb]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bécs ‘Vienna’</td>
<td>Bécs-ben</td>
<td>[ib]</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(117) Devoicing

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Cluster</th>
<th>Ablative</th>
<th>Phonetics of cluster</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>darab ‘piece’</td>
<td>darab-tól</td>
<td>[pt]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ebéd ‘lunch’</td>
<td>ebéd-tól</td>
<td>[tt]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ágy ‘bed’</td>
<td>ágy-tól</td>
<td>[ct]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>szeg ‘nail’</td>
<td>szeg-tól</td>
<td>[kt]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>szív ‘heart’</td>
<td>szív-tól</td>
<td>[ft]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rizs ‘rice’</td>
<td>rizs-tól</td>
<td>[št]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kéz ‘hand’</td>
<td>kéz-tól</td>
<td>[št]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bridzs ‘bridge’</td>
<td>bridzs-tól</td>
<td>[čt]</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Voicing assimilation applies iteratively to affect more than one obstruent in a cluster: e.g., test-ben (stb=[ždb]) ‘body-INE’. For application between compound constituents, cf. rabszolga (bsz=[ps]) ‘slave’ (rab ‘prisoner’ +szolga ‘servant’) and könyvtár (vt=[ft]) ‘library’ (könyv ‘book’+tár ‘storage’); for application between independent words, cf. nyolc gyerek (cgy=[dš]) ‘eight child(ren)’ and hoz kenyer-et (zk=[sk]) ‘bring.'
INDEF.3SG bread-ACC'. Additional examples of voicing assimilation, both within and between words, can be found in 3.4.1.1.9 and 3.4.1.1.10.

While obstruent consonants generally both induce and undergo voicing assimilation, /v/ and /h/ exhibit a somewhat different pattern: /v/ is a target but not a trigger, whereas /h/ is a trigger but not a target, e.g., szivtől (vt=ft) ‘heart-ABL’, hat-van (tv=tv) ‘six-ty’, ház-hoz (zh=sh) ‘house-ALL’, sáh-ban (hb=xb) ‘shah-INE’; cf. further szivhez (vh=fh) ‘heart-ALL’, /v/ is also exceptional in that it is the only obstruent which may violate the ban on differing voicing values for tautomorphic obstruent clusters. In particular, /v/ may occur following voiceless obstruents: cf. tviszt ‘twist’, lekvár ‘preserve’.


3.4.1.1.9. Affrication

Dental, alveolar, and postalveolar stop, fricative, and affricate sequences are subject to manner of articulation assimilations. The details, taking into account the effects of the regressive voicing assimilation process discussed in 3.4.1.1.8, variability, and word-internal as well as -external contexts, are as follows (Siptár 1994).

Dental stop plus fricative sequences undergo mutual assimilations: they become geminate affricates. This process is obligatory within words; across words, it is invoked only in fast or carefree speech styles. Examples are provided below.

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{(118)} & \quad \text{a. Dental stop+fricative} \\
& \quad /\text{td}+/s/ \rightarrow \text{[tsts]} \\
& \quad \text{lát-sz ‘see-INDEF.2SG’} \\
& \quad \text{két szoba ‘two room(s)’} \\
& \quad \text{ad-sz ‘give-INDEF.2SG’} \\
& \quad \text{enged szív-ni ‘allow.INDEF.3SG smoke-INF’} \\
\text{b. } & \quad /\text{td}+/z/ \rightarrow \text{[dzdz]} \\
& \quad \text{hat zászló ‘six flag(s)’} \\
& \quad \text{svéd zene ‘Swedish music’}
\end{align*}
\]
c. /td/+/š/ → [čč]
  süket-ség 'deaf-ness'
  hat sátor 'six tent(s)'
  rövid-ség 'short-ness'
  marad segít-eni 'stay.INDF.3SG help-INF'

d. /td/+/ž/ → [jí]
  öt zsemle 'five roll(s) of bread'
  ad zsinór-t 'give.INDF.3SG string-ACC'

Geminate [dzdz] and [jí] affricates are also found inside words (e.g., madzag 'twine', bridzs 'bridge'); deriving them from /d/+/z/ and /d/+/ž/ sequences, respectively, via affrication is possible, though moot, since morphophonemic evidence is wanting in these cases.

Dental stops undergo affrication before affricates. This process is obligatory between words; word-internal evidence is lacking, due to the absence of clear and productive cases of affricates occurring in suffix initial position, e.g., hétfő 'seven shoe(s)', öt csomag 'five package(s)', vad dzsungel 'wild jungle', where the relevant clusters are [tsts], [čč], and [jí], respectively.

Fricatives may become affricates following affricates, but only in fast or carefree speech styles, and only if the affricate+fricative cluster agrees in place of articulation. The process of sibilant assimilation (cf. 3.4.1.1.10) may also impact on the cluster: the affricate may assimilate in place of articulation to the following fricative. Accordingly, the cluster c [ts]+s[š] (alveolar affricate+postalveolar fricative) in the input representation bohóc-ság 'clown-ery' can have the following output possibilities: [tsts] (suppressing sibilant assimilation) in careful speech, [čš] (undergoing sibilant assimilation) in normal, carefree speech, and [čč] (undergoing both sibilant assimilation and affrication) in fast, carefree speech. Note crucially that *[tsč] is not possible, since the place of articulation of the affricated fricative differs from that of the preceding affricate. Examples involving above-the-word level application of the postaffricate affrication of fricatives, including the adjustment of the place of articulation of the affricate via sibilant assimilation, are given below (for fast, carefree speech), where # indicates compound boundary.

(119) a. Affricate+fricative
   /tsč+/*š/ → [tsts]
   nyolc szoba 'eight room(s)'
   kulcs#szám 'key number'

   /tsč+//*š/ → [čč]
   arc#seb 'facial wound'
   ács#segéd 'carpenter's aide'
Palatal stop plus dental or postalveolar fricative sequences have the following realizations: in normal, carefree speech the fricative undergoes affrication; in fast, carefree speech both the stop and fricative are subject to affrication, resulting in a geminate affricate; in careful speech, affrication is suppressed. For the examples listed below, each of the three output possibilities is indicated; it is to be understood that the first output is restricted to careful speech, the second to normal, carefree speech, and the third to fast, carefree speech.

(120) a. Palatal stop+fricative
\[ /\text{cš}/+/s/ \rightarrow [\text{cs}], [\text{cts}], [\text{tsts}] \]
- ponty#szem 'carp(‘s) eye'
- egy-szer ‘one-MUL’

b. /\text{cš}/+/z/ \rightarrow [\text{dž}], [\text{dz}], [\text{dzdz}]
- füty#zápor ‘catcall’
- nagy zászló ‘large flag’

c. /\text{cž}/+/š/ \rightarrow [\text{čš}], [\text{čč}], [\text{čč}]
- kórtysór ‘sip (of) beer’
- nagy-ság ‘large-ness’

d. /\text{cž}/+/ž/ \rightarrow [\text{ž}], [\text{ť}], [\text{ťť}] 
- petty zsír ‘spot (of) fat’
- egy zszeni ‘a genius’

Lastly, palatal stops undergo affrication before affricates in fast, carefree speech styles: e.g., kórtynóczervörös (tyc=[tsts]) ‘sip (of) vermilion’, nagy csillag (gycs=[čč]) ‘large star’, meggy#dzsem (ggydzs=[ťť]) ‘sour cherry jam’.

3.4.1.1.10. Sibilant assimilation

If two sibilant consonants (/s z š ž č ts/, ignoring the marginal case of /dz/) occur next to each other, whether within words or between words, the first one assimilates to the second one in place of articulation; voicing assimilation takes place as well (cf. 3.4.1.1.8). Examples for dental/ alveolar sibilants becoming postalveolar and postalveolar sibilants becoming dental/ alveolar are provided below.
(121) a. Fricative+fricative
/šž/+/s/ →[ss]
más-szor ‘other-MUL’
kis szobor ‘small statue’
montázs-szerű ‘montage-like’
b. /šž/+/ž/ →[zz]
okos zené-sz ‘smart music-ian’
garázs zár-ás ‘garage clos-ing’
c. /sz+/š/ →[šš]
egész-ség ‘health’ (‘whole-ness’) 
orosz sajtó ‘Russian press’
ingaz-ság ‘truth’
nehéz súly ‘heavy weight’
d. /sz+/ž/ →[žž]
kis zseb ‘small pocket’
néz Zsuzsá-ra ‘looks at Susan’ (‘look-INDEF.3SG Susan-DEL’)

(122) a. Affricate+fricative
/č/+/s/ →[tss]
tanács-szerű ‘council-like’
szakács szav-a ‘chef’s word’ (‘chef word-POSS.3SG’)
briðzs#szoba ‘bridge room’
b. /č/+/ž/ →[dzz]
Kovács Zoltán ‘Kovács Zoltán (proper name)’
briðzs#zár-as ‘bridge clos-ing’
c. /ts+/š/ →[čš]
malac-ság ‘obscen-ity’
plac#serkent-és ‘market stimulat-ion’
d. /ts+/ž/ →[žž]
lazac#zsír ‘salmon fat’

(123) a. Fricative+affricate
/šž/+/ts/ →[sts]
piros cipő ‘red shoe’
varázs ceruza ‘magic pencil’
b. /sz+/č/ →[šč]
egész család ‘whole family’
igaz csoda ‘true miracle’
Page 446

c. /sz/+\[\hat{\jmath}\]/→[\hat{\jmath}]
   vesz dzsem-et ‘buys jam’ (‘buy.INDEF.3SG jam-ACC’)
   grúz dzsessz ‘Georgian jazz’

(124)  a. Affricate+affricate
      /\[\varepsilon\]/+/ts/→[ts\[\varepsilon\]]
      makacs cica ‘stubborn kitten’
      bridzs cikk ‘bridge article’
   b. /ts/+/\[\varepsilon\]/→[\varepsilon]\[\varepsilon\]
      rác család ‘Serbian family’
   c. /ts/+/i/→[i\[\varepsilon\]]
      palóc dzsidá-s ‘Northern Hungarian lanc-er’

If the adjacent sibilants are homorganic but differ in voicing, then the first one undergoes only voicing assimilation (cf. 3.4.1.1.8): e.g., száz-szor (zsz=[ss]) ‘hundred-MUL’. If the two sibilants agree both in place of articulation and voicing, then the first one does not change: e.g., makacs-ság (css=[čš]) ‘stubborn-ness’.

The sibilant assimilation processes illustrated above are subject to variability (Siptár 1994). Within words, they tend to be applied in carefree, casual speech styles, but not in careful, formal ones; likewise, between words they are applied only in fast, careless speech styles. For exemplification, see 3.4.1.1.9.

3.4.1.3. Other segmental alternations
3.4.1.3.1. Length alternations

Dental sonorant consonants may be subject to deletion in coda position, that is wordfinally and pre-consonantally; this deletion process is compensated for by lengthening the preceding vowel.

The most common source for compensatory lengthening is the lateral /l/: cf. tol-t-ad [to:t\vad] ‘push-PAST- INDEF.2SG’, where the /l/ of tol ‘push’ is syllabified into coda position and consequently can delete and cause lengthening, vs. tol-ás ‘push-ing’, where /l/ is syllabified in onset position and consequently cannot delete.

Compensatory lengthening is possible in doubly closed syllables as well, as in kulcs [ku:č] ‘key’. If the preceding vowel is long, as in fel-t-él [fe:l\te:li] ‘be afraid-PAST-INDEF.2SG’, deletion does not lead to extra lengthening. /r/, /n/, and /j/ can also participate in compensatory lengthening: /j/ mainly after front vowels, /n/ before continuant consonants (also causing nasalization in the preceding vowel).
The quality of the lengthened vowel varies somewhat across dialects and speech styles. One interesting consequence is that the lengthened reflexes of the low vowels are the nondistinctive [ː] and [eː], respectively: cf. nyel-t-ed [ˈneːl-t-ɛd] ‘swallow-PAST-DEF.2SG’, ar-ra [ɛːrɑ] ‘that-SUB’. With respect to other length alternations, such as that discussed in 3.4.1.3.1.2, /ɛ/ and /eː/ lengthen to their distinctively long counterparts, /aː/ and /eː/, respectively. The above compensatory lengthening processes are productive, not being restricted to particular morphemes. Not so with /v/, whose compensatory lengthening is observed only in a closed set of historically old nominal and verbal roots. Thus, while the root /köv/ undergoes compensatory lengthening to surface as kő ‘stone’ (cf. köv-ek ‘stone-PL’), /öv/ does not: it is realized as öv ‘belt’ (cf. öv-ek ‘belt-PL’). For fuller discussion, see Vago (1980).

3.4.1.3.1.2. Low vowel lengthening

The low vowels /ɛ/ and /eː/ lengthen to /aː/ and /eː/, respectively, in morpheme-final position, provided a suffix follows, e.g., kefe ‘brush’, kefe-je ‘brush-POSS.3SG’, kefe-jé-re ‘brush-POSS.3SG-SUB’; alma ‘apple’, alma-ja ‘apple-POSS.3SG’, alma-já-ra ‘apple-POSS.3SG-SUB’. As expected, compound boundary functions as word boundary, so that low vowel lengthening is blocked (cf. kef#tart-ó ‘brush hold-er’); nonapplication before adjectival -i (cf. Buda-i ‘of Buda’) is exceptional. Low vowel lengthening is productive: for instance, the place-name Uppsala undergoes lengthening if inflected, as in illative Uppsalá-ba. The alternative view, that low vowels shorten in wordfinal position, is less desirable in view of the fact that many words exist with final /eː/ (and a few with /aː/).

3.4.1.3.1.3. Root final syllable shortening

In a set of historically old nominal (rarely, verbal) roots consisting of monosyllables or disyllables, the final syllable shortens before vowel initial suffixes (sporadically also before certain consonant initial derivational suffixes). In the overwhelming majority of the cases the shortened vowel is low, less often it is high, rarely is it mid; in all cases, the root contains a single final consonant, e.g., nyár ‘summer’, nyár-tól ‘summer-ABL’, but nyar-ak ‘summer-PL’. It is not possible to predict shortening on purely phonological grounds: contrast the patterning of nyár with vár ‘castle’, vár-tól ‘castle-ABL’, vár-ak ‘castle-PL’. Nor would lengthening work across the board: cf. kar ‘arm’, kar-tól ‘arm-ABL’. In brief, root final syllable shortening is an unproductive, in part lexically determined process.

A set of vowel-initial suffixes consistently patterns together with consonant initial suffixes with respect to a number of root alternations, including root final syllable shortening. Thus, the following suffixes fail to
trigger shortening, even though they begin with a vowel: nyár-ig ‘summer-TER’, nyár-ért ‘summer-CAU’, nyár-ul ‘summer-ESS’, nyár-é ‘summer-POS’. The same holds for /v/-final roots that undergo compensatory lengthening before vowel-initial suffixes, as discussed in 3.4.1.3.1.1: note for instance that compensatory lengthening is triggered in kő-ért ‘stone-CAU’, even though the suffix does not begin with a consonant. Still another case is discussed in 3.4.4.2.1. Since these suffixes behave as if they began with a consonant, we will dub them for ease of reference “C”-initial suffixes.

3.4.1.3.1.4. Root internal syllable shortening Another process shortens root vowels before suffixes that have the following properties: they are derivational but not inflectional, they begin with a vowel, they are disyllabic, and they do not harmonize. The affected syllable can be initial (e.g., kődex ‘codex’, kodifikál ‘codify’), medial (e.g., história ‘history’, historizmus ‘historicism’), or final (e.g., aktív ‘active’, aktivitás ‘activity’).

Interestingly, both the trigger and target morphemes tend to be recent loans. Nevertheless, the unpredictable nature of the alternation precludes considering it productive.

3.4.1.3.1.5. Degemination Geminate consonants are subject to shortening if adjacent to another consonant. The exact conditions are somewhat complex; the following description is based on Siptár’s (1994) detailed study. Tautomorphic geminate consonants occur only intervocally or before pause. If another consonant comes to be adjacent through morphological or syntactic means, then these geminates undergo obligatory shortening: e.g., meggy [mέ] ‘sour cherry’, meggy-nek [mέnek] ‘sour cherry-DAT’; meggyfa [mcfέ] ‘sour cherry tree’; a meggy piros [mpiros] ‘the sour cherry (is) red’.

Geminates derived through morpheme concatenation that triggers the application of phonological rules must also undergo degemination next to another consonant. For instance, csont-tal [čontl] ‘bone-INS’ is derived from /čont-val/ through /v/-assimilation (see 3.4.1.1.1), yielding /čont-t/; this representation then is subject to degemination. Similarly, hord-t-a [hort] ‘carry-PAST-DEF.3SG’ is obtained from /hord-t-/ first by voicing assimilation to /hort-t-s/ (cf. 3.4.1.1.8), then by degemination.

If geminates result from morpheme attachment without the application of phonological rules, then degemination is:

(a) obligatory next to an obstruent, as in paraszt-tól ‘peasant-ABL’; (b) optional next to a nasal, as in comb-ban ‘thigh-INE’; (c) inapplicable next to /l r j/, as in sztrájk-ként ‘strike-FOR’.
3.4.1.3.2. Lowering
In roughly twenty nominal roots final /oː/ and /øː/ lower (and shorten; the latter unrounds as well) to /ď/ and /έ/,
respectively, before suffixes beginning with /i/ or /j/. Cf. ajtó ‘door’, ajtaja ‘door-POSS.3SG’, ajtajuk ‘door-
POSS.3PL’; tető ‘roof’, teteje ‘roof-POSS.3SG’, tetejük ‘roof-POSS.3PL’. This process is unproductive: in the vast
majority of the cases, lowering does not obtain (cf. for example hajója ‘ship-POSS.3SG’, felhőjük ‘cloud-
POSS.3PL’).

3.4.2. Metathesis
Three nominal roots, constituting a closed, unproductive class, undergo metathesis in the final syllable: they end in
hVC wordfinally and before vowel-initial suffixes, but in Ch before vowel-initial suffixes. Taking the nominative
inflection to represent wordfinal position for roots, the dative inflection to represent consonant initial suffixes, and
the plural inflection to represent vowel-initial suffixes, the metathesis process is illustrated as follows:

(125) Metathesizing roots
(a) Wordfinally
   teher ‘load’
   pehely ‘fluff’
   kehely ‘chalice’
(b) Before C
   tehernek ‘load-DAT’
   pehelynek ‘fluff-DAT’
   kehelynek ‘chalice-DAT’
(c) Before V
   terhek ‘load-PL’
   pelyhek ‘fluff-PL’
   kelyhek ‘chalice-PL’

As seen, the metathesizing clusters contain /h/ and either /r/ or /j/; the vowel occurring in between is epenthetic
(see 3.4.4.2.1). Free variation is found in the accusative: cf. terhek/teher-t ‘load-ACC’. The set of exceptional vowel
initial suffixes (cf. 3.4.1.3) selects the variants found wordfinally and before consonant initial variants: e.g., teher-ig
‘load-TER’.

3.4.3. Coalescence and split
No process of Hungarian is analyzable unambiguously as involving coalescence or split. In this regard, processes that
bring about assimilatory
changes in adjacent segments (cf. 3.4.1.7, for example) are treated as cases of mutual assimilation rather than instances of coalescence.

3.4.4.1. Deletion

3.4.4.1.1. /t/-deletion

Verbal stems ending in an obstruent plus /t/ lose their final consonant before the imperative suffix -j. In point of fact, /s/ and /š/ are the only obstruents which occur before stem-final /t/ in verbs. Following /t/-deletion, the glide of the imperative morpheme undergoes a general process by which it fully assimilates to the preceding sibilant; cf. 3.4.1.6.1. Accordingly, /fes-t-j/ ‘paint-IMP.INDEF.2SG’ is realized as [fesš] (cf. fest ‘paint.INDEF.3SG’), and /ost-j/ ‘divide-IMP.INDEF.2SG’ as [oss] (cf. oszt ‘divide.INDEF.3SG’). If stem-final /t/ follows a vowel or a sonorant consonant, it palatalizes; see 3.4.1.5.

/t/-deletion is not productive: it is conditioned only by the imperative morpheme. However, in nonstandard varieties it is generalized to apply also before the /j/-initial suffixes of the present definite conjugation. Thus, for instance, in Standard Literary Hungarian fes-s-ük ‘paint-IMP-DEF.1PL’ contrasts with fest-jük ‘paint-DEF.1PL’; this distinction is neutralized to fes-s-ük in nonstandard varieties. The same is true of /t/-palatalization; see 3.4.1.5.

3.4.4.1.2. /h/-deletion


Before vowel-initial suffixes /h/ is syllabified into the onset and escapes deletion. As discussed in 3.1.2.1.2, /h/ is voiced to [h] intervocally: e.g., cseh-ek [čɛhɛk] ‘Czech-PL’. In fast speech tempos [h] can be elided: [čɛɛk].

/h/-deletion is unproductive; it applies only in a select group of nouns. It is inapplicable in nonfinal positions and to geminate /hh/, as in jacht [jɛxt] ‘yacht’ and krach [krɛxx] ‘crash’. Other nouns which might condition /h/-deletion fail to do so: e.g., moh [mox] ‘mustiness’. /h/ which survives deletion is pronounced as [x] (for some speakers as [ç] after front vowels); see 3.1.2.1.2.

/h/-deletion prevents the application of /v/-assimilation (cf. 3.4.1.1): note that cseh-vel /čɛh-vɛl/ ‘Czech-INS’ is realized as [čɛvɛl] and not as...
*Čech.* Also noteworthy is that /h/-deletion applies to the output of /z/-assimilation (cf. 3.4.1.1.2): cf. ah-hoz /a-hoz/ → [čɛh] ‘that-ALL’. Further, /h/-deletion is conditioned by “C”-initial suffixes: cf. cseh-ért [čɛɛ:rt] ‘Czech-CAU’.

3.4.4.1.3. Suffix vowel deletion

By a productive process, suffixes that begin with a vowel lose their initial segment if another vowel precedes:

(126)

a. öröm-öm
   hajó-m
   ‘joy-POSS.1SG’

b. öröm-öt
   hajó-d
   ‘ship-POSS.2SG’

c. öröm-ünk
   hajó-nk
   ‘joy-POSS.1PL’

Vowel insertion is not a viable alternative analysis, at least for some of the cases: e.g., the quality of the initial vowel of -ünk/ünk ‘POSS.1PL’ cannot be predicted on the insertion view. “C”-initial suffixes are immune to deletion: cf. hajó-ért ‘ship-CAU’.

3.4.4.1.4. Root vowel deletion

Undervived roots lose their final vowel before vowel-initial derivational suffixes. Since these suffixes are unproductive, so is the whole process, e.g., barna ‘brown’, barn-ul ‘become brown’, barn-it ‘make brown’, hülye ‘crazy’, hüly-ül ‘become crazy’, hüly-it ‘make crazy’. Inflectional suffixes do not induce root vowel deletion; rather, they undergo suffix vowel deletion (see 3.4.4.1.3). Cf. for example barná-nk /barna-unk/ ‘brown-POSS.1PL’.

3.4.4.2. Insertion

3.4.4.2.1. Stem epenthesis

In several hundred verbal and nominal stems, almost all of which are undervived roots, a short vowel in the final syllable alternates as follows: wordfinally and before consonant initial suffixes the vowel shows up, before vowel-initial suffixes it does not, e.g., bokor ‘shrub’, bokor-ban ‘shrub-NE’, bokr-ok ‘shrub-PL’; cf. also bokor-ért ‘shrub-CAU’, where -ért is “C”-initial. The nominal derivational suffix -al(o)m/el(e)m is of this type:

Nearly always, the alternating vowel is mid o/ö/e, but in a few cases it may be high or low: e.g., bajusz ‘mustache’, bajusz-ra ‘mustache-SUB’, bajsz-om ‘mustache-POSS.1SG’; ajak ‘lip’, ajak-hoz ‘lip-ALL’, ajk-a ‘lip-POSS.3SG’. In the majority of the cases, the alternating vowel is flanked by consonants that would create impossible syllable-/wordfinal clusters, had the vowel not appeared in between them. This, clearly, is the case with bokor ‘shrub’, cited above: /kr/ is not permitted syllable-/wordfinally. In other cases the alternating vowel separates consonants that in fact are permissible syllable-/wordfinally: e.g., inog ‘sway.INDEF.3SG’, ing-ás ‘sway-ing’, where /ng/ occurs syllable-/wordfinally (cf. ing ‘shirt’).

For the reason that in most cases both the appearance and the quality of the alternating vowel is predictable, it is somewhat preferable, controversial as it is, to consider the alternation process to be a case of insertion rather than deletion. See Vago (1980) and Siptár (1994) for a fuller account of the facts and issues involved. The stem epenthesis process is not productive; for the most part, it applies to historically old lexical items. Recent loanwords do not undergo it; further, relexicalization is taking place, leveling out the alternation in a number of cases. Thus, some stems have two lexical representations, producing two distinct paradigms: one with stem vowel alternation, the other without, e.g., szatyor ‘bag’, szatyr-a/szatyor-ja ‘bag-POSS.3SG’. See Vago (1980) for discussion.

3.4.4.2.2. Suffix epenthesis

Verbal suffixes beginning with an obstruent consonant that directly follow the stem receive an initial low vowel if the stem ends in a consonant cluster (cf. Vago 1980). In 3.4.1.1.5 it was shown that some /t/-final verbal stems preceded by a long vowel pattern together with CC-final stems with respect to the palatalization of /t/. These stems exhibit the same behavior with respect to suffix epenthesis:

(127)  INF  INDEF.2SG  INDEF.3PL
      üt  ‘hit’   üt-ni   üt-sz   üt-nek
      fűt  ‘heat’  fűt-eni  fűt-esz  fűt-enek
      áld  ‘bless’ áld-ani  áld-asz  áld-anak

Suffix epenthesis appears to be productive in that it is not tied in with specific morphemes, whether stem or suffix. Some stems do not induce suffix epenthesis, others do so optionally.
3.4.4.2.3. /j/-epenthesis
The 3SG and 3PL possessive suffixes receive an initial /j/ following a vowel-final nominal stem. If the stem ends in a
consonant, then /j/-epenthesis is variable: some stems condition it, others do so optionally (resulting in free
variants), while others disallow it. Note the possessive paradigms below.

(128) Person 'ship' 'kiss' 'degree' 'star'

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Person</th>
<th>'ship'</th>
<th>'kiss'</th>
<th>'degree'</th>
<th>'star'</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1SG</td>
<td>hajó-m</td>
<td>csök-om</td>
<td>fok-om</td>
<td>csillag-om</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2SG</td>
<td>hajó-d</td>
<td>csók-od</td>
<td>fok-od</td>
<td>csillag-od</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3SG</td>
<td>hajó-ja</td>
<td>csök-ja</td>
<td>fok-a</td>
<td>csillag-(j)ja</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1PL</td>
<td>hajó-nk</td>
<td>csök-unk</td>
<td>fok-unk</td>
<td>csillag-unk</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2PL</td>
<td>hajó-tok</td>
<td>csók-otok</td>
<td>fok-otok</td>
<td>csillag-otok</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3PL</td>
<td>hajó-juk</td>
<td>csók-juk</td>
<td>fok-uk</td>
<td>csillag-(j)uk</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

/j/-epenthesis is productive: cf. the loanwords film-je ‘film-POSS.3SG’, klub-juk ‘club-POSS.3PL’. For further

3.5. MORPHOPHONOLOGY (SUPRASEGMENTAL)

3.5.1.1. Stress
In 3.3.2.4. it was stated that in Hungarian word-level stress is predictable: the vowel of the initial syllable is stressed,
other vowels are not. The morphological processes of the language, including compounding, are stress-neutral: they
do not cause changes in stress assignment (cf. Kálmán and Nádasdy 1994). Note for instance the contrast between
the noun phrase hideg konyha ‘cold kitchen’, where each word receives initial syllable stress, and the compound
hidegkonyha ‘(store for) cold cuts’, which is treated phonologically as a single word and consequently receives only
one (initial syllable) stress.
Chapter 4
Ideophones and interjections

4.1. IDEOPHONES

4.1.1. Reduplicative ideophones

Examples for reduplicative ideophones, sometimes with alternating vowels, are as follows:

- tik-tak: sound of a clock
- bim-bam: sound of a bell
- giling-galang: sound of a bell
- puf-puf: sound of a gun
- kip-kop: sound of a hammer
- csit-csatt: sound of a lock
- cini-cini: sound of a string instrument
- locs-pocs: sound of splashing
- csip-csup: wee
- ici-pid: tiny
- csireg-csörög: rattle
- tesze-tosza: good-for-nothing
- izech-mozog: be restless
- pricc-pracc-prucc: final triple chord in musical piece

Ideophones in child language are especially frequent, e.g., in reference to animals.

- vau-vau: dog
- miau-miau: cat
- mú-mú: cow
- nyihaha: horse
- be-e: sheep
- zum-züm: bee
- i-á: donkey
4.1.2. Nonreduplicative ideophones
- bumm: sound of cannon
- katt: sound of lock
- ratatatam: sound of drum

4.2. Interjections
Interjections in general are actual words of the language capable of undergoing further word-formation processes, e.g., jaj 'ouch' → jaj-gat 'say ouch repeatedly'. The few that do not conform to rules of syllable structure include the following.
- Ccc!: tut-tut, expression of comfort, disbelief, etc.
- Sss!: hush, request for silence
- Pszt!: hush, request for silence
- Phi!: expression of disgust
5.1. STRUCTURED SEMANTIC FIELDS
5.1.1. Kinship terminology (See Szépe 1972.)
5.1.1.1. By blood

1. family  család
2. parents  szülők
3. father  apa, atya (old use)
4. mother  anya, mama
5. child  gyerek, gyermek
6. baby  csecsemő, (kis)baba
7. son  fiú (=‘boy’)
8. daughter  lány, leány (=‘girl’, latter old/formal use)
9. sibling  testvér (part of basic vocabulary)
10. elder brother  báty (used as possessed N only)
11. elder sister  néne (rare, used mostly as possessed N), nővér
12. younger brother  öcs (used as possessed N only)
13. younger sister  húg (used as possessed N only)
14. brother  fivér (rare, formal)
15. uncle  (nagy)bácsi
16. aunt  (nagy)néni, ángy (old and dialectal use)
17. nephew  unokaöcs (used mostly as possessed N)
18. niece  unokahúg (used mostly as possessed N)
19. cousin  unokatestvér
20. first cousin  első unokatestvér
21. grandfather  nagyapa, nagypapa
22. grandmother  nagyanya, nagymama
23. grandchild  unoka
24. great-grandfather  dédapa, dédpapa
25. great-grandmother  dédanya, dédmama
26. great-grandchild  dédunoka
### 27. great-great-grandfather
- szépapa

### 28. great-great-grandmother
- szépanya

### 29. great-great-grandchild
- szépunoka

### 30. great-great-great-grandfather
- ükapa

### 31. great-great-great-grandmother
- ükanya

### 32. great-great-great-grandchild
- ükunoka

### 33. ancestor
- ös, előd

### 34. descendant
- leszármazott

#### 5.1.1.2. By half-blood affiliation

1. **half-sibling**
   - féle testvér

#### 5.1.1.3. By marriage

1. **husband**
   - férfi
2. **wife**
   - feleség
3. **spouse**
   - házastár (formal), pár (informal, used only as possessed N)
4. **father-in-law**
   - após, ipa (old and dialectal use)
5. **mother-in-law**
   - anyós, napa (old and dialectal use)
6. **son-in-law**
   - vő (used only as possessed N)
7. **child**
   - gyerek, gyermek
8. **daughter-in-law**
   - meny (used only as possessed N)
9. **brother-in-law**
   - sógor
10. **sister-in-law**
    - sógornő
11. **sister of (elder) sibling**
    - ángy (old and dialectal use)
12. **widower**
    - özvegyember
13. **widow**
    - özvegy
14. **divorce(e)**
    - elvált (ADJ)
15. **stepfather**
    - mostohaapa
16. **stepmother**
    - mostohaanny
17. **stepchild**
    - mostohagyerek
18. **stepson**
    - mostoha fiú (used only as possessed N)
19. **stepdaughter**
    - mostolahány (used only as possessed N)
20. **stepsibling**
    - mostohatestvér

#### 5.1.1.4. By adoption

1. **adoptive parent**
   - fogadott szülő
2. **adoptive father**
   - fogadott apa, gyámatya/apa (old use)
3. **adoptive mother**
   - fogadott anya, gyámanya (old use)
4. **adoptive child**
   - fogadott gyermek
5. adoptive son fogadott fiú, gyámfiú (latter old use, both only as possessed N)
6. adoptive daughter fogadott lány, gyámleány (latter old use, both only as possessed N)
7. orphan árva

5.1.1.5. Ceremonial relationships

5.1.1.5.1 Marriage
1. fiancé, groom vőlegény
2. fiancée, bride menyasszony
3. engaged couple jegyespár
4. relatives rokonok
5. newlyweds újházasok
6. married couple házaspár
7. bachelor agglegény
8. spinster aggszűz

5.1.1.5.2. Baptism
1. godparent keresztészülő
2. godfather keresztapa
3. godmother keresztanya
4. godson keresztfiú (used only as possessed N)
5. goddaughter kereszlány (used only as possessed N)
6. child’s godfather koma
7. child’s godmother komaasszony
8. godfather of (Catholic) confirme bérmakeresztapa
9. godmother of (Catholic) confirme bérmakeresztanya

5.1.2. Color terminology
1. white fehér
2. black fekete
3. red piros (derived from ‘scorch’), vörös (derived from ‘blood’); though both cover the semantic field corresponding to ‘red’, piros can be more easily associated with lighter shades
4. yellowsárga
5. green zöld
6. blue kék
Page 459

7. brown
8. grey
9. violet
10. purple
11. dark purple
12. orange
13. pink
14. dark
15. light
16. variegated
17. blond(e)
18. black(-haired)
19. brown(-haired)
20. red(-haired)
21. white(-haired)

5.1.3. Body parts/ functions/ conditions

1. abdomen
2. Adam’s apple
3. ankle
4. anus
5. arm
6. armpit
7. back
8. backbone
9. bald
10. beard
11. belly
12. bladder
13. blind
14. blood
15. body
16. bone
17. brain
18. breast
19. breastbone
20. breath
21. bruise
22. buttocks
23. calf
24. cheek
25. chin

has
ádámcsutka
boka
végbélnyílás
kar
hónalj
hát
gerinc
kopasz
szakáll
has
(húgy) hólyag
vak
vér
test
csont
agy
méli, kebel (old use)
mélcsont
lélegzet
zúzódás
fenék
lábidra
orca
áll
26. collarbone
27. cross-eyed
28. dandruff
29. deaf
30. deaf and dumb
31. dumb, mute
32. ear
33. elbow
34. eye
35. eyebrow
36. eyelash
37. eyelid
38. face
39. fart
40. finger
41. index finger
42. middle finger
43. ring finger
44. little finger
45. fingertip
46. fist
47. flesh
48. foot
49. forehead
50. gums
51. guts
52. hair
53. hand
54. head
55. heart
56. heel
57. hiccough
58. hip
59. jaw
60. kidney
61. knee
62. lame
63. leg
64. lip
65. liver
66. lung
67. marrow
68. molar
69. mouth
70. mucus  takony
71. muscle  izom
72. mustache  bajusz
73. navel  köldök
74. neck  nyak
75. nipple  mellbimbó
76. nose  orr
77. nostril  orrlik, orrlyuk
78. one-eyed  félszemű (lit. ‘half-eyed’)
79. palate  szájadás
80. palm  tenyér
81. penis  hímtag (formal), fasz (taboo)
82. pupil  pupilla
83. pus  genny
84. rib  borda
85. saliva  nyál
86. scar  hég, sebhely
87. shit  széklet (formal), szar (taboo)
88. shoulder  vált
89. skin  bőr
90. sweat (N)  könny
91. tear  izzadság, verejték (formal)
92. temple  halánték
93. testicle  here
94. thigh  comb
95. throat  torok
96. thumb  hüvelykujj
97. toe  (láb)ujj
98. tongue  nyelv
99. tonsil  mandula
100. tooth  fog
101. urine  vizelet, húgy (formal), pisa (taboo), pisi (informal)
102. vagina  hüvely (formal), pina, picsa (both taboo)
103. vein  véna
104. waist  derék
105. wart  szemölcs
106. wound  seb
107. wrist  csukló
### 5.1.4. Cooking terminology
(Verbs are given in their 3SG forms unless irregular, when given in infinitive forms followed by 3SG.)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verb</th>
<th>Translation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1. eat</td>
<td>enni, eszik</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2. drink</td>
<td>inni, ízik</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. cook</td>
<td>főz</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4. roast</td>
<td>(nyárson/roston) süt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5. fry</td>
<td>(olajban/zsírban) süt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6. boil</td>
<td>forral</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7. kitchen</td>
<td>konyha</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8. stove</td>
<td>tűzély</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9. oven</td>
<td>sütő</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10. microwave oven</td>
<td>mikrohullámú sütő</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11. knife</td>
<td>kés</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12. spoon</td>
<td>kanál</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13. fork</td>
<td>villa</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14. ladle</td>
<td>merőkanál</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15. skillet</td>
<td>serpenyő</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16. pot</td>
<td>fazék, lábos</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17. food</td>
<td>élelem</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### 5.2. BASIC VOCABULARY

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Word</th>
<th>Translation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1. all</td>
<td>minden</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2. and</td>
<td>és</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. animal</td>
<td>állat</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4. ashes</td>
<td>hamvak (PL), hamu (SG)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5. at</td>
<td>-nál/nél (see list of cases on page xxvii)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6. back (PREP)</td>
<td>vissza, hátra</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7. bad</td>
<td>rossz</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8. bark (of tree)</td>
<td>kéreg</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9. because</td>
<td>mert</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10. belly</td>
<td>has</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11. big</td>
<td>nagy</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12. bird</td>
<td>madár</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13. bite</td>
<td>harap</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14. black</td>
<td>fekete</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15. blood</td>
<td>vér</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16. blow</td>
<td>fúj</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17. bone</td>
<td>csont</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18. breast</td>
<td>mell</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19. breathe</td>
<td>lélegzik</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
20. burn ég (intr.), éget (trans.)
21. child gyerek
22. claw karom
23. cloud felhő
24. cold hideg
25. come jön
26. count számol
27. cut vág
28. day nap
29. die (meg)hal
30. dig as
31. dirty piszkos
32. dog kutya
33. drink inni, iszik
34. dry száraz
35. dust por
36. ear fül
37. earth föld
38. eat enni, eszik
39. egg tojás
40. eye szem
41. fall esik
42. far messze
43. fat/grease zsír
44. father apa
45. fear fél
46. feather toll
47. few kevés
48. fight harcol
49. fire tűz
50. five öt
51. fish hal
52. float lebeg
53. flow folyik
54. flower virág
55. fly repül
56. fog kód
57. foot láb(fej)
58. four négy
59. give ad
60. freeze fagy
61. fruit gyümölcs
62. full tele
63. dirty piszkos
64. good  jó
65. grass  fű
66. guts  bél (SG), belek (PL)
67. hair  haj
68. hand  kéz
69. he, she  Ő
70. head  fej
71. hear  hall
72. heart  szív
73. heavy  nehéz
74. here  itt
75. hit  üt
76. hold  tart
77. horn  szarv
78. how  hogy(an)
79. hunt  vadászik
80. husband  férfi
81. I  én
82. ice  jég
83. if  ha
84. in  -ban/ben (see list of cases on page xxvii)
85. kill  (meg)öl
86. knee  térd
87. know  tud
88. lake  tó
89. laugh  nevet
90. leaf  levél
91. left side  bal
92. leg  láb
93. lie  feküdni, fekszik
94. live  él
95. liver  máj
96. long  hosszú
97. louse  tetű
98. man (male/female)  ember
99. man (male)  férfi
100. many, much  sok
101. meat  hús
102. moon  hold
103. mother  anya
104. mountain  hegy
105. mouth  száj
106. name  név
107. narrow  szűk
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Page 465</th>
<th>Középnyelv terms</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>108.</td>
<td>near közel</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>109.</td>
<td>neck nyak</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>110.</td>
<td>new új</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>111.</td>
<td>night éjszaka, éjjel</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>112.</td>
<td>nose orr</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>113.</td>
<td>not nem</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>114.</td>
<td>old régi (thing), öreg (person)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>115.</td>
<td>one egy</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>116.</td>
<td>other más(ik)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>117.</td>
<td>person személy</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>118.</td>
<td>play játszik</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>119.</td>
<td>pull húz</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>120.</td>
<td>push lök</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>121.</td>
<td>rain esik</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>122.</td>
<td>red piros, vörös</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>123.</td>
<td>right, correct jó, helyes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>124.</td>
<td>right side jobb</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>125.</td>
<td>river folyó</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>126.</td>
<td>road út</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>127.</td>
<td>root gyökér</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>128.</td>
<td>rope kötél</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>129.</td>
<td>rotten rothadt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>130.</td>
<td>round kerek</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>131.</td>
<td>round dörzsöl</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>132.</td>
<td>salt só</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>133.</td>
<td>sand homok</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>134.</td>
<td>say mond</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>135.</td>
<td>scratch vakar</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>136.</td>
<td>sea tenger</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>137.</td>
<td>see lát</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>138.</td>
<td>seed mag</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>139.</td>
<td>sew varr</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>140.</td>
<td>sharp éles</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>141.</td>
<td>short rövid</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>142.</td>
<td>sing énekel</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>143.</td>
<td>sit ül</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>144.</td>
<td>skin bőr</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>145.</td>
<td>sky ég</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>146.</td>
<td>sleep aludni, alszik</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>147.</td>
<td>small kis, kicsi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>148.</td>
<td>smell szagol (trans.), szaglik (intr.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>149.</td>
<td>smoke füst</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>150.</td>
<td>smooth sima</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>151.</td>
<td>snake kígyó</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Page 466

152. snow  hó
153. some  néhány
154. spit  köp
155. split  hasít
156. squeeze  szorít
157. stab, pierce  szur
158. stand  áll
159. star  csillag
160. stick  bot
161. stone  kő
162. straight  egyenes
163. suck  szopik
164. sun  nap
165. swell  dagad
166. swim  úszik
167. tail  farok
168. that  az
169. there  ott
170. they  ők
171. thick  vastag
172. thin  vékony
173. think  gondol
174. this  ez
175. thou  te
176. three  három
177. throw  dob
178. tie  köt
179. tongue  nyelv
180. tooth  fog
181. tree  fa
182. turn  fordul (intr.), fordít (trans.)
183. two  két, kettő
184. vomit  hány
185. walk  sétál
186. warm  meleg
187. wash  mos
188. water  víz
189. we  mi
190. wet  nedves
191. what  mi
192. when  mikor
193. where  hol
194. white  fehér
195. who  ki
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>No.</th>
<th>English</th>
<th>Hungarian</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>196.</td>
<td>wide</td>
<td>széles</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>197.</td>
<td>wife</td>
<td>feleség</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>198.</td>
<td>wind</td>
<td>szél</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>199.</td>
<td>wing</td>
<td>szárny</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>200.</td>
<td>wipe</td>
<td>töröl</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>201.</td>
<td>with</td>
<td>-val/vel (see list of cases on page xxvii)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>202.</td>
<td>woman</td>
<td>nő</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>203.</td>
<td>woods</td>
<td>erdő</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>204.</td>
<td>worm</td>
<td>féreg</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>205.</td>
<td>ye</td>
<td>ti</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>206.</td>
<td>year</td>
<td>év</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>207.</td>
<td>yellow</td>
<td>sárga</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
References


Kenesey I. (ed.) (1985). *Data and Descriptions* (Approaches to Hungarian I), Szeged; JATE.


Kenesey, I. (ed.) (1990). *Structures and Arguments* (Approaches to Hungarian III), Szeged; JATE.

Kenesei, I. and Pléh, Cs. (eds) (1992). The Structure of Hungarian (Approaches to Hungarian IV), Szeged; JATE.
Lotz, K. (1939). Das ungarische Sprachsystem, Stockholm; Ungarisches Institut.
Page 471


